

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2601 – 2700

Overcome All Obstacles - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2601 - Overcome All Obstacles

Chapter 2601 - Overcome All Obstacles

As if it was chewing, that spirit formation continued to wiggle for quite a while before calming down.

However, after that spirit formation calmed down, the exit-like gate did not open.

With the situation like this, even though the spirit formation had calmed down, the crowd present were unable to calm themselves.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng, it’s me, Ying Mingchao. Can you hear me?”

“Chu Feng, it’s me, Zi Xunyi. If you’re fine, can you give us a response?”

Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, the guardian clan’s clan chief and many other grand characters all started to panic.

That spirit formation was extremely strange. Even though this spirit formation that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were controlling should be able to connect with Chu Feng, it was still unable to see the situation inside that healing formation, unable to catch an image of Chu Feng.

At this moment, everyone felt that Chu Feng had suffered a mishap. As such, how could they not panic?

After all, that was the Unknown Burial Ground, that frightening place where countless geniuses had lost their lives.

After Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi called out for Chu Feng repeatedly with no response from the spirit formation that Chu Feng was in, the crowd felt that Chu Feng might’ve already died.

“Little friend Chu Feng was simply too stubborn. Why didn’t he listen to Lord City Master? Now he has suffered the consequences of his own actions.”

“It is truly a pity. An generation’s exceptional genius has fallen just like this. This is a major loss to our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

At this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar. Some felt pity for Chu Feng, whereas others felt distress. Some even started to blame Chu Feng for his actions, saying that he had caused this because he refused to listen to Ying Mingchao.

“All of you, shut up!”

“If anyone dares criticize Chu Feng again, I will cut out their tongues!”

Zi Xunyi suddenly shouted. Her furious voice not only resonated through the heaven and earth, it also permeated into the hearts and souls of the crowd present, scaring many of them to a state of shivering.

At this moment, everyone shut their mouths. Even those that felt regret for Chu Feng’s death no longer dared utter another word.

The reason for that was because Zi Xunyi’s current expression was truly frightening. If they dared to provoke her again, they would likely not get off as easy as having only their tongues cut off. Instead, she might take their lives.

As for Zi Xunyi’s current reaction, it was actually understandable too. Although she had only known Chu Feng for a very short period of time, she thought very highly of Chu Feng. Else, she would not have come all the way here to save him.

And now, Chu Feng had most likely suffered a mishap. Yet, these people here were making cynical remarks. Naturally, she would not be able to tolerate it.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when everyone felt that Chu Feng had suffered a mishap, that spirit formation that Chu Feng had entered suddenly started to blossom with a strange light.

The next moment, that tightly closed gate actually opened.

After the gate opened, everyone revealed joyous gazes and all cast their eyes toward that opened gate.

A figure was currently walking out from that gate.

As for that person, he was none other than Chu Feng.

Merely, the current Chu Feng appeared completely different from before he entered the formation.

The current Chu Feng was actually wearing golden armor. Although that armor was a sort of body of light, it was not formed with spirit power. The crowd were unable to determine exactly what that armor was made of.

On Chu Feng's left hand was a golden compass. Light was spinning above that compass. It was very dazzling and extraordinary.

In Chu Feng's right hand was a large golden blade. Although the crowd were unable to feel the mighty aura of that blade, they were able to tell merely by looking at it that that golden blade was extremely powerful.

Most importantly, Chu Feng currently appeared to be extremely spirited. In fact, he appeared much more spirited compared to the first time the crowd saw him.

Evidently, Chu Feng had made a full recovery.

“Success! Chu Feng actually succeeded!!!”

A tsunami-like cheer sounded from the vast crowd.

Merely, this time around, they were no longer whispering and making their own assessments about Chu Feng's decision. Instead, it was all cheers.

Everyone was celebrating. They were all cheering for Chu Feng being still alive. They were all cheering for Chu Feng's success.

“That spirit formation seems to have had an isolation effect. While I was able to hear seniors' voices, it seemed that seniors were unable to hear my voice. I have made seniors worry for me,” Chu Feng said in an apologetic manner.

It was as Chu Feng said. While he was in the healing formation, he was able to hear the voices of the crowd.

When Ying Mingchao and the others asked Chu Feng if he was fine, Chu Feng had responded to them. However, it was very evident that they were unable to hear his voice.

Even though Chu Feng was clearly fine, he had made everyone worry for him. As such, Chu Feng was feeling apologetic.

“It’s fine, all that matters is that you’re fine. Everything’s good now that you’re fine,” Zi Xunyi had turned into a completely different person compared to before. There was no longer any trace of anger on her face. Instead, it was replaced with a beautiful smile.

“Chu Feng, all those treasures of yours, did you obtain them from that formation?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“Senior Ying, these were indeed obtained from the healing formation. This golden armor, compass and war blade all possess different sorts of power. They were all able to help me pass through this Life and Death Formation,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, good, good. This is truly good.”

“It would seem that you’ve made the correct gamble. The comprehension you’ve obtained from that illusion was indeed feasible.”

“Since that’s the case, Chu Feng, there’s no time to delay. Take advantage of the fact that those treasures are still there to immediately attempt to break through the formation,” Ying Mingchao urged.

Merely by seeing them with his naked eyes, Ying Mingchao was able to tell that Chu Feng’s golden armor, blade and compass were all treasures of an immaterial nature.

As they were not formed from actual materials, they would sooner or later disappear. Ying Mingchao was afraid that those treasures would disappear too quickly and affect Chu Feng’s progress in breaking through the formation.

“That is precisely what this junior planned.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he began to rely on the spirit formations that he had comprehended from that illusion to break through the various grand slaughtering formations.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that there was simply no way out of this so-called Life and Death Formation.

He felt that he would have to break through each and every slaughtering formation present here if he wanted to leave.

Originally, with the comprehension that Chu Feng had obtained from that illusion, he only held a thirty percent certainty in being able to break through this Life and Death Formation.

However, to Chu Feng's enormous fortune, not only did the healing formation completely heal his injuries, but it also bestowed special powers upon him.

The special powers were naturally the golden armor, war blade and compass.

Those three items were all used for breaking through the Life and Death Formation. With those three items, Chu Feng's certainty in successfully passing the Life and Death Formation had increased from thirty percent to fifty percent.

Fifty percent, this was a very high probability of success.

Merely, even though it was fifty percent, it still remained that it would mean there was a half and half chance of either death or life.

As such, Chu Feng needed to think meticulously about every step he took. Only then would he attempt to use the methods that he had comprehended to break through the slaughtering formations.

However, no matter how cautious and careful Chu Feng might be, many of the slaughtering formations in the Life and Death Formation still could not be trifled with.

As Chu Feng continued onward, he received many serious injuries. Fortunately, he had that golden armor.

Although that golden armor does not have an effect of blocking attacks, it had a healing effect.

Thus... at this moment, as long as it was not something fatal, Chu Feng would not have to fear.

All sorts of superficial injuries were completely cured by the golden armor.

As for that compass, it was actually a shield that possessed extremely powerful defensive capabilities. Although it was only capable of blocking

head-on attacks, Chu Feng felt that it was already an extremely powerful defensive tool.

As for that war blade, it was an offensive weapon. It was capable of slicing through practically everything in the Life and Death Formation.

Merely, the slaughtering formations in the Life and Death Formation were not things that could be defeated merely by slicing through its contents.

If he wanted to break through them, he would have to use world spirit techniques.

Fortunately, as Chu Feng continued to defeat more and more slaughtering formations, the process became much easier, as Chu Feng began much more skilled in defeating the slaughtering formations.

This was especially true in the eyes of the crowd outside. To them, Chu Feng was pushing his way through the various frighteningly powerful slaughtering formations one by one without the slightest amount of fear.

To them, Chu Feng was simply overcoming all of his obstacles in a majestic manner. The airs of a king were completely prominent.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2602 - Confidence

“Genius, truly a genius. Chu Feng is most definitely a most exceptional genius that rarely appears in ten thousand years.”

“He’s more than just a genius. The way I see it, Chu Feng’s future accomplishments will surpass even Ying Mingchao’s. He will become the true overlord of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“In fact, he might even overtake Grandmaster Kai Hong and Senior Zhan Haichuan.”

“Indeed. If I didn’t witness it myself, I truly would not dare believe that someone would be able to move about in such an unhindered manner in the Unknown Burial Ground. This is truly too astonishing.”

“Sure enough, we are unable to understand the world of geniuses.”

At this moment, the crowd outside were all deeply awed by Chu Feng's actions.

The reason for that was because that Unknown Burial Ground was all of their nightmare. Yet, Chu Feng was able to move about unhindered in the Unknown Burial Ground.

Although the crowd did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to break through the Unknown Burial ground at the beginning, after they now saw that Chu Feng was defeating powerful spirit formations one after another, the crowd all felt that it would be possible for Chu Feng to break through the Unknown Burial Ground.

They all felt that Chu Feng might be able to escape from the Unknown Burial Ground using the methods he had comprehended.

"Could it be that we were mistaken?" At this moment, Ying Mingchao looked to Zi Xunyi. He had a complicated expression on his face.

At the beginning, he had felt the entire time that the method that they used, the decision to endure the slaughtering formations with their own bodies, was the most effective method and the only method.

Yet now, he became skeptical. He started to suspect that the method he and Zi Xunyi had used to break through the Unknown Burial Ground might not be the only method there was.

In fact, he felt that the method that they used was simply incorrect. He felt that they had only managed to escape the Unknown Burial Ground by pure coincidence.

The reason for that was because they did not really break through the Life and Death Formation. Instead, they were sent out of the Life and Death Formation after experiencing a series of trials and tribulations.

However, with what Chu Feng was doing, if he was to succeed, he would be able to completely break through the Life and Death Formation.

"It is not that we are wrong. It can only be said that Chu Feng's method to destroy the various slaughtering formations is another way out."

“After all, back then, we did not just escape the Unknown Burial Ground. We also obtained benefits from it,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Right. After all, that All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was obtained from there.”

After being reminded by Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao grew confident again.

The reason for that was because they were not sent back out of the Unknown Burial Ground after escaping from the Life and Death Formation.

Instead, they were teleported to a cave palace.

They obtained some treasures from within that cave palace.

Not only was the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart one of the treasures, but they also obtained treasures that could directly increase their cultivation.

Those treasures could be deemed as their rewards for successfully passing through the Life and Death Formation.

“Look! Chu Feng is about to succeed!”

Right at this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar again.

After hearing the crowd’s voices of excitement, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi noticed that Chu Feng was currently breaking through a very powerful grand formation.

This grand formation was composed of six different types of gaseous flames.

Wind gaseous flames.

Lightning gaseous flames.

Water gaseous flames.

Fire gaseous flames.

Earth gaseous flames.

And the final type, a black gaseous flame.

It was unknown what sort of power this black gaseous flames contained. However, it was the most powerful of the six types of gaseous flames.

The six different gaseous flames were gathered together. They formed an extremely destructive slaughtering formation. Even for Chu Feng, it was very difficult to destroy this slaughtering formation.

However, the power of the six gaseous flames was growing weaker and fainter. Evidently... Chu Feng was about to succeed.

“That slaughtering formation is extremely difficult to breach. I wonder, will there be even more difficult formations after that one?” Zi Xunyi said.

“I don’t think so. That slaughtering formation seems to be the last formation in the Life and Death Formation,” Ying Mingchao said.

“How do you know?” Zi Xunyi asked in a very astonished manner.

“That is something that I comprehended from that illusion. Originally, I thought that the things from the illusion were all false.”

“However, looking at it now, the things that we’ve comprehended from the illusion were not all false.”

“Else, Chu Feng would not have been able to reach this far,” Ying Mingchao said.

“If that’s the case, then it would be truly great.”

Zi Xunyi felt extremely joyous. Although she had also experienced the Unknown Burial Ground, the things that one could comprehend from that illusion were all personal and different from one another.

For example, there were many things that Ying Mingchao managed to comprehend that Zi Xunyi did not.

Thus, Zi Xunyi was very trusting of Ying Mingchao’s words.

Most importantly, this Unknown Burial Ground was simply too dangerous. As long as Chu Feng was still in there, she would still be worried.

Thus, Zi Xunyi deeply hoped that Chu Feng would be able to break through the Life and Death Formation as quickly as possible.

“Those hand seals?”

Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi’s gaze changed. She revealed a panicky expression.

“Xunyi, what’s wrong?” Ying Mingchao noticed the abnormal reaction that Zi Xunyi had.

Although Ying Mingchao’s battle power surpassed Zi Xunyi’s, and his talent for martial cultivation was also slightly better than hers, he was inferior to Zi Xunyi in terms of world spirit techniques.

Right now, what Chu Feng was using was his world spirit techniques. As such, he was unable to determine anything wrong with Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques, and could only consult Zi Xunyi.

“Chu Feng is removing the three treasures on him. Mingchao, you must stop him right now. You cannot allow him to do that,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Chu Feng, stop! That slaughtering formation is yet to be completely destroyed. You must not remove the power of your healing formation,” Ying Mingchao hurriedly spoke to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had managed to overcome all the obstacles on the way and cut through many slaughtering formations.

Although it was mainly due to Chu Feng’s meticulous techniques, the three treasures also provided enormous assistance.

And now, it was precisely the most crucial moment in breaking through this slaughtering formation for Chu Feng. If he was to lower his guard now, he could very well ruin everything.

However, even though Ying Mingchao’s words reached Chu Feng’s ears, Chu Feng did not stop.

He finished forming his hand seal. Then, Chu Feng tossed the war blade and compass toward the sky.

The next moment, Chu Feng unleashed his completed hand seal, and the golden armor that had covered his body was also removed from him. That golden armor turned into a golden light and fused together with the war blade and compass.

After the three treasures fused together, they turned into dazzling golden radiance. Like a waterfall, the golden light began to fall from the sky, completely covering Chu Feng within it.

“What is that?” Many people were confused.

“It seems that Chu Feng has another plan in mind.”

At this moment, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi realized that Chu Feng did not do this with the intention of renouncing the three treasures. Evidently, he had something else in mind.

“Roar~~~”

Right at this moment, the six gaseous flames that were gradually growing fainter suddenly became much stronger.

The intensity of those gaseous flames was ten times their strongest intensity from before.

“How could this be?!”

The crowd outside the Unknown Burial Ground were all deeply frightened upon seeing this scene.

Although they were only able to see with their naked eyes, and were simply unable to sense the true might and power of those gaseous flames, they were able to determine exactly how frighteningly powerful the gaseous flames that had grown much more intense now were, based on how difficult it was for Chu Feng to defeat the gaseous flames from before.

Counterattack. It was that slaughtering formation’s counterattack. It was its strongest attack, its final attack.

If Chu Feng was able to withstand it, he would have defeated the slaughtering formation. If he was unable to withstand it, Chu Feng would die here.

The crowd felt that Chu Feng might not necessarily be able to withstand it. After all, the gaseous flames were so much more ferocious this time around.

“Chu Feng... why isn't he panicking?”

At this moment when everyone was frightened by the gaseous flames, they were shocked to discover that Chu Feng, who was inside that slaughtering formation was actually completely confident. There was not the slightest trace of panic on his face.

His confident appearance seemed to indicate that everything was within his grasp.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2603 - Devised A Battle Plan

At the moment when the crowd were all puzzled by Chu Feng's confidence, Chu Feng suddenly sat down in a cross-legged manner.

With this, the crowd grew even more confused. Chu Feng's actions simply were not one of someone confident. Rather, he had simply not placed the dangers in his eyes at all.

However, this was strange. The crowd had all witnessed how Chu Feng had managed to defeat those slaughtering formations one after another.

The impression that they had of Chu Feng was that he was not a careless individual. Rather, he was an extremely cautious individual.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment, the attack of the ferocious gaseous flames had already arrived by Chu Feng.

It was so ferocious and domineering that it seemed as if it would engulf, tear apart and destroy everything.

However, those six extremely powerful gaseous flames were unable to approach Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because they were unable to pass through that golden radiance.

They were all blocked by the golden light being emitted by the fused three treasures above Chu Feng.

“So that’s how it is. Chu Feng realized that there would be a counterattack. That’s why he fused the three treasures.”

Both Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi came to a sudden realization.

At the same time, the bystanders finally realized why Chu Feng was this confident.

It turned out that he was already prepared for this.

“This won’t do. That golden radiance doesn’t seem to be able to continue to withstand it for much longer.”

Although they understood what Chu Feng had planned, the bystanders were still extremely worried for Chu Feng.

Although the golden radiance formed by the three treasures had indeed managed to block the six gaseous flames, they were, judging from their appearance, evidently unable to continue to block the six gaseous flames for long. Chu Feng was still in great danger.

“Formation, open!!!”

Right at the moment when the crowd were all worried, Chu Feng suddenly opened his arms.

The next instant, waves of surging golden spirit power started to surge from Chu Feng’s body. They formed a spirit formation around Chu Feng.

Once this spirit formation appeared, the crowd’s eyes started to shine.

Even though this spirit formation took form immediately, anyone could tell that a lot of time had been spent in setting up this spirit formation.

This meant that Chu Feng had been setting up this spirit formation for a long time already. Merely, he was setting it up within his own body.

That was how this spirit formation managed to take form immediately after it was revealed.

Most importantly, this spirit formation possessed astonishing defensive power. It was an extremely powerful defensive formation.

Sure enough, Chu Feng already had an answer to take on that slaughtering formation. Merely, although that defensive formation was powerful, the power of those six gaseous flames could not be compared to their power from before.

“With how powerful those gaseous flames are, will Chu Feng’s spirit formation really be able to take it on?”

Even though Chu Feng’s spirit formation had astonished everyone, they did not think that Chu Feng would definitely be able to block the attack of the gaseous flames.

While the crowd was worried, Chu Feng shouted, “Formation, merge!” Then, he folded his arms and clasped his palms.

The next moment, surging spirit power was emitted from Chu Feng’s body, and started to merge with the golden radiance sprinkling down from above him.

When Chu Feng’s spirit formation merged with the three treasures’ golden radiance, its power immediately increased enormously. It was no longer comparable to before.

“Formation, rise!!!”

Chu Feng suddenly opened his clasped palms and then spread his hands wide. He began to form two different peculiar hand seals with his two hands.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, that grand formation started to rotate. After Chu Feng’s grand formation started to rotate, the six gaseous flames that were frantically bombarding Chu Feng’s grand defensive formation were actually knocked away.

Chu Feng’s defensive formation had actually managed to gain the upper hand in the battle against the extremely domineering gaseous flames.

“That spirit formation?”

It was only at this moment that the crowd discovered that the power from the fusion of those three treasures was only meant to be used as an assistant. Chu Feng’s spirit formation was the actual crucial aspect to breaking through that slaughtering formation.

At the moment when the crowd were all exclaiming in admiration, Chu Feng, who was sitting on the ground, suddenly stood up.

He had a sharp expression in his eyes. He shouted, “Formation, break!!!”

“Boom~~~~”

After Chu Feng’s voice sounded, his grand formation that was spinning around him started to unleash a massive offensive like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses. It collided with the domineering gaseous flames.

The golden radiance was unstoppable. It actually managed to forcibly scatter the domineering gaseous flames.

Soon, the golden radiance covered everyone’s field of view.

When the golden radiance dispersed, the crowd were astonished to discover that Chu Feng was standing there completely unscathed. As for the six different gaseous flames, they had completely disappeared.

“Defeated! Chu Feng successfully broke through that slaughtering formation!”

The crowd burst into an uproar once again. At this moment, they were truly astonished and overjoyed.

As the saying goes, the onlooker sees more of the game. Sometimes, that saying holds very true. Although they were merely spectators, they were able to sense how frightening that slaughtering formation was.

Yet, Chu Feng was able to defeat such a frightening slaughtering formation. As such, how could they not feel overjoyed?

Most importantly, Chu Feng’s ability to defeat that slaughtering formation was truly natural and unforced. Furthermore, he had already anticipated the

counterattack from the slaughtering formation. He truly could be said to have devised a battle plan. It was an extraordinary feat.

It was something that none of the people present were capable of accomplishing. As such, how could they not be astonished?

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, in the desert above the Unknown Burial Ground, the spirit formation that was connected to Chu Feng and capable of showing his current situation suddenly grew dim.

At the same time, the enormous curtain of light that was being projected onto the sky started to disappear. This grand spirit formation had lost its effect.

“How could this be?”

At this moment, not to mention the others, even Ying Mingchao was astonished. His previously joyful expression was immediately overshadowed with worry.

“It is not that the spirit formation has lost its effect. Rather, it seems more like some sort of power cut it off,” Zi Xunyi analyzed.

“You’re saying that someone deliberately sealed off our formation?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“That’s most likely the case,” Zi Xunyi replied.

After hearing what Zi Xunyi said, Ying Mingchao grew silent. However, the worried expression on his face grew stronger and stronger.

Having lost the effect of that spirit formation, it could be said that they had lost their means of communicating with Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng had defeated the strongest slaughtering formation, they had no idea exactly what the situation was like inside the Unknown Burial Ground.

This was especially true because the crystal that was connected to Chu Feng had also lost its effect. With both of these methods gone, they were no longer able to determine whether or not Chu Feng was safe.

Originally, that crystal was capable of reacting to Chu Feng's state of being. If Chu Feng was injured, it would indicate it.

However, after Chu Feng entered the healing formation, that crystal lost its effect. That was the reason why the crowd felt that Chu Feng had died that time.

However, when Chu Feng reappeared from the healing formation, Chu Feng's shadow image once again appeared on that crystal.

However, Chu Feng's image had been lost from the crystal again now.

After what had happened earlier, Ying Mingchao and the others were not feeling so pessimistic about Chu Feng. After all, the various things that had happened before had verified that there was some sort of formidable power in the Unknown Burial Ground capable of severing the connection between Chu Feng and that crystal.

Thus, even though Chu Feng's image was lost from the crystal, that did not mean that Chu Feng had died.

That said, even with that being the case, Ying Mingchao and the others were still extremely worried.

To put it briefly, as long as they are not certain of Chu Feng's safety, Ying Mingchao and the others would always be worried about Chu Feng.

.....

"Strange."

At this moment, Chu Feng, who was in the Life and Death Formation, started to frown.

"What's wrong?" Eggy asked.

"For some unknown reason, I've lost connection with Senior Ying and the others," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was able to sense that the connection had been severed. This was different from when he had entered the healing formation earlier.

At that time, he was able to hear the voices of Ying Mingchao and the others. However, he was now unable to hear any voices at all.

At this moment, the only sounds Chu Feng could hear were the sounds from the Life and Death Formation. All sounds from the outside world had been severed.

“Could it be that something has happened?” Eggy asked.

“I don’t know. However, the connection will most definitely not be lost without reason. Most likely, some sort of problem occurred with the spirit formation connecting us,” Chu Feng said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Before Chu Feng could think much into the topic, landslide-and-tsunami-like wind noises suddenly emerged from his surroundings.

When Chu Feng looked over, he discovered that the surrounding mountain rocks were changing enormously.

The mountain rocks that were originally hard and solid had turned into white mist, and were dispersing into the sky.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2604 - True Immortal Mist

The amount of mist was simply too much. Soon, it completely covered the region.

Under this sort of situation, Chu Feng’s field of view grew smaller and smaller. In the end, his sight was filled with a vast expanse of whiteness. He was unable to see anything else.

Fortunately, this sort of situation did not persist for long. After a short moment, the vast white mist started to gradually vanish.

“That is?”

As the mist waned, Chu Feng revealed a serious expression. He was able to sense that he was no longer in the Life and Death Formation. Rather, he had arrived at a completely different place.

Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered two silhouettes in the distant mist. Merely, as the mist surrounding him had yet to completely dissipate, those two figures were very fuzzy. Even Chu Feng was unable to determine their appearances.

“Seniors, might you be the creators of this Unknown Burial Ground?”

Chu Feng did not approach the two silhouettes. Instead, he first bowed respectfully to the two fuzzy silhouettes.

“Young man, come over,” An aged voice sounded.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng started to walk over. After approaching, Chu Feng revealed a slightly astonished expression.

One of the two silhouettes he saw from afar was an old man.

This old man was wearing a light yellow gown. His gown was very special. It seemed to be leather, yet seemed to not be leather. It appeared somewhat coarse. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that gown was not made out any ordinary material. Rather, it should be a treasure.

This old man was wearing a hood over his head. However, that hood was not tightly secured. As such, one could see his facial features.

He had relatively dark skin. There were not a lot of wrinkles on his face. However, his eyebrows were yellow as well, somewhat similar to the color of his gown.

His beard was not very long. However, his eyebrows were extremely long. They were actually over a meter long.

From this first glance, Chu Feng felt that this old man was the person that had called him over.

As for the reason why Chu Feng determined this to be the case, it was because the other silhouette was not that of a human.

Rather, it was a deer. This deer was not a humanoid deer-headed individual. Rather, it was an actual deer.

However, precisely one such actual deer was sitting on a stone chair and playing chess with the old man.

However, regardless of whether it was that yellow-gowned old man or that deer, they were both beings that Chu Feng could not see through.

Chu Feng knew that they both possessed strength much superior to his own. Likely... they were the creators of this Unknown Burial Ground.

“Creak~~~”

Right at this moment, a chess piece on the chessboard between the two suddenly moved.

Chu Feng was able to clearly see that neither the old man or the deer had moved at all. It was as if that chess piece had moved by itself.

That said, Chu Feng did not think too much about it. Experts of their level were beings that could kill people using only their thoughts. To control a chess piece without moving was naturally extremely easy for them to accomplish.

That said, as that chess piece moved, Chu Feng also turned his gaze toward the chessboard. It was only at this moment that he discovered that the old man and the deer were playing a very simple game of chess.

To Chu Feng’s great astonishment, the chess piece that had moved earlier was a very bad chess move by the yellow-gowned old man.

That one move had landed the yellow-gowned old man in a predicament. With one more move, that deer would be able to defeat the yellow-gowned old man and win the game of chess.

Merely, that deer did not make its move. Neither the old man nor the deer... gave any reaction.

Just like that, they stared at the chessboard. They were looking at the chessboard in the same manner as Chu Feng. It was as if they were spectators themselves.

“Junior Chu Feng pays his respects to senior,” Chu Feng once again bowed to the two in a very polite manner.

“Chu Feng, right?” The yellow-gowned old man asked.

“Yes, precisely.”

Chu Feng was not surprised that this old man knew of his name.

[1. No shit sherlock, you just told him your name.]

After all, Ying Mingchao and the others outside the Unknown Burial Ground had called his name countless times. As such, this person before him, this expert who possessed remarkable abilities, would naturally be able to hear the calls from Ying Mingchao and the others outside. As such, he would have already known Chu Feng’s name.

“You’re very interesting. You have not come for the treasures. Instead, you’ve come to save your friend,” That yellow-gowned old man said.

However, he had been staring at that chessboard the entire time. He had never even taken a single glance at Chu Feng while speaking.

However, his words brought great astonishment to Chu Feng. Chu Feng felt as if everything about him was under the control of that yellow-gowned old man. He felt extremely passive.

“What senior said is extremely correct. I have indeed come here to save my friend.”

“Since senior knows that I have come to save my friend, may I dare ask where my friend might be right now?” As that yellow-gowned old man already knew the reason why Chu Feng came, Chu Feng decided to not beat around the bush and go straight to the main topic.

“While you’ve managed to defeat the Life and Death Formation, your friend has not. Furthermore, her current situation is extremely bad. I’m afraid that she will likely end up dying in the Life and Death Formation,” The yellow-gowned old man said indifferently. It was as if he was speaking about something that he felt no great concern toward.

However, his indifferent words brought forth a great wave in Chu Feng’s heart.

Based on what the yellow-gowned old man had said, Chu Feng could tell that there was more than a single Life and Death Formation. Not everyone would enter the same Life and Death Formation.

Likely, everyone would have their own Life and Death Formation.

Although Chu Feng had managed to defeat the Life and Death Formation, he had only managed to save himself, and was simply unable to save Zhao Hong.

The reason for that was because the two of them were simply not in the same Life and Death Formation.

“Don’t be anxious. If you want to save her, there is a way to save her,” Right at this moment, that yellow-gowned old man spoke again.

“Senior, what must I do to save my friend?” Chu Feng asked.

“While the method is there, I’m afraid that you’ll have to make an enormous sacrifice,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“Senior, please tell me what I must do,” Chu Feng said.

“Don’t be so anxious to agree yet. That sacrifice is not something that you will necessarily be willing to do,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“Senior, please tell me what I must do,” Chu Feng repeated himself. His tone became even more urgent.

“What’s this? You’re willing to make any sacrifice?” The yellow-gowned old man asked.

“This junior is willing,” Chu Feng answered determinedly. There was not the slightest hesitation.

“Oh?” At this moment, the yellow-gowned old man finally turned around and looked to Chu Feng.

When those eyes were cast onto him, Chu Feng’s heart immediately grew tense.

He felt as if two sharp blades had pierced through his soul.

Powerful. This old man was extremely powerful. He had reached an inestimable level of power.

Chu Feng was absolutely certain that this old man was most definitely not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Rather, he was an expert from the Upper Realms.

The reason for that was because it would be impossible for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to have an expert as powerful as this old man.

Fortunately, that sharp gaze only persisted for a short period of time. Soon, that yellow-gowned old man's sharp gaze turned gentle.

"Interesting," That yellow-gowned old man smiled lightly. It was as if he had seen through everything.

"It has been a while since I've arrived here. You are the first to break through the Life and Death Formation, the first to successfully pass the three checkpoints."

"Having successfully passed the three checkpoints, you will naturally be rewarded. This... is your reward."

As the yellow-gowned old man spoke, he waved his sleeve, and a lump of golden-bright and dazzling mist floated out from his sleeve.

The mist grew more and more concentrated. In a blink of an eye, it grew from a lump of mist that was the size of an apple to a lump of mist over ten meters in diameter.

"That mist is a treasure!" Seeing the golden-bright and dazzling mist, Her Lady Queen revealed an overjoyed expression.

Not only was the mist twinkling with light, but there were also countless runes and symbols circulating throughout the mist. As such, Her Lady Queen was able to tell with a single glance that it was no ordinary mist. Instead, it was mist that should be able to increase Chu Feng's cultivation.

That's right, not only would Chu Feng gain martial power after entering that mist, but he would also be able to obtain martial comprehension. Should he enter that mist, Chu Feng's cultivation would most definitely increase.

"This mist is called the True Immortal Mist. Should you enter the mist, it will help you break through the Martial Ancestor bottleneck and become a rank one True Immortal directly," The yellow-gowned old man said.

“However, if you want to save your friend, you must give up on this mist. You will have to give this mist to your friend instead. Are you willing to do that?”

After saying those words, the yellow-gowned old man revealed a change in expression once again. It turned into one of someone enjoying a show. It was as if he was certain that Chu Feng would not be willing to give the mist to Zhao Hong. Thus... he was waiting to laugh at Chu Feng.

“In other words, if I am to give this mist to my friend, she will be able to escape?” Chu Feng asked.

“Naturally,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“This junior is willing,” Chu Feng said resolutely.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead. [n\)/OvelBIn](#)

Chapter 2605 - Obtaining Something Else

“Sigh,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Her Lady Queen was unable to help herself from sighing.

She naturally wanted Chu Feng to use that mist himself. After all, reaching a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm would be a complete change in the nature of his strength.

No matter how powerful Martial Ancestors might be, they would never be a match for True Immortals.

However, what if Chu Feng was a True Immortal?

With his talent and abilities, very few True Immortals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be able to contend against him.

At that time, Chu Feng would truly be able to move about unhindered in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He might even be able to destroy that Infant Soul Sect and complete the mission given to him by his father all by himself.

However, Her Lady Queen did not try to urge Chu Feng against his decision to renounce the mist. The reason for that was because she knew Chu Feng’s

personality; she knew that he would definitely choose to use the mist to save Zhao Hong.

No matter how she tried to urge him against it, it would be all be useless.

Thus, she decided to not bother urging him against it. That said, she still felt pained by Chu Feng's decision.

"Are you certain?" The yellow-gowned old man asked.

Although Chu Feng's answer was something that Her Lady Queen had anticipated, it was clearly... not something that the yellow-gowned old man had anticipated.

After hearing Chu Feng's answer, that yellow-gowned old man was very surprised.

"This junior is certain. Senior, please release my friend," Chu Feng said.

"Young man, listen to my word of advice. While you're a peak Martial Ancestor, this opportunity is nevertheless extremely important to you."

"Do you know how many people have managed to reach peak Martial Ancestor in their youth, yet failed to reach a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm in their entire lives?"

"While it might appear that there is only a fine distinction between peak Martial Ancestor and True Immortals, the distance is actually extremely far. It is not one that can be easily crossed," The yellow-gowned old man said.

"This junior appreciates senior's kind intentions. Merely, when compared to my friend's life, this is simply insignificant," Chu Feng said.

"It seems that you are determined to save her?" The yellow-gowned old man asked.

"Senior, that is precisely what this junior intends. Senior, please let my friend out," Chu Feng spoke in a very serious manner and once again bowed to the yellow-gowned old man.

"Young lady, you have truly made a very loyal friend."

Right at this moment, the yellow-gowned old man's eyes moved. The next moment, a world spirit gate appeared beside him.

When that spirit formation gate appeared, a figure tumbled out of that world spirit gate and fell to the ground.

This person was none other than Zhao Hong. Merely, at this moment, Zhao Hong was seriously injured. She did not even have the strength to stand up.

Even though Zhao Hong was extremely weak, she still tried her best to raise her head.

She looked to Chu Feng. With great difficulty, she spoke, "Chu Feng, you must not do that. Do not renounce on your reward just to save me."

"You cannot do that. I will not accept it. I will definitely not accept that mist."

It would appear that Zhao Hong was indeed in the Life and Death Formation earlier. However, it seemed that she had heard the conversation between Chu Feng and the yellow-gowned old man.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt something of a headache.

He had never expected that this yellow-gowned old man would deliberately let Zhao Hong hear their conversation.

That's right, he had done it deliberately. If he didn't do it deliberately, it would be impossible for Zhao Hong to hear their conversation.

That said, this was also precisely the reason why Chu Feng felt such a headache. He knew how stubborn Zhao Hong was. Even though he was trying to help her, Chu Feng knew that based on her personality, she would rather die than accept his kindness.

"Young lady, that is not up to you. This opportunity is something that you will have to accept regardless of whether or not you want it."

Right at this moment, that yellow-gowned old man suddenly spoke. As he spoke, he also waved his sleeve. Then, the golden mist that was floating before Chu Feng began to float toward Zhao Hong.

Soon, that golden mist completely engulfed Zhao Hong.

“Buzz~~~”

As that golden mist with symbols and runes circulating through it engulfed Zhao Hong, the symbols and runes began to circulate even more rapidly through the mist. As for Zhao Hong, she started to let out a miserable scream.

Hearing Zhao Hong’s screams, Chu Feng immediately started to frown. He cast gaze filled with misgivings toward that yellow-gowned old man.

“Don’t worry. This mist is forcibly imparting its power to that young lady. When it is done, not only will her injuries be completely healed, but she will also become a True Immortal,” The yellow-gowned old man said to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, senior, for your troubles,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng felt that this yellow-gowned old man would not deceive him. With that, it meant that Zhao Hong was safe. Not only that, but her cultivation will also increase.

Although Chu Feng was unable to obtain this opportunity to increase his own cultivation, it was not a waste, as Zhao Hong had obtained it. As such, Chu Feng would naturally be happy.

“I truly never expected there to be someone as righteous and loyal like you in a place as desolate as the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

n)/OvelBIn

“That said, boy, the world of martial cultivators is extremely cruel. To be righteous and loyal might not necessarily be a good thing. It might end up causing you harm.”

“For example, this time around, it caused you to lose the opportunity to directly reach the True Immortal realm,” The yellow-gowned old man said to Chu Feng.

“Everyone possesses different ideologies. While the great majority of people will consider this True Immortal Mist to be extremely significant, and will even fall out with their own relatives and friends for it, killing one another and even slaughtering countless innocents all just so that they can obtain it...”

“...in the eyes of this Chu Feng, it is nowhere as important as my friend’s life,” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, good. A young man should have the appearance of a young man. Very rarely are there young people like you.”

“Although I, when looking at your decision as a spectator, feel that your decision is silly, I personally greatly admire your decision.”

“That said, it remains that you are the only person that has ever managed to pass through all three of the Unknown Burial Ground’s checkpoints. As such, I will not have you come here in vain.”

“This shall be your reward,” As the yellow-gowned old man spoke, he lightly raised his hand, and a book entered Chu Feng’s hand.

Upon seeing the book in his hand, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately started shining. Then, he revealed an overjoyed expression.

The book that entered Chu Feng’s hand was the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart. Merely... this was not an incomplete book. Instead, it was the completed All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

“I can tell that you not only possess outstanding talent for martial cultivation, but your talent for world spirit techniques is also exceptional.”

“This All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart is a treasure even in the Upper Realms. It is something that countless world spiritists will not be able to purchase even if they have the money to do so.”

“Take it and study it meticulously. Then, refine weapons according to the methods in it. I believe that with your talent, you will soon be able to reach the True Immortal realm,” The yellow-gowned old man said to Chu Feng.

What the yellow-gowned old man said was the same as what Chu Feng had comprehended from the incomplete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart that he had obtained from Ying MIngchao. This made Chu Feng even more certain that what he had comprehended was correct.

“Thank you senior.”

Chu Feng bowed respectfully to the yellow-gowned old man. He was truly overjoyed.

Although he had missed the True Immortal Mist that could allow him to break through to the True Immortal realm directly, he had obtained the complete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart. With that, Chu Feng knew that he would, sooner or later, reach the True Immortal realm.

Not only that, but the complete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart would serve as an enormous assistance to Chu Feng's breakthrough in cultivation.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the value of this All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was much more than that True Immortal Mist. As such, how could he not be delighted?

"You don't have to thank me. That is what you deserve," The yellow-gowned old man smiled lightly.

"Senior, may I ask you why you've set up this Unknown Burial Ground? Also, exactly who are you?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

Chu Feng was able to tell that this yellow-gowned old man was most definitely an extraordinary individual. Thus, he was very curious as to why he came here and set up the Unknown Burial Ground.

"If I am to tell you that I did not set this up, would you believe me?" The yellow-gowned old man said.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2606 - Game Cleared

"This junior believes senior."

"Merely... if this place was not created by senior, then who created it?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"The mysteries of heaven must not be revealed," The yellow-gowned old man said with a faint smile.

His smile contained a profound intention. However, Chu Feng had no idea exactly what that smile meant.

That said, since this yellow-gowned old man did not wish to tell, Chu Feng decided to not ask anymore. However, Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from thinking about it. If it was not this yellow-gowned old man that set this place up, who was it?

“Senior, you said earlier that I am the only person that has managed to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground?” Chu Feng asked.

He asked that because he was clearly not the only person to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground.

Chu Feng knew very well that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had also passed the Unknown Burial Ground.

“You are naturally the only person. As for that little couple outside, they did not manage to break through the Life and Death Formation. As such, there is no such thing as them passing the Unknown Burial Ground,” The yellow-gowned old man gave Chu Feng the answer to his question with a single sentence.

It turned out that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had not managed to defeat the Life and Death Formation. In other words, they did not manage to successfully pass through the Unknown Burial Ground.

“See? Didn’t I say that they were just lucky, that everything was merely a coincidence?”

“Fortunately, you did not continue to listen to them. Else, you wouldn’t even know how you died.”

After hearing what that yellow-gowned old man said, Her Lady Queen grew even more furious. After all, Chu Feng had suffered greatly after listening to Ying Mingchao’s instructions.

“In that case, how did they managed to exit the Unknown Burial Ground?” Chu Feng asked. He was very curious, and wanted to know the truth.

“It could only be said that they were fortunate,” The yellow clothed old man said.

“Fortunate?” Chu Feng grew even more confused.

“Back when that little couple was in the Life and Death Formation, an old friend of mine just so happened to be present too.”

“That old friend of mine was a woman. Although she’s already extremely old, she still had the heart of a young girl, and was extremely good-natured.”

“When she saw how loving and affectionate that little couple was, how they were even willing to die for one another, she became emotionally moved. As such, she pleaded to me to let them live.”

“I was unable to endure her coaxing and pestering. As such, I reluctantly agreed. However, this place possesses its rules. Even if I wanted to let them live, I still had to do so according to the rules.”

“Thus, I could only alter the rules to break through the Life and Death Formation to make an exception that would allow them to pass it. Furthermore, I also gave them some rewards.”

“However, as they had not really managed to pass through the Life and Death Formation, their rewards were not that great,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

At this moment, Chu Feng finally realized what had happened.

At this moment, he also realized how Ying Mingchao had obtained his incomplete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

He must’ve obtained it from here. Merely, as Ying Mingchao did not manage to actually pass the Life and Death Formation, this yellow-gowned old man only gave Ying Mingchao an incomplete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

While it might appear to be very valuable, it actually possessed no use at all.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the True Immortal Mist that had surrounded Zhao Hong started to dissipate.

At that moment, not only were Zhao Hong’s injuries completely healed, but even her aura became much more powerful.

Her aura was very distinct. It was the aura of a completely different realm. Thus, even the surrounding martial power that was affected by her aura became completely different.

True Immortal, the current Zhao Hong was a rank one True Immortal.

For others, they would most definitely be endlessly happy to become a True Immortal. However, Zhao Hong did not have a joyous expression on her face. Instead, she had a very serious expression.

“Chu Feng, thanks. I, Zhao Hong, will definitely repay you for the favor today,” Zhao Hong said to Chu Feng.

There was a deep sense of gratitude in her tone. However, more than that, there was the feeling of guilt.

She felt very guilty and ashamed that Chu Feng had given up on the opportunity to become a True Immortal just so that he could save her.

It was also because she was saved by Chu Feng that she had obtained this opportunity that should have been Chu Feng’s.

“Zhao Hong, it’s all good that you’re fine now. Else... I really do not know how I would have faced Wang Qiang,” Chu Feng said.

“Has my husband awakened?” After hearing Chu Feng mention Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong immediately revealed a worried expression.

“He still hasn’t awoken. However, he is currently doing very well. The Golden Crane True Immortal set up a spirit formation on him. Before he wakes up, no one will be able to disturb him,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, where is he at now?” Zhao Hong asked.

“Rest assured, I have already moved him elsewhere. That said, with that spirit formation, he will be safe regardless of where he might be,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the worry in Zhao Hong’s eyes visibly lessened.

“Chu Feng, thank you, truly,” Zhao Hong expressed her thanks again. Furthermore, the expression of guilt in her eyes grew even stronger. She said, “Further, I am truly sorry.”

“Sorry?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

“I lied to you for the sake of obtaining strength. However, in the end, I still had to have you come and save me,” Zhao Hong spoke in a very ashamed manner.

Chu Feng finally understood why Zhao Hong was apologizing.

Back then, Zhao Hong had said to him that she had already been in this remnant before. Furthermore, she had said that she possessed certainty in being able to pass through the remnant.

However, the truth was that she had never been to the remnant. Furthermore, the level of danger that the remnant possessed was such that it ranked first in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

And at that moment, not only had Chu Feng also entered the remnant after her, but he had also successfully saved her.

Zhao Hong also knew very well that Chu Feng must’ve met with the guardian clan’s clan chief and the others. Thus, she knew that he already knew that she had deceived him.

“That’s not important. Everything is good as long as you’re fine,” Chu Feng said.

“No, if it wasn’t for my selfishness, this sort of thing would not have happened.”

“You have the ability to pass through this place. If it wasn’t for me being trapped in here, you would have obtained the power within that mist. The person that should’ve become a True Immortal right now should be you,” Zhao Hong said.

“If that’s the case, this game is dead,” Right at that moment, that yellow-gowned old man spoke.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong involuntarily looked to that yellow-gowned old man.

The reason for that was because his words contained deep implications.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong noticed that yellow-gowned old man was not looking at them. Instead, he was looking at that chessboard.

“Creak~~~”

Right at that moment, a chess piece on the chessboard moved. Once that chess piece moved, the entire game of chess concluded.

The reason for that was because the outcome had been determined.

“Rumble~~~”

At practically the same moment as the chess game came to an end, Chu Feng felt violent trembling underneath his feet. Then, ear-piercing rumbles sounded from all around.

Furthermore, the trembling beneath his feet was growing stronger and stronger. The rumbles also grew more and more ear-piercing.

That place was collapsing.

“Senior, what is happening?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

He knew that the yellow-gowned old man must be able to explain the situation at hand.

“Are you still unable to tell?” The yellow-gowned old man looked to Chu Feng. With a smile on his face, he said, “This Unknown Burial Ground is actually a game. However, someone has managed to beat this game.”

“Since the game has been beaten, there is no meaning for it to exist.”

“As for the person who defeated this game, it is you.”

[1. By ‘game,’ they are referring to chess terms. Well... the chinese word for chess (qi) is any board game with pieces. They generally do not refer to chinese chess (xiangqi), but instead weiqi (or known in english by its japanese

name 'go.') I decided to use the word chess since very few people knows what 'go' is and Bee also did not specify what sort of board game.]

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2607 - The Formation Cleared, The Treasures Gone

“Rumble~~~”

The rumbling was not only happening inside the Unknown Burial Ground; even the desert outside was rumbling violently.

“What is happening?!”

At that moment, the expressions of Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, who were standing before the grand formation, changed.

Their change in their expressions was due to their worry toward Chu Feng's safety. After all, they were all able to tell that the Unknown Burial Ground would not rumble like that without a reason or cause. Something abnormal must've happened.

However, not only did the rumbling show no sign of stopping, but it instead grew more and more ear-piercing. Furthermore, they were able to clearly sense that the desert was trembling violently.

“Xunyi, move back.”

Seeing that the situation was amiss, Ying Mingchao immediately grabbed Zi Xunyi and moved away from the grand formation.

“Rumble~~~”

At practically the same moment the two of them left the grand formation, the Unknown Burial Ground that was covered by the grand formation immediately surged with smoke.

After that, the Unknown Burial Ground sunk in, forming an enormous pit.

Furthermore, the radius of that sunken pit was still expanding nonstop. It greatly surpassed the area covered by the grand formation.

With the situation being like that, the crowd all soared into the sky and began to move away from that region.

The reason for that was because they were filled with dense fear toward the Unknown Burial Ground.

Even though it was merely the desert caving in, they still did not dare to linger in the sky above it. Only by escaping to a distance where they felt safe would they be at ease.

“Why would this be happening? Could it be that Chu Feng failed?”

Zi Xunyi was extremely nervous. In truth, it was not only her. Many others present also felt that Chu Feng might have failed.

After all, this was the first time that they had ever seen such an abnormality. Subconsciously, they started to think that it was a crisis.

“No, I must go down and save Chu Feng,” At that moment when everyone was cowering away from the Unknown Burial Ground, Ying Mingchao suddenly changed directions and arrived above the sky of the Unknown Burial Ground. He was planning to enter the Unknown Burial Ground.

“Mingchao, have you gone insane?” Right at the moment when Ying Mingchao turned around, Zi Xunyi also followed after him. She stopped him.

“Xunyi, Chu Feng saved my life. Now that he’s in trouble, I cannot ignore it,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Chu Feng had already broken through the Life and Death Formation. He is most likely not in danger. If he is fine, yet something is to happen to you because you wanted to save him, how would Chu Feng feel? He would most definitely blame himself,” Zi Xunyi urged.

“Xunyi, you can rest assured, I will definitely pay attention to my own safety. If I encounter something unexpected, I will immediately leave,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Very well. In that case, I will accompany you,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Xunyi, you...” Ying Mingchao felt lost as to what to do upon hearing what Zi Xunyi said.

After all, all the things he had said earlier were lies. For the sake of saving Chu Feng, he would be willing to bear any danger.

As such, he would naturally not be willing to have Zi Xunyi accompany him down.

While he could bear dangers, he did not want Zi Xunyi to bear dangers together with him.

At the same time inside the Unknown Burial Ground. The collapse was still ongoing. Merely, the collapse did not affect Chu Feng and the others inside.

A power had sealed off the region. Thus, that region did not collapse.

“Senior, exactly what is happening here?” Chu Feng asked the yellow-gowned old man.

“Back then, I made a bet with a person. Because of that bet, we created this game.”

“To clear this game, one cannot just pass through all three checkpoints. Instead, one must first pass through all three checkpoints, and then give to another what one has obtained afterwards.”

“Back then, I felt this to be impossible. How could anyone be willing to give what they had obtained with their life to another?”

“However, never would I have expected that she was right, never would I have expected that there really would be a foolish boy like you.”

“Thus, boy, you have made this old man lose the bet,” After the yellow-gowned old man said these words, his gaze suddenly changed.

Sensing the gaze from the yellow-gowned old man, Chu Feng’s heart immediately grew tense. A chill emerged in his heart.

Killing intent. In that one moment, Chu Feng actually felt killing intent.

However, that sort of sensation only lasted for an instant. It arrived so rapidly and left so rapidly that Chu Feng felt that it might be his misperception.

This was especially true when Chu Feng saw the yellow-gowned old man beaming with a smile on his face. He became even more uncertain as to whether the killing intent he had felt in that one instant was real or fake.

“Senior, may I know your distinguished name, and who created this game along with senior?” Chu Feng asked. He knew that as the Unknown Burial Ground was collapsing, the yellow-gowned old man would soon leave too. Likely, if he did not ask those questions now, it would be very difficult for him to obtain an answer to those questions in the future.

Actually, Chu Feng merely wanted to remember their names so that he could repay them should the opportunity present itself in the future. After all, no matter what, if it wasn't for this game of theirs, he would not have obtained the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

Although the journey was difficult, and he was indeed seen as a chess piece in another's game, Chu Feng was someone who was grateful toward those that helped him.

“Knowing too much will serve no benefit to you. Go on and leave this place. Also, do not mention the things regarding me to anyone.”

As the yellow-gowned old man spoke, a faint light emerged in his eyes. The next moment, Chu Feng felt that he was covered by some sort of power. He turned around and discovered that Zhao Hong was in the same situation as him.

The light grew brighter and brighter. It grew so intense that Chu Feng was no longer capable of seeing his surroundings.

However, the intense light soon started to gradually vanish. When the light vanished, Chu Feng discovered that he was outside of the Unknown Burial Ground.

A vast crowd was present there. They numbered in the tens of thousands. Furthermore, they were all cultivation experts. They were all from different sects and powers.

That group of people were looking at the Unknown Burial Ground that had already caved in and were in utter panic.

“Chu Feng! Look, it's Chu Feng!!!”

As there were many people, someone soon discovered Chu Feng.

Once the news of Chu Feng being seen was spread, everyone turned their gazes toward Chu Feng.

“Success! He succeeded!”

The guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were all overjoyed.

The reason for that was because not only did they see Chu Feng, but they also saw the person beside Chu Feng, Zhao Hong. Both of them... were safe and sound.

“Chu Feng, is it really you?”

Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi arrived before Chu Feng together. Ying Mingchao was extremely emotional. He was so emotional that he did not dare to believe his eyes.

“Senior Ying, Senior Zi, I have made you two worry,” Chu Feng said.

“How did you two get out? What happened to the Unknown Burial Ground?” Ying Mingchao asked.

Once his questions were asked, the crowd present all grew quiet. They all started to silently look toward Chu Feng, awaiting his answer.

They were all very curious as to what had happened after Chu Feng broke through the Life and Death Formation. They wanted to know why the Unknown Burial Ground ended up disappearing.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a ray of light suddenly emerged from the center of the Unknown Burial Ground and shot straight toward the sky.

Soon, the light started to spread and formed six large characters.

‘The formation cleared, the treasures gone!!!’

Seeing the six enormous words in the sky, everyone’s heart tightened.

When they looked to Chu Feng again, the crowd, to a greater or lesser degree, all revealed gazes of admiration.

There was no longer a need for them to ask Chu Feng anymore. The reason for that was because those six large characters had already given them the answer.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2608 - Definitely Fishy

“Chu Feng, you are simply too amazing. You actually managed to even clear the Unknown Burial Ground.”

“Chu Feng, exactly what sort of treasures did you obtain from the Unknown Burial Ground?”

“Chu Feng, do you know who it is that created that Unknown Burial Ground? Why did he create the Unknown Burial Ground?”

After a moment of astonishment, the crowd started to batter Chu Feng with a torrential storm of questions.

Although they now knew that the Unknown Burial Ground had collapsed because Chu Feng had obtained its treasures, they still had a lot of questions that they wished to ask.

“Everyone, it’s enough. It was no easy task for Chu Feng to defeat the formation. Let’s give him some time to rest.”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao waved his sleeve. A layer of spirit power emerged, isolating Chu Feng from the others.

At this moment, only seven individuals were present in that layer of spirit power.

They were Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, the guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Shunlian, Kong Yuehua, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao had a serious expression on his face. Everyone thought that Ying Mingchao was planning to say something.

However, who would've thought that Ying Mingchao actually bowed to Chu Feng. Then, in a very apologetic manner, he said, "Chu Feng, my apologies. I have let you down."

"Senior Ying, what are you doing?" Chu Feng hurriedly moved forward to support Ying Mingchao.

"The method that we used to break through the Life and Death Formation was wrong. Yet, I still made you do it. If it wasn't for the fact that you managed to have a sudden flash of realization and decided to use the comprehension that you obtained from the illusion, we would most likely have caused your death," Ying Mingchao said.

"Chu Feng, I am truly sorry," Even Zi Xunyi started to apologize to Chu Feng remorsefully.

"Seniors, you must not act like this. Actually, the methods that you two used to break through the Life and Death Formation were most definitely effective. Else, how could the two of you be able to leave it?" Chu Feng said.

Even though he knew that their method was wrong, he did not wish to attack their egos. Since the Unknown Burial Ground was already gone, regardless of whether their method was effective or not, no one would be able to attempt to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground using their method anyways.

"Chu Feng, you don't have to comfort us. We are able to imagine what happened," However, regardless of what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao seemed to be determined that their method was incorrect.

That was understandable. After all, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were grand characters that had experienced a lot of things. As such, how could they not be able to tell?

In fact, it was not only Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi. Many of the people present were all able to tell that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi's method was wrong. n(Ovel&1n

Even if their method wasn't wrong, it would still not be as authentic as Chu Feng's method.

Else, why would the Unknown Burial Ground disappear after Chu Feng successfully broke through the Life and Death Formation, and remain after Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi broke through the Life and Death Formation?

The only reason no one mentioned it directly was because they were concerned for Ying Mingchao's reputation. However, they all already knew the truth in their hearts.

"That is not important. As long as Chu Feng and Zhao Hong are fine, everything's good," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"That's right, it's good that they're fine," Zi Xunyi voiced her agreement.

Although she felt that she had made a mistake, she did not wish for Ying Mingchao to endure too much of a mental burden.

"Zhao Hong's cultivation has actually already reached the True Immortal realm. It would seem that the harvest this time is truly great," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"This cultivation was given to me by Chu Feng," Zhao Hong said.

"Oh?"

The people present were startled by those words. However, after seeing Zhao Hong's ashamed expression, they soon managed to guess what had happened.

The person to clear the Unknown Burial Ground should be Chu Feng. As for Zhao Hong, she should have only been saved by Chu Feng. As for her cultivation, since she said it like that, they were able to guess what had happened.

"Let's move on to proper business. Chu Feng, there's good news. We have managed to discover the Infant Soul Sect's hideout," Ying Mingchao said.

"Truly?" Chu Feng was immediately overjoyed upon hearing those words.

"This is all thanks to you. If it wasn't for you capturing those disciples from the Infant Soul Sect, we would not have been able to find out where they were located this quickly," Ying Mingchao said.

“In that case, when do we act?” Chu Feng asked. He was more impatient than anyone to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

After all, the Infant Soul Sect had done all sorts of evil. They were a sect that trained using infants. If they were eliminated a day sooner, it would mean that they would be able to save the people of the world, as well as those innocent children, a day sooner.

“This matter should not be delayed. We plan to set off immediately,” Ying Mingchao said.

Then, Ying Mingchao removed the spirit formation. He informed the crowd of his desire to attack the Infant Soul Sect.

Actually, Ying Mingchao had already mentioned this matter to the various powers beforehand. He had also obtained the endorsement of those powers.

And now, as they knew the location of the Infant Soul Sect, they would naturally agree with Ying Mingchao’s decision without any objections. The crowd planned to immediately set off toward the Infant Soul Sect’s headquarters.

“Are we able to lay down our grudges?” After gaining the approval of the crowd, Ying Mingchao especially turned toward Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua.

“Let’s eliminate our great enemy first,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Very well.”

Seeing that they’d agreed, Ying Mingchao nodded with a smile on his face. At this moment... they really did need Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua’s strength.

However, most importantly of all, Ying Mingchao truly wanted to reconcile with them.

“Xunyi, you...” Ying Mingchao looked to Zi Xunyi.

Ying Mingchao was extremely worried for Zi Xunyi. He was afraid that Zi Xunyi would leave him, that she would try to kill herself again.

With his understanding of Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao knew that it would be very difficult to change what she had decided. Ying Mingchao truly did not wish for Zi Xunyi to die just like that.

“The Infant Soul Sect is the greatest scourge in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. There is nothing more important than eliminating them,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Xunyi, you’re willing to help me?”

Ying Mingchao was immediately overjoyed upon hearing what Zi Xunyi said. He was not overjoyed because Zi Xunyi was willing to help him. Rather, it was because this would, at the very minimum, meant that Zi Xunyi would continue to stay with him. With that, he would be able to find an opportunity to persuade Zi Xunyi against killing herself.

“No, it’s not to help you. Rather, it’s for all the living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Very well. Xunyi, what you’ve said is very true. This battle is unrelated to us individually. Instead, it concerns the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Everyone, let us battle for all the living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!” Ying Mingchao shouted.

“Battle for all the living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!!!”

The crowd shouted in unison. Their voices were like a tsunami, a gathering of ten thousand thunderbolts, that echoed through the entire desert.

“Ji, ji, ji~~~”

Right when Ying Mingchao was planning to lead everyone to attack the Infant Soul Sect’s headquarters, several birds emitting blue light began to fly toward this place from all directions.

Those birds were very special. Not only were they extremely fast, but they were also flickering, as if they were teleporting.

In the end, these birds arrived in the sea of people.

These birds were called Bluelight Flickering Birds. They were a sort of method to transmit information. They were similar to the Golden Flash Bird. Merely, their speed was faster than the Golden Flash Bird.

“Lord City Master,” Upon receiving the news from the Bluelight Flickering Birds, an elder of Hero City revealed a serious expression.

“Could it be that something has happened in the city?” Ying Mingchao knew that those Bluelight Flickering Birds were sent from Hero City.

“News has come from the city that the Infant Soul Sect has sent out invitations. They are inviting everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to their headquarters to participate in a grand ceremony,” That elder said.

“Grand ceremony? What grand ceremony?” Many people present revealed surprised expressions after hearing that.

The Infant Soul Sect had always been extremely well-hidden and low-key. In fact, apart from the tier one powers, very few people knew of their existence.

Yet, now this Infant Soul Sect actually made such an open invitation. The crowd felt extremely astonished by their behavior.

“They say that it’s a cultivation grand ceremony that can help everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm increase their cultivation,” That elder said.

“In that case, does the invitation have the location of the Infant Soul Sect’s headquarters?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“It does. It is the same as the location that we’ve obtained,” That elder answered.

“Could it be that everyone else has also received this information?” Ying Mingchao turned to the crowd.

He knew that, apart from Hero City, the other powers had also received information sent to them through the Bluelight Flickering Birds.

“City Master Ying, that is precisely the case,” The people from the various powers that had received information from their various Bluelight Flickering Birds all spoke in unison.

“Infant Soul Sect, exactly what are they planning?” At this moment, Ying Mingchao started to ponder.

He had originally thought that he would be able to catch the Infant Soul Sect unprepared after obtaining the location of their headquarters from Old Demon Rakshasa.

However, with the situation now, they were evidently unable to take the Infant Soul Sect by surprise. Since the Infant Soul Sect dared to invite everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to their headquarters, they must have made preparations.

“Lord City Master, what should we do now?” The crowd asked.

“This matter is definitely fishy. We cannot be careless.”

“Let’s return to Hero City first. We shall make a decision as to what to do after I discuss this matter with the various headmasters.”

After making that decision, Ying Mingchao lead the crowd back toward Hero City.

At the same time, the people from the Immortal Sword School, Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and the other powers also transmitted this news to their respective headmasters. They planned to gather at Hero City.

After this vast group of people left, the six characters that filled the sky also started to gradually vanish. Soon, this desert was once again covered with wind and sand.

The desert had returned to how it was before.

However, suddenly, two figures appeared in the sky above the vast desert.

One of them was that yellow-gowned old man. As for the other, it was that deer.

Like an ordinary deer, that deer stood beside the yellow-gowned old man. However, its eyes were filled with spirit. From that, one could tell that it was no ordinary deer.

At this moment, both the yellow-gowned old man and the deer were staring at the direction that Chu Feng and the others had left in. No one knew what they were thinking.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2609 - Old Ancestor Of The Buddha's Heavenly Temple

Not long after Ying Mingchao and the others returned to Hero City, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot both arrived at Hero City.

After various investigations, they were all certain that the Infant Soul Sect was not bluffing with their invitations.

Furthermore, their invitations were not only sent to the major powers; practically all of the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had received the invitation.

Their action was undoubtedly announcing their existence to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, they were using the name of 'cultivation grand ceremony' to invite everyone.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao and the others were all confused. They did not know exactly what the Infant Soul Sect was planning.

However, one thing was certain. Based on their understanding of the Infant Soul Sect, the Infant Soul Sect's invitation was most definitely not as simple as it appeared.

In the end, the allied army decided to stake everything in one attack. They gave up defending their cities and gathered all of their strongest battle forces to directly attack the Infant Soul Sect. Victory or defeat would be determined by this one battle.

Currently, the strongest allied army was gathered in Hero City. This army, composed of people from Hero City, Buddha's Heavenly Temple, the Immortal

Sword School and many tier two powers, began to proceed toward the Infant Soul Sect's headquarters. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's various other powers also began to proceed toward the Infant Soul Sect.

Although their speed was much inferior to that of the allied army, they set off toward the Infant Soul Sect much sooner than the allied army.

These were all people that did not know the truth. They had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect before.

The sudden invitation made some of them felt that it was fortune falling from the sky. As for others, they felt that this was merely a scam.

That said, regardless of how they felt, regardless of how skeptical they might be, they all decided to check things out.

After all, this was something that concerned their cultivation. None of them wished to miss this opportunity.

A magnificent army with thousands of men and horses was proceeding with countless war banners. It was a truly imposing sight.

Among them were enormous war chariots. Those war chariots were actually crushing the air as they moved. They were truly impressive.

Those that were capable of being inside those war chariots were most definitely people that possessed grand status.

Among them was Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was receiving the highest treatment from the allied army. The war chariot that he was in was reserved for the strongest individuals in the allied army.

Apart from Chu Feng, everyone else here were True Immortals. Among them was Zhao Hong.

However, as Zhao Hong was not fond of of this sort of setting, she had left the war chariot. Seeing that Zhao Hong had not returned for a long time, Chu Feng planned to go out to find her. However, right when he was planning to find Zhao Hong, he came across a familiar figure.

It was Grandmaster Pocket. Grandmaster Pocket was standing at the fringe of the allied army and looking forward.

Chu Feng walked toward Grandmaster Pocket and asked, “Grandmaster, why aren’t you resting in a war chariot?”

Although Grandmaster Pocket was not a True Immortal, he was a peak Martial Ancestor. Someone like him possessed the status to rest in a war chariot.

“Amitabha, it is rare that the various powers have decided to join hands to fight. Furthermore, they are doing so with the righteous intention to eliminate evil. As such, this old man wishes to feel the current situation,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

Chu Feng was able to understand what he meant by ‘rare.’

After all, the various powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm all possessed their own selfish motives. To join hands to clear a remnant was something that happened very frequently. However, that was because they all possessed their own selfish motives.

Thus, a battle like this, a battle with an identical objective, was truly rare.

For the sake of traveling as fast as possible, Ying Mingchao was using his power to speed up the overall speed of the group.

Thus, regardless of whether it might be the people in the war chariots or the people outside, their traveling speeds were all identical. It was not exhausting for the crowd to travel.

“Grandmaster, this junior has one thing that I wish to consult Grandmaster on,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” Grandmaster Pocket asked.

“It’s regarding the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Founder,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng had indirectly questioned others about the founder of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple before.

The founder of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple was a person with the buddhist name Foguang. However, although this Abbot Foguang was the

founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple, his cultivation didn't seem very high. Furthermore, he died not long after founding the Temple.

[1.Foguang means Buddha's teachings. It is also the 'Buddha' in Buddha's Heavenly Temple. In other words, Buddha's Heavenly Temple could also be said to be Foguang's Heavenly Temple.]

The Buddha's Heavenly Temple had only emerged in power many years after Foguang died. That said, it was a mystery as to how the Buddha's Heavenly Temple managed to emerge in power.

The reason why Chu Feng was inquiring about this was because he wanted to inquire about that mysterious old cat.

After all, that old cat had declared itself to be the founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple.

That said, Chu Feng felt that it would be impossible for that old cat to be the founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple, Monk Foguang. He felt that the old cat was most likely related to how the Buddha's Heavenly Temple emerged in power.

"So that's what you wanted to know."

"Naturally, the founder of our Buddha's Heavenly Temple is Abbot Foguang. That is something that everyone knows," After saying those words, Grandmaster Pocket smiled profoundly. Then, he said to Chu Feng, "I believe that is what Almsgiver Chu Feng wanted to know, no?"

Chu Feng noticed that a soundproofing spirit formation had quietly covered the two of them as Grandmaster Pocket said those words.

In other words, the conversation between the two of them could not be heard by others from this point on.

Seeing that Grandmaster Pocket had seen through him, Chu Feng did not try to beat around the bush anymore either. Instead, he directly asked, "Grandmaster, what I wanted to know is the person that helped the Buddha's Heavenly Temple emerge in power."

“I knew that’s what you wanted to ask about. That’s understandable too. After all, countless people want to know about that matter. However, that is a secret of our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart sunk. Since it was their secret, it was clear that he would not be able to obtain any information today.

However, right at this moment, Grandmaster Pocket smiled and said, “However, Lord Abbot mentioned to us before that if you wanted to know about this matter, we could tell you about it. Merely, there is a condition. That is, you must keep this matter confidential.”

“This junior will definitely keep this matter confidential,” Chu Feng said.

“Speaking of it, you might find it unbelievable. Others must definitely think that it was an Upper Realm’s expert that helped our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple emerge in power. They must all think that it was an immortal and virtuous monk that helped us. Else, there would be no reason for them to confer a favor upon our temple.”

“However, the truth is, it was not a virtuous saint that helped our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple emerge in power. In fact, it could even be said that the individual that helped us was not a human either. Instead, it was a cat,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“It’s a match! Sure enough, it is that old cat. Chu Feng, quickly ask him about that old cat,” Her Lady Queen spoke excitedly.

That old cat was too mysterious. Not only had it snatched away Zhan Haichuan’s inheritance, but it had also snatched away the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip. That old cat was extremely powerful and cunning.

Most importantly, that old cat had also abducted Xue Ji. No one knew what it planned to do. n(Ovel&1n

Thus, both Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen wanted to know the origin of that old cat.

“Cat? Why would it be a cat? Could it be a monstrous beast?”

Even though Chu Feng had already met that old cat before, it was clear that the people from the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple had no idea about the

interactions between Chu Feng and that old cat. As such, Chu Feng would naturally have to pretend that he had no idea about the old cat.

“That individual might be a monstrous beast, yet might also not be a monstrous beast. Regardless, it is extremely powerful. It is all thanks to it that our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple managed to obtain our current standing. Thus, our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple has always deemed it as our Old Ancestor,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“Could it be that not even you all know of the origin of your Old Ancestor?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is merely a coincidence that we obtained the assistance of our Old Ancestor. As for our Old Ancestor’s origin, we know nothing of it. All we know is that our Old Ancestor came to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to seal an item,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“Seal an item? What sort of item?” Chu Feng asked.

“We have no clue as to what that item is or where that item is sealed.”

“All we know is that our Old Ancestor mentioned that that item was not something from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It was from the Outer World, and possessed an extremely bloodthirsty and cruel nature.”

“Our Old Ancestor told us that if that item were to break free from its seal, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would fall into a calamity, and everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be killed.”

“It would be an inescapable fate for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2610 - Imminent Battle - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2610 - Imminent Battle

Chapter 2610 - Imminent Battle

“If that item is that dangerous, why did that Old Ancestor only seal it, and not destroy it?”

“For that Old Ancestor to seal it in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, wouldn’t it be placing a hidden danger in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“Our Old Ancestor said that item possessed a former relationship with it. Thus, Old Ancestor was unwilling to kill it, and decided to seal it instead.”

“As for the issue of that item becoming a calamity, our then Abbot also asked Old Ancestor about it. As for the response from Old Ancestor...” After saying those words, Grandmaster Pocket sighed helplessly. It seemed that he had a hidden trouble that was hard to mention.

“What was the response?” Chu Feng asked.

“Our Old Ancestor said ‘How is the death of others related to me?’” Grandmaster Pocket said. When he said those words, he had an ashamed expression.

Although that old cat was not a Buddhist monk, he was still related to the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple, and was respected as their Old Ancestor. However, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple needed to be righteous and benevolent. Thus, it would involuntarily make them feel embarrassed to mention their Old Ancestor.

After hearing what Grandmaster Pocket said, Chu Feng felt that actually made sense. Chu Feng did not feel surprise when he heard that that old cat had said something like that. On the contrary, it seemed like something it would say.

Afterwards, Chu Feng inquired more about that old cat. However, it seemed that Grandmaster Pocket only possessed limited knowledge.

To put it briefly, that old cat had merely conveniently decided to help the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple one time. With its cunning nature, it would naturally not say much about itself to the people from the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple. Thus, Chu Feng believed that Grandmaster Pocket was not lying to him, and that the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple knew very little about the old cat.

Although Chu Feng was unable to obtain any useful information regarding the old cat, Chu Feng did not return to rest in the war chariot.

Instead, he chose a secluded place to set up a concealment formation to conceal himself.

Chu Feng did that with the intention of creating a quiet place so that he could carefully read the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

After all, if Chu Feng were to completely grasp this book, he would be able to make progress in his cultivation.

Furthermore, this sort of progress would not be a one or two time thing. Instead, it could be said that it would be a lifelong benefit.

That said, even though Chu Feng had obtained the complete version of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, it would still take him some time in order to completely comprehend it.

Before Chu Feng could completely comprehend the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, the allied army arrived at Chen Heavenly City.

This Chen Heavenly City was a city ruled by a Chen Heavenly Clan.

The Chen Heavenly Clan also possessed a Heavenly Bloodline. Although they were far inferior to the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan, they were a tier two power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for their strength, they were on par with the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. However, they were more famous and prestigious than the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

This Chen Heavenly Clan could be said to be a very reputed power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, from the Infant Soul Sect's invitations, as well as the information obtained from Old Demon Rakshasa, this Chen Heavenly Clan was actually the Infant Soul Sect's headquarters.

At this moment, not only was the Chen Heavenly City's entrance gates tightly closed, but its defensive formation was also active. Apart from the people inside, no one was capable of entering it.

Several hundreds of thousands of people were already gathered outside Chen Heavenly City.

They were all people that came here upon receiving the invitation. However, the Chen Heavenly City's gates had been closed the entire time. As such, they were simply unable to enter.

If it wasn't for the fact that the words 'Infant Soul Sect' were written on the large banners outside the Chen Heavenly Clan, the crowd would truly think that they'd been duped.

"Look! Who are those people?! They're actually this imposing and grand!"

"Heavens! It's Hero City, the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple!"

"Why would they send forth this many people? Could it be... that they have also received the Infant Soul Sect's invitation?"

"This is truly unfathomable! Exactly what is the origin of that Infant Soul Sect? It actually managed to invite even those huge monsters."

Upon seeing the grand and majestic allied army, the people gathered here all burst into an uproar.

After all, to them, Hero City, the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple were the current rulers of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

It would not be an exaggeration at all to say that these three powers were akin to gods in the eyes of many people. They held extremely high status in the hearts of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"Never would I have expected that the Chen Heavenly Clan was actually an accomplice to the Infant Soul Sect. They have truly hidden themselves well."

Upon seeing the Infant Soul Sect's banners, many people revealed expressions of hatred and disgust.

If they hadn't witnessed it themselves, they would truly feel this to be unimaginable.

The reason for that was because the Chen Heavenly Clan's Chen Heavenly City was not a desolate place.

Inside this Chen Heavenly City was an auction house. That auction house was famous throughout the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Thus, not to mention the others from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, even many people from the allied army have been to that auction house.

However, never had they ever discovered any connection between the Chen Heavenly Clan and the Infant Soul Sect. From this, it could be seen that the Chen Heavenly Clan had kept things hidden extremely well.

“Infant Soul Sect, I shall see exactly what you all plan to do this time around.

At the moment when the allied army was gasping at the fact that there was actually a massive connection between the Chen Heavenly Clan and the Infant Soul Sect, Ying Mingchao walked out from his war chariot and arrived at the forefront of the allied army.

“Look! It’s Ying Mingchao, it’s Lord Ying Mingchao!”

After Ying Mingchao appeared, the crowd gathered outside the Chen Heavenly Clan burst into an uproar once again.

They never expected that even a grand character like Ying Mingchao would show up here.

After all, Ying Mingchao was the publicly accepted number one expert of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Everyone, I will make a long story short. This Infant Soul Sect is not any righteous or good-natured power.”

“The Infant Soul Sect is a demonic sect that has existed in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for many years. They train in demonic technique using the bodies of infants as their cultivation resource. Over the many years, they have slaughtered countless innocent lives. I believe everyone has heard about this matter before. Some among you all might have even suffered at their hands,” Ying Mingchao spoke with a thunder-like voice.

“What?! This Infant Soul Sect is actually the rumored evil power that uses the bodies of infants as their cultivation resource?”

After hearing what Ying Mingchao said, many people came to a sudden realization. After that, they revealed frightened expressions on their faces.

Although they had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect by name, they had heard of that evil power.

After all, the Infant Soul Sect had conducted all sorts of evil. They had massacred countless infants and cities. Furthermore, they would oftentimes not bother to even get rid of the corpses. This made it so that many people had witnessed the devastating scenes they left in their wake.

Thus, while many people had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect, many among them had heard of the rumored evil power that specialized in killing infants.

“So this Infant Soul Sect is actually that power. Yet they actually dared to send us invitations? Could it be... that they’re planning to kill us?”

“Lord Ying Mingchao, this Infant Soul Sect has done countless evils. Their crimes cannot be forgiven. You must definitely uphold justice for us.”

At this moment, the crowd present all began to shout for a crusade against the Infant Soul Sect.

“Everyone, rest assured. Today, our Hero City has come here together with the Immortal Sword School, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and others precisely to eliminate the malignant tumor that is the Infant Soul Sect.”

“That said, perhaps everyone does not know about it. However, the power of the Infant Soul Sect must not be looked down upon. Once the battle begins, casualties will be inevitable. Thus, everyone, it would be best to withdraw from here so as to not be implicated by the battle,” Ying Mingchao said.

Once Ying Mingchao said those words, the people that were gathered outside the Chen Heavenly City immediately started to soar into the sky. Like a group of frightened birds, they began to fly away in all directions.

Ying Mingchao’s words did not sound like a joke. Furthermore, the allied army looked extremely ferocious.

As such, they felt that what Ying Mingchao said was the truth. As these people were all people that cherished their lives, they would naturally escape

immediately after finding out about the dangers. None of them wanted to be implicated by the battle and lose their lives.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the crowd all scattered away from Chen Heavenly City, the spirit formation around Chen Heavenly City actually opened.

At this moment, everyone from the allied army and the people that were fleeing all turned their gazes toward Chen Heavenly City.

They all wanted to see exactly what sort of capability this notorious Infant Soul Sect possessed for them to dare to openly invite all these people here.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2611 - The Appearance Of The Infant Soul Sect

After that defensive formation was opened, the originally tranquil city was no longer still. Many densely packed figures began to fly out from the city. They covered the sky and appeared before the crowd.

These people were all wearing black gowns. There were so many of them that they numbered in the several hundred thousands.

Seeing this, the allied army became serious. The reason for that was because they were wearing the same outfit as that of the Infant Soul Sect.

Furthermore, with how many people there were, the allied army did not dare to underestimate them.

However, they soon discovered that while those people were all wearing the Infant Soul Sect's outfit, their overall level of cultivation was not very high. When compared with the allied army composed of elites, it was a heaven and earth difference. They were simply not at the same level at all.

If the allied army were eagles flying in the sky, then these people that had appeared above Chen Heavenly City were merely insignificant houseflies.

Upon closer inspection, the crowd discovered that those people were all from the Chen Heavenly Clan.

The Chen Heavenly Clan's army was standing in an orderly fashion in the sky. They were standing in confrontation against the allied army.

Even though the difference in strength between them was enormous, they were still extremely confident and without the slightest amount of fear when facing the allied army.

Soon, a figure walked out from among the Chen Heavenly Clan's army. That person arrived at the front of the army. This person was a peak Martial Ancestor-level old man. As for this person... he was the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"I am the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. On behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, I welcome all the honored guests that have arrived here today," The Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke with a beaming smile.

"So, you've really joined the Infant Soul Sect?" Ying Mingchao asked.

"I never mentioned that any of this was a lie," The Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Then let me ask you this, have the people of your Chen Heavenly Clan, these people wearing the outfit of the Infant Soul Sect, used innocent infants to cultivate a demonic technique?" Ying Mingchao asked.

"We have indeed trained in it. However, I must make one correction. That is not a demonic technique."

The Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke without hesitation. He firmly admitted to having used infants as cultivation resources. Furthermore, he spoke in such a frank and open manner. It was as if what they'd done was not shameful at all.

"You all are truly animals lower than pigs and dogs!!!!"

"How could people as cruel and merciless as you all exist?!"

After hearing the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief admitting to it, the allied army, as well as the people that had retreated, all grew extremely furious, and began to gnash their teeth.

“Very well. Since you all have admitted to it, do not blame me, Ying Mingchao, for being ruthless.”

As Ying Mingchao spoke, his gown started to move, and his hair started to flutter. Boundless oppressive might started to emit from his body. Like an invisible tide, his oppressive might covered Chen Heavenly City.

At the moment when Ying Mingchao unleashed his oppressive might, the expressions of everyone outside Chen Heavenly City changed. They were all able to sense how overwhelming the power of Ying Mingchao’s oppressive might was.

Before Ying Mingchao’s overwhelmingly powerful oppressive might, not to mention these people from the Chen Heavenly Clan, but even all of Chen Heavenly City could be instantly destroyed.

Thus, when they felt Ying Mingchao’s oppressive might, a thought came to everyone’s minds.

‘Ying Mingchao’s reputation of the number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is fully justified.’

When even the Kong Heavenly Clan was extinguished by Ying Mingchao alone, they believed that the Infant Soul Sect would not be able to escape calamity today.

However, right at the moment when everyone felt that the Chen Heavenly Clan would be instantly exterminated, a boundless wave of oppressive might suddenly swept forth from within the Chen Heavenly City and collided with Ying Mingchao’s oppressive might outside Chen Heavenly City.

“Boom~~~”

The collision between the two oppressive mights created an ear-piercing explosion. The collision also created energy ripples that started to move toward the allied army.

“Woosh~~~”

Fortunately, Ying Mingchao was standing at the front of the allied army. With a wave of his sleeve, he managed to disperse the ferocious energy ripples.

When the crowd looked to Chen Heavenly City again, they were shocked to discover that Chen Heavenly City was completely unscathed. As for the people from the Chen Heavenly Clan, they were also completely uninjured.

That oppressive might from Chen Heavenly City was actually able to match Ying Mingchao's oppressive might.

This meant that there was a person in there that was at least a rank two True Immortal.

"This..."

The allied army were able to take what had occurred without much astonishment. However, the others that did not know the truth were extremely shocked.

They felt that regardless of how powerful the Infant Soul Sect might be, they would definitely not be able to compare to the allied army. They felt that Ying Mingchao would be able to exterminate all of them by himself.

However, judging the situation now, it was not as simple as they had anticipated. The Infant Soul Sect actually possessed a rank two True Immortal. This meant that they possessed strength on par with the tier one powers.

"Ying Mingchao, if you all wish to be our Infant Soul Sect's honored guests, I will welcome you all."

"However, if you want to harm the people of our Infant Soul Sect, then I, Hun Poyuan, will definitely not allow it."

At this moment when the crowd were astonished, a figure flew out from Chen Heavenly City and arrived before the crowd's field of view.

This person was also wearing a black gown. However, that identical black gown gave off an extraordinary presence when he wore it. It was incomparably domineering.

This person was a middle-aged man. He arrived before the crowd like a ruler descending upon the world.

Upon seeing this person, Chu Feng's expression changed. While this person had the appearance of a middle-aged man, Chu Feng was able to tell that he was actually an old monster that had lived for close to ten thousand years.

With the strength this man possessed, he was most likely the actual master of the Infant Soul Sect.

After the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster appeared, several tens of thousands more people flew out from Chen Heavenly City. They arrived outside Chen Heavenly City following the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster and stood in confrontation against the allied army.

At this moment, not to mention those that didn't know about the Infant Soul Sect, even the allied army felt an oppressive sensation.

Not only was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster emitting the aura of a rank two True Immortal, but there were also four rank one True Immortals beside him. Two among them were people that Chu Feng knew. He had met them before at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

Like four guardians, the four rank one True Immortals stood on either side of the middle-aged man.

Apart from these five True Immortals, the strength of the army of tens of thousands that appeared together with them could not be underestimated either. They were actually all Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, there were over a thousand peak Martial Ancestor-level experts among them.

This was the main force of the Infant Soul Sect, a vicious, merciless yet powerful bunch.

However, one thing worthy of mentioning was that the appearance of the Infant Soul Sect army was different from when Chu Feng encountered them before.

Before, Chu Feng was able to sense a very intense heinous air from them. That heinous air originated from their use of infants to cultivate.

However today, none of them were actually emitting any heinous airs. They must've used some sort of special method to conceal it.

“There are quite a few old familiar faces here today. However, I know that many people here do not know of this old man.”

“Allow me to introduce myself. I am Hun Poyuan. I am the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. On behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, I welcome everyone that has arrived here today.”

Sure enough, that man by the name of Hun Poyuan was the sectmaster of the Infant Soul Sect.

“I truly never imagined for you all to all be here. This is the best, I am now able to completely exterminate all of you.”

Ying Mingchao did not feel the slightest favorable impression toward this Hun Poyuan’s self-introduction. Overwhelming killing intent emerged from Ying Mingchao, and an uncontrollable wild joy emerged in his eyes.

Based on his understanding of the Infant Soul Sect, practically everyone from the Infant Soul Sect had arrived today.

To Ying Mingchao, who planned to eradicate the Infant Soul Sect, this was extremely good news.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2612 - Absurd Excuse

“Ying Mingchao, I know that you have a very deep prejudice toward our Infant Soul Sect. However, there really is no need for us to face one another with swords and blades drawn,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to Ying Mingchao.

Compared to Ying Mingchao’s overflowing killing intent, this Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually had a calm and relaxed expression on his face.

It was as if he was not facing a life and death battle, but rather a friend.

“Prejudice? Is what you all have done just prejudice?”

“Are you to tell me that the deaths of all those innocent infants is merely prejudice?”

“Those were children that had not even managed to witness this world! How could you all be so ruthless as to kill them?!” Ying Mingchao’s furious voice echoed in this region.

It was so resounding and powerful!!!

“Infant Soul Sect, death will not wipe away your crimes. You all shall be dismembered into ten thousand pieces and consigned to eternal damnation.”

Following that, the people present all began to speak out against the Infant Soul Sect. After all, what the Infant Soul Sect had done was indeed something that many people found unacceptable.

“I admit that what our Infant Soul Sect has done is wrong. However, if I am to tell you all that our Infant Soul Sect’s actions were done to benefit everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, would you all be able to understand me?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“What? Benefit everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. What a joke!”

Before Ying Mingchao could even say anything, the surrounding crowd immediately let out disdainful voices.

This was the most absurd thing that they had ever heard.

This was simply an insult to their intelligence. That Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was simply treating them as fools.

“It’s as I said, you all won’t necessarily believe me. However, that is the truth,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“What utter absurdity!” Ying Mingchao was extremely furious, and did not feel like bothering with superfluous words. Thus, he pulled out his weapon and planned to attack.

“Wait a moment,” Right at this moment, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster stopped Ying Mingchao. He said, “They couldn’t possibly have lured us here without a reason. We should hear what they have to say and see what tricks they still have, and what their goal is.”

“Do as you wish,” Ying Mingchao spoke coldly.

He was annoyed. Ying Mingchao felt that there was simply no need to bother with superfluous words against an existence like the Infant Soul Sect. He felt that it would be better to just exterminate them directly.

That said, he was still currently a member of the allied army. Furthermore, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster was also a rank two True Immortal, and an ally. Thus... he would have to take his proposals into consideration.

"Infant Soul Sect, do not blame me for not giving you all a chance. Since you all want to speak, I will allow you all to speak all to properly explain yourselves."

"I shall see exactly what sort of trick you all can play," The Immortal Sword Sect's Headmaster said to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"The vast Outer World is filled with countless worlds. While we are unable to compare to the Upper Realms, when compared to the various Ordinary Realms, our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is still weak."

"That deeply vexed the founder of our Infant Soul Sect. He was distressed by thoughts of how to increase the overall strength of everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for his entire life."

"However, the way of martial cultivation places great importance upon one's own comprehension. To increase the overall strength of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is an extremely difficult task. In fact, it could even be said to be simply impossible."

"However, the heavens smile upon determined individuals. Our Infant Soul Sect's founder managed to run into a fortuitous encounter. From that fortuitous encounter, he discovered a method to forcibly imbue others with martial comprehension, a method to help others increase their cultivation."

"Merely, it is an extremely long process to achieve that method. Furthermore, an enormous price must be paid."

"That is, one will have to use the lives of newborn infants to temper that method. Through various tempering processes and experiments, one will finally be able to achieve it."

“Our Infant Soul Sect’s founder knew very well that our Infant Soul Sect would most definitely be detested by everyone in the world, and viewed as an enemy the moment we implemented that method.”

“After all, before we achieved our results, no one would know that we were doing all this to benefit the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, to benefit our descendants.”

“However, for the sake of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s future generations, for the sake of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s future, some sacrifices are necessary. For that, our Infant Soul Sect was formed.”

“All these years, our Infant Soul Sect has repeatedly been the target of scorn and attacks by so-called righteous sects and powers. Countless brothers of our Infant Soul Sect have been killed or injured. Yet, we continued on. While being detested by you all, we continued on doing what is beneficial to you all and your descendants,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Shut your mouth!!!” Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi suddenly shouted.

At this moment, Zi Xunyi was so furious that she started shivering. She pointed to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster and spoke with overwhelming anger, “You all have killed so many innocent children, yet you dare to find such pompous justification for your actions. You all are simply degenerates detested by both humans and gods. You all are simply lower than dogs and pigs.”

After saying those words, Zi Xunyi looked to Ying Mingchao. She said, “Mingchao, do not bother with superfluous words with them anymore. Do not allow them to continue on with their nonsense. Eliminate them all. We cannot allow this bunch of animals to continue living. We cannot allow them to harm innocent lives again.”

“That’s right, kill them!!!”

Once Zi Xunyi said those words, both the allied army as well as the bystanders echoed in agreement.

They all deeply detested the Infant Soul Sect to begin with. And now, the Infant Soul Sect actually gave such a justification for themselves. This had completely enraged them.

At this moment, the tens of thousands of people were all shouting in unison. They all had a common desire, the desire to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

“It won’t happen again!!!”

Right at this moment, that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke again. His voice was so loud that it actually drowned out the shouts of the tens of thousands of people.

In fact, when he spoke, both space and the earth started to shake. Buzzing noises accompanied constant trembles.

At this moment, everyone closed their mouths. The strength of a rank two True Immortal had brought fear upon many of the people present here.

After all, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was an existence that could completely obliterate them, leaving not even a corpse or skeleton behind, with a mere thought.

“We will no longer go and cause the death of another innocent infant. The reason for that is because we have, after many years of effort, finally succeeded. We have successfully grasped the method to increase everyone’s cultivation.”

“We have invited everyone here precisely so that we can reveal to everyone, reveal to the people of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, our achievement.”

“I also know that my words possess no basis to lean on, and that everyone will simply not believe me.”

“However... when the truth is placed before your eyes, you all will definitely believe it, believe what I have said to not be lies, to not be complete nonsense, but rather the truth, believe that I have not deceived everyone.”

“Thus, I will demonstrate to the fellow citizens of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm the results that our Infant Soul Sect has gained after sacrificing countless newborn infants.”

“Come, allow them to all experience the power of the Infant Soul Great Formation!!!”

After the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said those words, he began to form a hand seal.

"Buzz~~~"

The next moment, a black gaseous flame appeared on the bodies of everyone from the Infant Soul Sect. The black gaseous flames started to interweave with one another and form a grand formation in the sky.

This grand formation was different from anything anyone had ever seen before. It was not an ordinary spirit formation. Rather, it was a formation formed by the heinous air emitted by all the people from the Infant Soul Sect.

"That formation!!!"

Upon seeing that formation, the expressions of many people changed. They were all intimidated by the vast imposing might of that formation. *nOve(l).In*

"I believe everyone knows the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. He reached peak Martial Ancestor over a thousand years ago. However, even after all these years, he has not been able to reach the True Immortal realm."

"However, right now... I will assist him in reaching a breakthrough in cultivation."

"Everyone, watch carefully. For you will all serve as witnesses to this miracle."

As the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, with a thought, black energy emerged from the grand formation. That energy surrounded the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"Wuuahh, wuuahh, wuuahh~~~~~"

The next moment, the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief began to scream miserably.

However, what caused the crowd's blood to run cold was the fact that when he screamed, they could also hear the wailing cries of infants.

Those were countless wailing cries of infants. They were being emitted from the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. However, those wailing cries were clearly not the voice of the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

At this moment, many people present started to tremble in fear from the aura of that grand formation and those infant cries.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2613 - Infant Soul Grand Formation

“Enough of trying to deceive others.”

Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi suddenly attacked. Boundless purple gaseous flames filled the entire sky like a vast blaze. They began to move toward the people of the Infant Soul Sect to burn them to death.

“Woosh~~~”

Faced with Zi Xunyi’s attack, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster merely waved his sleeve and boundless martial power immediately surged forth. He actually managed to easily block Zi Xunyi’s attack.

“Although we’re both rank two True Immortals, there is a still difference in our strengths. Young lady, you will not be able to defeat me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to Zi Xunyi with a smile on his face.

It was an extremely mocking smile.

“You!!!” Zi Xunyi was immediately furious upon hearing those words.

If she were insulted by others, Zi Xunyi would not be this furious. However... the person that insulted her was actually a vicious and merciless demon that slaughtered innocent infants. Zi Xunyi was unable to tolerate an insult from him.

Overwhelmed with anger, Zi Xunyi actually revealed her Ancestral Armaments. She was planning to wage war.

“Xunyi.”

When at the moment when Zi Xunyi was about to attack, Ying Mingchao stopped her. He said to her, “Let me handle him.”

As Ying Mingchao spoke, he cast his sharp gaze to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

If it were an ordinary individual, even if they were able to not be scared to death upon seeing such a gaze from Ying Mingchao, they would most definitely start shivering.

However, not only did this Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's expression remained unchanged, but there was also not the slightest trace of fear in his eyes.

“Eeeahh~~~”

Right at this moment, that Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out another shout.

This shout was not a scream of pain. Rather, it was a roar. After he roared, the crowd all revealed startled expressions.

When they looked to the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief again, they revealed incomparable astonishment in their eyes.

The reason for that was because everyone felt the aura of that Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief when he roared.

His aura was no longer that of a Martial Ancestor. Instead, it was that of a True Immortal...

Although he was only a rank one True Immortal, it remained to be a completely different realm from Martial Ancestor.

“This, how could this be? How did his cultivation suddenly increase? Could it be that grand formation?”

At this moment, everyone was stunned. Expressions of shock filled their faces. This was especially true for the bystanders that did not know the Infant Soul Sect well.

The reason for that was because what had happened was simply unimaginable. How could a peak Martial Ancestor break through to rank one True Immortal in such a short period of time?

“I believe that everyone is very surprised right now. How could a formation possibly allow one to reach a breakthrough in cultivation? Something like that

is simply heaven-defying, simply going against the way of martial cultivation, simply impossible.”

“However, this Infant Soul Grand Formation is capable of accomplishing this impossible task.”

“I might as well tell everyone the truth. Not only is the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief able to reach a breakthrough, everyone here is all able to reach a breakthrough using the Infant Soul Grand Formation.”

“And this... this is what our Infant Soul Sect has been doing for all these years,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Truly? Is what you said the truth? You are really able to help us increase our cultivation?”

Once the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, the bystanders and even people in the allied army burst into an uproar.

Everyone’s eyes seemed to be shining. They were all staring deeply at that so-called Infant Soul Grand Formation.

At this moment, they no longer possessed any fear in their eyes as they looked to the Infant Soul Grand Formation. Instead, greed filled their eyes. It was as if they were looking at a priceless treasure.

For many people, due to the fact that their talent was limited, even if they spent their entire lives cultivating, they would not be able to make progress in their cultivation.

However, if that grand formation was truly capable of helping them obtain martial comprehension and letting them reach a breakthrough in cultivation, it would simply be an enormous fortunate encounter from the heavens itself. It was something that they had never even dared imagine before.

“I will not deceive everyone. There is also no reason for me to deceive everyone. Furthermore, everyone has witnessed the scene earlier.”

“Everyone has clearly witnessed the power of this Infant Soul Grand Formation. This is not a lie. Instead, it’s the truth. As for this truth, it is right before everyone’s eyes.

“As for this Infant Soul Grand Formation, it needed the members of our Infant Soul Sect to activate it. Why is that, you ask? It’s because flowing in our bodies, the bodies of the members of the Infant Soul Sect, are the lives of those children.”

“Indeed, those children have died innocently. Everyone in our Infant Soul Sect has felt ashamed and pained because of that. Every day and every night, we have to endure the condemnations of our own conscience.”

“However, today, even if we must still endure the condemnations from our own conscience, we are very delighted.”

“The reason for that is because we’ve succeeded. We have successfully accomplished what our ancestor did not. We have finally completed our ancestor’s grand ambition. We have finally completed the Infant Soul Grand Formation.”

“We are finally able to rely on the Infant Soul Grand Formation to strengthen everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“The sacrifice of those children was not in vain. Their sacrifice will allow our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to make progress. Their sacrifice will serve as a previously unimaginable force for us.”

“From today onwards, no one will dare to look down on our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm again. Our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will become a powerful Ordinary Realm!!!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke emotionally.

“Bullshit!!!”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao shouted angrily. He pointed the Ancestral Armament in his hand toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

While gnashing his teeth, he said, “Today, I will definitely make you all pay the price for what you’ve done!”

After he finished saying those words, Ying Mingchao’s overwhelming killing intent swept forth.

“Wait a moment,” Right at this moment, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster suddenly spoke. “City Master Ying, the Infant Soul Sect wouldn’t

have have gone through all the trouble to call us here just to deceive us and tell us such an absurd thing.”

“There is simply no need for them to do something like this. I also cannot think of a reason for them to deceive us.”

“I think we should calm down and clear things up first.”

“That’s right. City Master Ying, we should clear things up first,” Many people from the Immortal Sword School began to echo what their headmaster said.

It was not only those people from the Immortal Sword School. Many of the bystanders, and even many of the people from the allied army started to plead to Ying Mingchao, asking him to calm down.

Earlier, those people were calling for the eradication of the Infant Soul Sect. Yet now, they were actually all telling Ying Mingchao to not attack the Infant Soul Sect.

How could Ying Mingchao not understand what they were thinking?

Clearly, they had witnessed the benefits of the Infant Soul Grand Formation, and become greedy. They wanted to gain benefits through the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“You all really believe that formation to be able to help you all increase your cultivation? You all really believe in what the Infant Soul Sect says? You all believe in the words of this bunch who was willing to slaughter innocent infants for the sake of increasing their own cultivation?”

Ying Mingchao’s eyes turned deep red from anger. He was clenching his fists so hard that creaking sounds could be heard nonstop.

The reason for that was because he firmly believed the Infant Soul Sect to be a bunch of swindlers. He felt them to be an actual demonic sect, and all that they said were lies meant to confuse others.

However, these people just so happened to believe in their words.

It would be one thing if it were only those people that did not know about the Infant Soul Sect that believed in their words.

However, even the allied army was swayed by their words. In fact, even the Immortal Sword School that had been fighting against the Infant Soul Sect for many years was swayed by their words. Ying Mingchao found this to be truly unbearable.

Furious, Ying Mingchao unleashed his overwhelmingly powerful oppressive might. Even though the crowd did not wish to attack the Infant Soul Sect, they no longer dared to voice any objection at this moment.

“Amitabha, everyone, please hear this old man out,” Right at this moment, the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple stood forth.

After the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple stood forth, Ying Mingchao’s gaze eased.

The Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple was a person of virtue and prestige. If he were to speak on his behalf, many people would start to have faith in him.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2614 - Collapse Of The Alliance

“City Master Ying, we have all borne witness to the power of that formation. This old monk is unable to think of a reason for the Infant Soul Sect to go through all this trouble to lure us here only to deceive us. This old monk feels what the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to be trustworthy.”

“Abbot, you!!!” After hearing what the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple said, many people in addition to Ying Mingchao were shocked.

In terms of righteous powers, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple could be said to be the representation of all righteousness in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for their Abbot, he was also widely accepted to be an upright individual.

Yet, at this moment, when faced with the enticement of an increase in cultivation, not only was this Abbot swayed, but he even began to speak on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect. This was truly unimaginable.

“City Master Ying, even Grandmaster said it like that, don’t you think that we should give the Infant Soul Sect a chance to reform themselves?” The Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster said.

“Heh...”

At this moment, Chu Feng let out a cold and mocking chuckle.

However, Chu Feng had merely chuckled and did not say anything. The reason for that was because his heart had already calmed.

The Infant Soul Sect killing innocent infants was something that everyone knew about. Even the people from the Infant Soul Sect did not deny it. Instead, they directly admitted to doing it.

That sort of evil deed was the most unforgivable.

However, when faced with the enticement of being able to increase their cultivation, all these people forgot about those infants that died miserably. Just like that, they planned to forgive the Infant Soul Sect.

Oh how selfish was this?

Holding his Ancestral Armament in had hand, Ying Mingchao loudly said, “Good, very good. Since this is the case, I will not bother with superfluous words with you all either. I, Ying Mingchao, will only ask you all one thing. Right now, who is still willing to fight alongside me?! Who is willing to fight against the Infant Soul Sect?!”

“Me!”

“Me!”

“Me!”

.....

Once Ying Mingchao said those words, many people stood forth. The majority of them were people from Hero City.

Of those from Hero City, the majority of them were Ying Mingchao’s old subordinates.

Although there were close to ten thousand people standing behind Ying Mingchao right now, they were many times smaller when compared to the original numbers of the allied army.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that there were a portion of people from both the Buddha's Heavenly Temple and Immortal Sword School that decided to stand behind Ying Mingchao.

Representing those people were Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket.

However, no matter what, they remained to only be members of the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple.

Even though they had chosen to continue to be the Infant Soul Sect's enemy, their headmaster and abbot had both chosen to believe the Infant Soul Sect.

This scene was truly astonishing.

"Ying Mingchao, are you truly planning to do this?"

"What if what the Infant Soul Sect says is true? What if they are not deceiving us? What if that formation is truly capable of increasing our cultivation?"

"Can you not calm yourself and make a decision after investigating everything?" said the Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple.

"Investigate? The Infant Soul Sect has slaughtered countless innocent infants. Is that something that still needs investigation?"

"You all have already had your eyes blinded by self-interest. No matter how you investigate, you will only end up believing their words."

After Chu Feng finished seeing the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot say those words, he said to Ying Mingchao, "Senior, go ahead and do it."

"Ying Mingchao, if you are to do this, you will end up regretting it," Seeing that Ying Mingchao was truly planning to attack, many people began to tell him that he would regret it.

However, Ying Mingchao raised his Ancestral Armament. He did not appear to have the slightest bit of hesitation. His oppressive might swept forth like a tornado.

At this moment, apart from those that decided to follow him, everyone else was blown away. Only the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster were able to remain standing where they were.

“Clank~~~”

Right at this moment, an even most astonishing scene happened.

The Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster looked to one another. Then, the two of them actually revealed their Ancestral Armaments. Furthermore, judging from their appearance, they didn't seem to be planning to fight alongside Ying Mingchao. Instead, they were casting ill-intended gazes toward him.

“What's this, you all plan to fight against me?” Ying Mingchao asked coldly.

“We do not wish to fight against you. We merely want you to investigate the truth first. What if the Infant Soul Sect have truly done what they've done for the sake of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? What if what they're saying is the truth?” The Immortal Sword School's Headmaster said.

“Enough of your bullshit. If you want to stop me, then go ahead and do it directly. However, if you all are to decide to fight against me, I, Ying Mingchao, will not be lenient toward you all either.”

As Ying Mingchao said these words, his eyes were surging with killing intent. His killing intent caused this entire region to suddenly become ice-cold. Everyone was able to feel that intense coldness.

Faced with such a Ying Mingchao, both the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot started to frown. Hesitation appeared in their eyes.

Perhaps it was because of their fear toward Ying Mingchao, or perhaps it was because of their affection toward the alliance, but in the end, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot did

not attack Ying Mingchao. Instead, they slowly lowered their raised Ancestral Armaments.

Right at this moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster asked, "Ying Mingchao, is the battle today truly unavoidable?"

"Today, I will exterminate every single one of you," Ying Mingchao said.

"Since that's the case, then I, Hun Poyuan, am delighted to take you on today. However, I do not wish to implicate the innocent. Thus, let the two of us fight one another. We shall determine the outcome of this battle. What say you?"

"If you can defeat me, then you can go ahead and kill everyone from our Infant Soul Sect. After all, it is likely no one will be able to stop you at that time."

"However, if I am to defeat you, I will not make things difficult for you either. I merely hope that you will be able to understand me, be able to trust me," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"Those are some quality words that you've said. However, today, the only possible result is me defeating you, and not you defeating me."

After Ying Mingchao finished saying these words, he held his Ancestral Armament and, with an overwhelming aura, moved to directly attack the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

As for that Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, he did not hesitate either. He too revealed his Ancestral Armament and flew toward Ying Mingchao.

In the blink of an eye, the two rank two True Immortals collided with one another.

As the two of them fought, boundless energy ripples swept across the entire sky. For the allied army, their situation was alright. After all, Zi Xunyi, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot were there, these three rank two True Immortals, protecting them.

Thus, the energy ripples originating from the battle between Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Headmaster were all blocked by them. No casualties were inflicted upon the allied army.

However, the people from the Infant Soul Sect had to fall back. The reason for that was because they were unable to withstand even the energy ripples.

“That Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is extremely powerful. It seems to be very difficult for Ying Mingchao to defeat him.”

The entire battle was witnessed by Her Lady Queen. Even though Ying Mingchao was very powerful, he was unable to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster even after using his various abilities. The two of them were in a stalemate the entire time.

During this stalemate, Chu Feng noticed that Zi Xunyi was growing eager to join the battle.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2615 - Stalemate

“Senior Zi, don’t join in,” Seeing Zi Xunyi’s expression, Chu Feng sent a voice transmission to her, “Senior Ying has yet to go all-out. Furthermore, I feel that with how confident the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is, he most definitely possesses more hidden techniques.”

“If the two of them are to both unleash their full abilities, their strength will be completely above that of ordinary rank two True Immortals. If you are to be in the battle at that time, you will only become a burden for Senior Ying.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Zi Xunyi, who was planning to join the battle, stopped thinking about joining the battle.

Although she did not know what sort of abilities the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster might still have, she knew very well that Ying Mingchao was a True Immortal that had managed to unlock the strength of his Divine Power.

This information had long been spread out by Grandmaster Prophet. It was something that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew about.

It was precisely because Ying Mingchao was a rank two True Immortal and possessed Divine Power that people viewed him as the strongest expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Likely, the reason why the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster did not try to stop Ying Mingchao from attacking the Infant Soul Sect earlier was also because they were afraid of Ying Mingchao's actual strength.

However, precisely because the matter of Ying Mingchao having unlocked his Divine Power was known to everyone, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster must know about it too. As such, Zi Xunyi felt that what Chu Feng said was very reasonable.

Since he knew already that Ying Mingchao had unlocked his Divine Power and was not an ordinary rank two True Immortal, the confidence of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster meant that... he must possess some sort of method to handle him.

Thinking about that, Zi Xunyi began to grip her Ancestral Armaments even more tightly. In fact, Chu Feng could even hear the creaking sounds emitted by the Zi Xunyi's hand bones.

"Senior, we do not need to directly join the battle in order to help Senior Ying Mingchao," Chu Feng said via voice transmission.

"What do you mean by that?" Zi Xunyi asked. Her eyes started to shine with light.

"Senior, since you have also obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance before, do you know of this formation?"

Chu Feng informed Zi Xunyi of a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was something that Zi Xunyi did not know about. However, it remained that Zi Xunyi was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, just from Chu Feng's descriptions of the spirit formation, she was able to make out of what it did.

After that, Chu Feng began to secretly set up the spirit formation together with Zi Xunyi. As for why they had to do it secretly, it was naturally because they did not want others to discover it.

After all, the allied army had already fallen apart. For their own self-interest, even the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster had spoken out on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect.

If they were to discover that Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were setting up a spirit formation beneficial to Ying Mingchao, who knew whether or not they would act to interfere.

Thus, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi must set up that spirit formation secretly. Fortunately, the spirit formation techniques that Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi possessed were extremely powerful. Thus, even though it would be more difficult to quietly set up a spirit formation within their bodies, the two of them would only each have to set up half of the spirit formation should they jointly set it up. Thus, as long as they were given a sufficient amount of time, they would be able to finish setting up that spirit formation.

Although Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were extremely worried by the stalemate between Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, those people whose eyes were blinded by greed, those people that wished to obtain martial comprehension from that Infant Soul Sect's grand formation, were secretly delighted.

At the beginning when Ying Mingchao began to fight against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, they were all afraid, afraid that Ying Mingchao would be able to easily kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. After all, Ying Mingchao was the publicly-accepted number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, judging from the situation now, the two of them were actually equally matched. Furthermore, the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster were not planning to join the battle. Thus, the greedy crowd grew much more at ease.

“Roar~~~”

Right at this moment, a beast-like roar suddenly sounded from Ying Mingchao's body.

At the moment when that roar was heard, the image of a ferocious beast appeared in the sky. Its aura was extremely domineering. It was as if it were planning to devour all living things. Seeing it, many people started to tremble with fear.

“Boom~~~”

At practically the same time, an explosion sounded from the battlefield between Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was actually beaten back.

Not only that, but there was a bloody hole in the left side of his chest. The left side of his chest had been penetrated, and a visible bloodstain was present at the corner of his mouth.

Looking to Ying Mingchao, he currently looked completely different from before. His eyes had turned dark green. Even his teeth had become sharp like a beast's. A jade green aura was coiling around his body like green flames.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao was several times stronger than he was before.

"Divine Power?" n-(OVeℓbln

Seeing this scene, the crowd were all frightened. They had nearly forgotten that Ying Mingchao was not only a rank two True Immortal, but he was also an existence that had managed to unlock the power of his Divine power.

Most importantly, they had only heard rumors of it before. As such, they were skeptical. However, they were now witnessing it with their very own eyes. With this, how could they not start to panic?

After unleashing his Divine Power, how could the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster possibly contend against Ying Mingchao?

"Divine Power. It would seem that the rumors are true, you have indeed managed to unlock your Divine Power."

Compared to others, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster merely smiled. Not only was he not panicking, but he even softly wiped away the bloodstain at the corner of his mouth. The wound on the left side of his chest also closed up.

At this moment when the crowd were confused as to why the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was still this calm, they were shocked to discover that... the eyes of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had turned pitch-black.

"Boom~~~"

The next moment, a loud explosion sounded from the body of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. At the same time, dark black gaseous flames bubbled out of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster like a volcanic eruption.

In an instant, the dark black gaseous flames covered the entire sky. At this moment, apart from the enormous ferocious beast emitted by Ying Mingchao's Divine Power, the rest of the sky was covered by those dark black gaseous flames.

Most importantly, the cries and wailings of infants could be heard from the dark black gaseous flames that covered the entire sky.

There were simply too many cries and wailings. They were simply too ear-piercing, simply too tragic.

The cries and wailings were simply over a thousand times more mournful than the cries and wailings emitted from the activation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

"Forbidden Mysterious Technique?"

"Sure enough, he's prepared."

Chu Feng was not surprised to see this scene. He had already anticipated that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster possessed the ability to contend against Ying Mingchao's Divine Power.

Merely, Chu Feng did not expect it to be a Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

However, this Forbidden Mysterious Technique was clearly not an ordinary Forbidden Mysterious Technique. To be exact, this should be a Forbidden Demonic Technique.

The reason for that was because it could be determined merely by the mournful infant cries that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had used this demonic technique to refine countless infants.

He had used the lives of countless infants to obtain his powerful strength.

However, such a sinister demonic technique did not bring disdain from the crowd. Instead, many grew excited upon seeing it.

Those that were excited were naturally the selfish individuals that wanted to obtain the assistance of the Infant Soul Sect.

“Despicable bastard, I will have you die!!!”

After seeing the power of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, Ying Mingchao grew even more furious. With the unique imposing might of his Divine Power, Ying Mingchao rushed to attack the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster again.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

.....

Green gaseous flames and dark black gaseous flames collided.

It was like a battle between light and darkness. However, this battle was once again in a stalemate.

The intensity of this battle had increased by several times. Now, even Zi Xunyi and the others were unable to withstand the energy ripples from this battle.

As such, the allied army had no choice but to move away from the battlefield. As for the people from the Infant Soul Sect, they moved even further away.

As for Chen Heavenly City that was in the center of the battlefield, it had long since been completely ruined by the energy ripples from the two fighters.

That vast city and those extravagant buildings were completely razed to the ground. It was a devastating scene.

The scope of the battle was growing larger and larger. The intensity of the battle also grew more and more world-shakingly powerful. Looking at it, everyone grew more and more afraid.

Once again, people began to worry about this life and death battle.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2616 - Two Grand Formations

“How could this be? That Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually mastered a demonic technique?”

At the moment when a great majority of the people were rejoicing, there were also people that grew furious and worried.

These people were naturally the ones that had stood behind Ying Mingchao earlier. They were people that were willing to betray their own powers to follow Ying Mingchao in taking on the Infant Soul Sect.

They all firmly believed the Infant Soul Sect to be a demonic sect. As such, they naturally hoped for Ying Mingchao to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly turned around and asked those people, “Everyone, are you all willing to help Senior Ying in this battle?”

“Of course,” The crowd answered in unison.

“In that case, let us all assist Senior Ying!!!”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he opened his arms, and a grand spirit formation was unleashed from his body.

Following that, Zi Xunyi also extended her arms. Another grand spirit formation appeared.

The two spirit formations overlaid one another. Soon, they started to fuse together. Most importantly, as Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi controlled that grand formation, it soon covered the people that had chosen to follow Ying Mingchao.

“Almsgiver Chu Feng, that spirit formation... could it be that we merely need to relax ourselves?”

At this moment, Grandmaster Pocket was unable to keep himself from asking that question. His tone was filled with astonishment.

As a world spiritist himself, he was able to sense how wondrous that spirit formation was. There was simply no need for them to do anything. Merely by

relaxing themselves, they would be able to send their power into that spirit formation.

However, Grandmaster Pocket still wanted to verify with Chu Feng whether this was all they needed to do in order to help Ying Mingchao.

“Everyone, you all do not need to do anything special. It will do as long as you think about helping Senior Ying Mingchao.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to form hand seals with one hand. As for his other hand, he extended it toward Zi Xunyi.

Zi Xunyi was doing the same thing as Chu Feng. She too was forming hand seals with one hand and placed her other hand onto Chu Feng’s extended hand.

Immediately, boundless energy began to gather in the their joined palms. Then, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi pointed their hands toward Ying Mingchao.

A beam of golden light shot out from their hands. Like a golden dragon galloping through the skies, it assimilated into Ying Mingchao’s body.

After that golden beam of light entered Ying Mingchao’s body, Ying Mingchao’s body started to blossom with golden light in addition to the dark green gaseous flames.

Most importantly, Ying Mingchao’s aura had become much stronger.

After his battle power increased, Ying Mingchao immediately managed to break away from the stalemate and gain the upper hand in his battle.

“Set up the formation!!!”

However, right at this moment, the people from the Infant Soul Sect actually also started to set up a formation.

However, their formation was much simpler compared to Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi’s formation.

In fact, what they had set up simply could not be considered to be a grand formation. Instead, it was several tens of thousands of grand formations.

The reason for that was because each and every member of the Infant Soul Sect was a grand formation. Black gaseous flames were surging out from their bodies. Those black gaseous flames entered the sky and were assimilated into the black gaseous flames emitted by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster that covered the vast sky.

At this moment, the black gaseous flames emitted by each and every person from the Infant Soul Sect were filled with infant cries. Those grand formations were all formed using the demonic technique that they've trained.

After the power from the Infant Soul Sect's crowd assimilated into his gaseous flames, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster also grew more powerful. It actually looked like his strength could surpass Ying Mingchao's.

"Puuu~~~"

Suddenly, a stream of blood splattered from Ying Mingchao's left shoulder. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had managed to penetrate Ying Mingchao's left shoulder with his Ancestral Armament.

"Puu, puu, puu~~~"

Following that, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster waved his Ancestral Armament repeatedly. Frantically, he began to assault Ying Mingchao. Even though Ying Mingchao tried his best to block the majority of the attacks, he was still penetrated by the attacks three times.

Every single time Ying Mingchao was injured by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, the dark black gaseous flames entered Ying Mingchao's body through the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's Ancestral Armament.

Under this sort of situation, Ying Mingchao's aura grew weaker and weaker.

In the end, not to mention fighting against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, Ying Mingchao did not even have the strength to continue flying.

"Mingchao!"

With the situation being like this, Zi Xunyi was unable to continue standing idly. She removed herself from the grand formation that she had set up together with Chu Feng, grabbed her Ancestral Armaments and rushed toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

It was not only Zi Xunyi that rushed over. Many of the old subordinates from Hero City, as well as people from the other powers that had chosen to follow Ying Mingchao also rushed over.

Although Chu Feng did not rush over, he had secretly taken out his Evil God Sword.

He knew that, judging from the situation at hand, not to mention Zi Xunyi and the others, even if the allied army was still intact, they would still not be a match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

If they wanted to overcome this crisis today, then they could only rely on the Evil God Sword in his hand.

“Woosh~~~”

However, at this moment, an astonishing scene occurred. When Zi Xunyi and the others approached, not only did the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster not attack them, but he instead tossed the seriously-injured Ying Mingchao to Zi Xunyi.

When Zi Xunyi received Ying Mingchao, she was able to sense how serious his injuries were.

Although the injuries the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster left upon Ying Mingchao by piercing his body with his Ancestral Armament were merely superficial wounds, the dark black gaseous flames that had entered Ying Mingchao's body were extremely frightening.

It was those dark black gaseous flames that had caused Ying Mingchao to become this weak.

“You damned demon, I will kill you!!!”

Zi Xunyi was so furious that her eyes turned red. Overflowing killing intent burst forth from her. Everyone present were capable of sensing that killing intent. She was truly furious, and wanted to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“I urge you to not try to attack me. The reason for that is because you are no match for me. As such, you are simply unable to gain your revenge.”

“Thus... it is best that you go and heal Ying Mingchao’s injuries instead,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to Zi Xunyi. His tone was filled with contempt and mockery.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng, while holding the Evil God Sword in his hand, walked in the air and arrived beside Zi Xunyi.

Although Chu Feng did not reveal his anger as distinctively as Zi Xunyi did, the killing intent in his eyes was not at all weaker than Zi Xunyi’s.

Merely, Chu Feng’s killing intent could only be felt by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, who Chu Feng was staring at.

After sensing Chu Feng’s killing intent, that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was not only not afraid, but he even chuckled. “Chu Feng, this is the first time that we’ve met. That said, I have already heard about you.”

“Sure enough, your reputation is well-justified. The future of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm belongs to you.”

“Join us. Join our Infant Soul Sect. I am able to help you accelerate your growth.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually began to publicly invite Chu Feng to join them.

“Join you all? You want me to slaughter innocent infants with you all?” Chu Feng asked with a sneer.

“No, that won’t happen again. Our Infant Soul Grand Formation is already complete. There is no need to sacrifice children anymore. You can directly enjoy the results of our effort,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Did you think that I would believe you all?” As Chu Feng spoke, he raised the Evil God Sword in his hand.

“That’s a Demon Armament?!!!” Seeing that Chu Feng was planning to fight, many people revealed frightened expressions.

After all, the Demon Armament that Chu Feng possessed that was capable of killing True Immortals had already become something that everyone knew about.

If Ying Mingchao was the greatest danger, then Chu Feng would be the second greatest danger.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2617 - Blinded By Greed

“Is this that Demon Armament? It is truly extraordinary.”

“However, Chu Feng, listen to my advice. Even if you have a Demon Armament, it is best that you do not attack me, for it will be impossible for you to match me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng smiled coldly. He started to grip the Evil God Sword even tighter.

“Chu Feng, stop,” Right at this moment, Her Lady Queen’s voice suddenly sounded.

“Chu Feng, do not be this rash. It will not be too late for you to kill him after you become a True Immortal. After all, you’ve already obtained the method to become a True Immortal.”

“There is no need for you to utilize the Evil God Sword. You know very well the power of that Evil God Sword. If you are to fail in controlling it, not only will you die, but everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will die,” Her Lady Queen said.

After hearing what Her Lady Queen said, Chu Feng slowly lowered his raised Evil God Sword.

What Her Lady Queen said was reasonable. Chu Feng was simply unable to control the Evil God Sword. Unless absolutely necessary, it would be best to not use it.

After lowering his sword, Chu Feng turned around and started to inspect Ying Mingchao’s injuries.

Seeing that Chu Feng had lowered his Evil God Sword, the complacent expression on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew even stronger.

He felt that Chu Feng had lowered his Evil God Sword because he was scared.

However, Chu Feng simply did not concern himself with how others viewed him. The only thing he cared about right now was Ying Mingchao's injuries.

"Senior Zi, don't worry, Senior Ying's injuries can be cured," Chu Feng said to Zi Xunyi.

"Truly?" Zi Xunyi was extremely vexed by Ying Mingchao's injury. However, after hearing what Chu Feng said, she reacted as if she had seen hope.

"I will need your help," After that, Chu Feng taught Zi Xunyi the method to set up a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was not an ordinary healing formation. Instead, it was a spirit formation that specialized in removing demonic energy. It was extremely effective toward Ying Mingchao's injuries.

The reason for that was because Ying Mingchao's injuries were not simple physical injuries. Rather, his body was invaded by demonic energy.

"Everyone, you have all witnessed my strength. Thus, I wish to ask everyone a question. If I wanted to kill you all now, who could possibly escape from me?" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"This..."

Hearing those words, the hearts of the crowd all tensed up. With the strength that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster possessed, it would indeed be extremely easy for him to kill them.

This was especially true when they saw the dark black gaseous flames that were still surging about in the sky. They discovered that, at this moment, they were akin to having sharp blades pointed at their throats.

As long as the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster willed it, all of them would be killed. After all, even the strongest among them, Ying Mingchao, was no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Thus, how could they possibly contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster?

“Everyone, there’s no need to be scared. Although I possess the ability to kill all of you, I will not kill a single person.”

“The reason for that is because our Infant Soul Sect never thought about killing innocents. There has only ever been one goal since the founding of our Infant Soul Sect. That is, we want to benefit everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, we want to benefit all of you,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Lord Sectmaster, could it be... that you’re really willing to help us increase our cultivation?”

At this moment, many people started to believe in the words spoken by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. They felt that there was no reason for him to lie to them.

After all, if the Infant Soul Sect really was a demonic sect, they could very well kill them all at this moment. There was no need for them to deceive them.

Furthermore, they had personally witnessed the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. It was truly a grand formation capable of helping them increase their cultivation.

“Of course,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke frankly.

“In that case, Lord Sectmaster, could you use that Infant Soul Grand Formation to help us increase our cultivation right now?”

“Lord Sectmaster, if you are able to help me increase my cultivation, I am willing to join the Infant Soul Sect and pledge my life to you.”

“Lord Sectmaster, please impart strength upon me. I am willing to work for it with my life.”

At this moment, countless people began to plead for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to help them increase their cultivation. They were willing to give up their lives for the sake of increasing their cultivations.

“Everyone, there’s no need to be impatient. Everyone in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will be able to increase their cultivation.”

“However, I have a small request,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

Right after he said those words, Chu Feng cast his sharp gaze toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"The fox is finally going to reveal his fox tail?" Her Lady Queen said.

Like Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen felt that it would be impossible for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to help everyone increase their cultivation for free. n/-
Ⓣ).v.)e/-l.-b(-1-.n

In fact, they simply did not believe that the Infant Soul Sect would really be able to help the crowd increase their cultivation.

There was most definitely a goal, a reason why the Infant Soul Sect was fabricating this lie. However, regardless of what their goal might be, it was most definitely not good.

Thus, Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen wanted to know exactly what the Infant Soul Sect was planning for them to go through great pains to fabricate this lie.

However, the others were simply not thinking like Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen. They were all thinking that the Infant Soul Sect was truly planning to help them.

At this moment, the crowd all began to voice their acceptance of the request. Even though the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had not yet indicated to them what sort of request it was, they were already accepting the request. It was as if they were willing to do anything.

"Everyone, the task is actually very simple. I merely need to trouble everyone to spread this matter out to every nook and corner of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm so that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will know of this."

"Then, I ask those that have the strength to help bring those that are weak here."

"I hope that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will be able to obtain the assistance of the Infant Soul Grand Formation when it is next activated," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"Is that all that you need? Rest assured, we will definitely accomplish that and have everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm obtain your

assistance,” the crowd accepted the request immediately. They did not have the slightest hesitation toward this sort of request.

“This old monk wishes to ask, if the Infant Soul Grand Formation is of use to those that have reached the True Immortal realm?” The Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple asked.

“This Infant Soul Grand Formation is capable of benefiting everyone. Merely, as everyone possesses different levels of talent, the benefits that they obtain will also be different.”

“However, without a doubt, everyone will be able to obtain benefits from it. Everyone’s cultivation will increase.”

“Let me reemphasize it. By ‘everyone’, True Immortals are naturally also included.”

“Merely, it might not be possible to increase the cultivation of those that have reached the True Immortal realm. However, they will be able to obtain enormous profit that could serve as a foundation for increasing their cultivation in the future,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Very well, our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple will help you,” the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple said.

After that, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster also agreed to help.

These two tier one powers that were originally allied with Hero City and had come here to eradicate the Infant Soul Sect, for the sake of increasing their own cultivation, now stood on the side of the Infant Soul Sect and agreed to help them.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2618 - Selfishness

“Do you all really believe that that Infant Soul Grand Formation will be able to help you all increase your cultivation?”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng stood up and looked to the crowd with a mocking expression.

“We have witnessed the power of that Infant Soul Grand Formation. Why shouldn’t we believe it?” Someone asked in refutation. n-)OvelBIn

After the first person refuted him, more and more people started to refute Chu Feng.

It would be one thing if it were the bystanders that were refuting Chu Feng. However, many of the people that were refuting Chu Feng were from upright and righteous sects and schools, people that were originally part of the allied army.

Oh how ironic this scene was. These people that originally came to crusade against the Infant Soul Sect were now standing on the side of the Infant Soul Sect all so that they could increase their cultivation.

This was most definitely selfishness.

“You all already have your eyes blinded by greed. Anything I say now will be useless. However, do not blame me for not having warned you all.”

“That Infant Soul Grand Formation is most definitely unable to increase your cultivations. For you all to believe the Infant Soul Sect, only one end can come of it -- death,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, while it is true that our Infant Soul Sect and you have clashed with one another before, it is all because of your misunderstanding toward our Infant Soul Sect.”

“And now, I have already explained everything. Even our decision to sacrifice those infants was done because we had no other choice.”

“Must you insist on viewing us as enemies?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke with an expression of helplessness.

“That’s right. Little friend Chu Feng, anyone can make mistakes. When possible, it is best to forgive. This is even more so the case when the Infant Soul Sect has done their wrongdoings for the sake of benefiting everyone.”

At this moment, many people began to speak on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect.

“For the sake of benefiting everyone? Are you to say that just because this matter is beneficial to you all that those infants can be slaughtered?”

“If those infants were your children, would you all continue to blabber on like this?” Zi Xunyi asked furiously.

“For the sake of a better future, so what if we have to sacrifice some lives? If we can allow the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to become more prosperous, even if it were my children, I would be willing to sacrifice them.”

“That’s right, I too would be willing.”

“The world of martial cultivators is one filled with disputes to begin with. People die every day here. However, were those people that died able to contribute to the betterment of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? No matter what, those infants have not died in vain. Their sacrifice was not made in vain.”

“That’s right. Their deaths were worthy. It is also something that we should accept.”

The crowd spoke in succession. They who had come to exterminate the Infant Soul Sect for the sake of those slaughtered infants were now turning their arguments around and declaring that it was right for those infants to be slaughtered.

“You all...” Hearing those words, Zi Xunyi was so furious her face turned pale. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out of her mouth.

She actually vomited blood out of anger.

However, that was understandable too. The scene at hand was truly extremely infuriating. However, they were powerless to do anything.

“Xunyi!!!”

Seeing this scene, Ying Mingchao, whose state had changed for the better thanks to Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi’s healing, grew incomparably furious.

He stood up and turned his gaze filled with killing intent toward the surrounding crowd. He said, “The ones that should be killed are you all.”

“Rumble~~~”

Right after Ying Mingchao finished saying those words, the dark black gaseous flames that covered the sky immediately let out intense killing intent. The intense killing intent was completely aimed at Ying Mingchao.

It was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Ying Mingchao, I will not take offense at you attacking me. However, if you dare try to harm them, I, Hun Poyuan, will definitely not allow you to do so," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

After this happened, Ying Mingchao started to shiver in anger. As for those who had spoken on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, they were overjoyed. It was as if they have found a backer. One by one, they became more and more pleased with themselves, more and more insolent in their actions.

"Hahahaha..."

Right at this moment, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter. He was laughing so hard that his body started to rock back and forth. He was laughing so hard that his body started to tremble.

"You all have truly opened my eyes with how foolish you are. Seniors, let's go. For people like them, we do not have to concern ourselves with their life and death. Let them perish on their own."

Chu Feng said to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

"Let's go."

Ying Mingchao stopped hesitating. He led the crowd and decided to leave.

Ying Mingchao was extremely furious. He had originally led the crowd to come and crusade against the Infant Soul Sect.

However, in the end, not only had the allied army collapsed, but he himself had become the target of the crowd's scorn.

Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and the others left. That said, not a single person felt uneasy or guilty from their leaving.

Not only were they not feeling dejected, but they instead grew even more pleased and overjoyed.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and others were no longer heroes in their hearts.

Instead, they had become malignant stars that blocked their path to increase their cultivation. As such, how could they not be delighted when these malignant stars decided to leave?

At this moment when the crowd were immersed in their foolish joy, no one noticed that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed a wicked smile on his face after Ying Mingchao and the others left.

That smile was extremely frightening. It was completely different from the gentleness that he had disguised himself with earlier.

That said, the people present did not notice his smile. In fact, even if they did, no one would find anything wrong with it.

It was as Chu Feng had said, these people had already had their eyes blinded by greed.

"Truly foolish."

Suddenly, a voice sounded from above the sky that was covered by the black gaseous flames.

Merely, not a single one of the tens of thousands of people below was able to hear that voice.

That voice sounded from a certain corner above the sky. At that place... stood three figures.

They were a middle-aged man, a middle-aged woman and a white-haired old man.

The middle-aged man had a mature appearance. The middle-aged woman still possessed a trace of childish nature in her gaze.

Both the man and the woman were True Immortal-level experts.

As for that old man, his cultivation was unfathomable.

From the outfits of these three people, as well as the title plates on their waist, it could be seen that they were all from a single power.

The Chu Heavenly Clan.

At this moment, these three people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were looking down at everything that was happening below like gods high above.

“Truly foolish. They were actually deceived by such a lie,” The woman said mockingly.

“That is the nature of martial cultivators. For strength and power, they are willing to kill even their relatives. As for mere betrayals, that’s extremely common,” the middle-aged man said.

“Merely, that Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and the others are going to suffer. Should we help them? After all, it seems that Senior Chu Xuanlang thought quite highly of that Chu Feng,” The middle-aged woman asked.

The middle-aged man did not answer her. Instead, he looked to the white-haired old man.

“If we are to interfere, we will have gone against the rules established by our Ancestor. Perhaps... this is the fate of that Chu Feng,” the old man said slowly.

“What Elder said is very correct,” the middle-aged man and middle-aged woman voiced in agreement.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2619 - Cut The Weeds And Eliminate The Roots

At this moment, Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and the others were currently traveling back to Hero City.

Due to the fact that Ying Mingchao’s injuries were still not completely healed, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were still continuing to heal Ying Mingchao’s injuries.

With the situation being like this, it became the task of the several True Immortals from Hero City to drive the crowd, hastening their traveling speed.

Although this was still the allied army, their numbers and grandeur were much less compared to when they had arrived.

Furthermore, perhaps it might be because they had failed in their crusade against the Infant Soul Sect, but the crowd members were all very downcast.

At the same time that they felt gloomy, they were also furious. Curses toward those that had betrayed them were being heard from the crowd nonstop.

“Who is it?!”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao, who was concentrating on healing his injuries, suddenly opened his eyes and looked ahead.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk, as expected from Ying Mingchao, your perception is still this sharp.”

“However, it must be thanks to that Chu Feng that you were able to heal to such a state in such a short period of time, no?”

An eerie voice sounded. Then, a figure appeared. That person stood in front of the allied army.

It was only a single person. However, this person dared to confront the entire allied army.

Most importantly, when faced with this individual, everyone from the allied army revealed alarmed expressions.

The reason for that was because this person was the person that had defeated Ying Mingchao earlier, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“What do you want?” Someone from the allied army asked with a shivering voice.

“What I want? Don’t you all know very well what I want? How can I allow people like you all to leave like this?”

“Naturally, I have come to find you all so that I can eliminate you completely so as to not leave any future trouble,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said with cold laughter.

“Sure enough, that was all a plot?” Chu Feng asked.

“Since you’ve already managed to see through it, why bother asking? That said, Chu Feng, I am someone who cherishes talent. As long as you hand

over that stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood to me, not only will I spare your life, but I am also willing to take you into our Infant Soul Sect so that you can enjoy the glory, splendor, wealth and rank together with us," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said to Chu Feng.

"Stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood? He's talking about the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler?" Chu Feng's heart tightened upon hearing those words.

The Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was the treasure that Chu Feng had obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants. It was a stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood.

Originally, Grandmaster Kai Hong had wanted to forge it into an Ancestral Armament. However, he had failed in doing so.

Chu Feng never expected this Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to actually know about the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had no idea what Chu Feng was thinking about. Seeing that Chu Feng was hesitating, he thought that Chu Feng might give it up. Thus, he asked again, "Chu Feng, are you willing?"

"I am truly sorry. While I, Chu Feng, dare to do anything, I do not dare to wallow in the mire with someone like you who is inferior to even animals. I am afraid I will receive the wrath of Heaven should I do that," Chu Feng mocked.

"Since that's the case, you can go and die together with them," as the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, he revealed his Ancestral Armament.

At the same time, he also revealed his rank two True Immortal-level aura without the slightest restraint. Like an invisible tornado, it moved to engulf the entire allied army.

"Come, as if we're afraid of you!" Zi Xunyi shouted. She too unleashed her oppressive might.

Even though Zi Xunyi managed to block the oppressive might unleashed by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, she was still pushed back two steps.

Those two steps were caught by everyone. This caused the people from the allied army to feel even more uneasy.

After all, it meant that even though both Zi Xunyi and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were both rank two True Immortals, Zi Xunyi was simply no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Xunyi, do not dirty your hand. It is better that you let me handle a shameless animal like him." *nσVE-lb*)1n

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao stood up and pushed Zi Xunyi behind him.

"No, Mingchao, you can't. Your injuries..." Zi Xunyi wanted to stop Ying Mingchao.

Even though Ying Mingchao's injuries had improved, he was still not completely healed. As such, she would naturally not be at ease to have him fight.

"Rest assured, without the help from that Infant Soul Sect bunch, he is simply no match for me."

After Ying Mingchao said those words, his eyes turned dark green. He had unleashed his Divine Power.

Then, he held his Ancestral Armament in his hand and rushed toward to attack the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The current Ying Mingchao simply did not appear like someone who was injured. Instead, he resembled an invincible warrior, a ruler who stood at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"Heh, overestimating one's abilities."

Faced with the incoming Ying Mingchao, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster laughed mockingly.

Then, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster no longer held back either. He too unleashed his black gaseous flames and collided with Ying Mingchao.

"Chu Feng," At this moment, Zi Xunyi looked to Chu Feng.

"Senior, let's begin," As Chu Feng spoke, he began to set up a grand spirit formation.

Seeing that Chu Feng understood her intention, Zi Xunyi also began to set up a grand spirit formation.

This was the same grand formation that Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi had jointly set up outside Chen Heavenly City to assist Ying Mingchao.

After all, Ying Mingchao's intention was very clear. He stated that he was no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster earlier only because there were so many people from the Infant Soul Sect supplying their strength to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

However, in order to pull the wool over people's eyes and not make those fools suspect him, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had evidently come to eliminate them by himself.

While the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster no longer had the assistance of the people from the Infant Soul Sect, Ying Mingchao still possessed the assistance from Chu Feng and the others.

As long as Chu Feng and the others set up that grand spirit formation again, Ying Mingchao's strength should, logically, be a tier above the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's. As such, Ying Mingchao should be able to win this battle.

This time around, Zi Xunyi and Chu Feng were not setting up their spirit formation within their bodies. Instead, they openly joined hands and set up the grand spirit formation directly.

As they were openly setting up the spirit formation, their speed became much faster.

In only a short period of time, they finished setting up the grand spirit formation.

“Buzz~~~”

Once they finished setting up the spirit formation, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi immediately gathered everyone's power and imbued Ying Mingchao with it using the grand spirit formation.

When Ying Mingchao received this power, his body once again started to shine with golden brightness. Like in the battle before, he once again gained the upper hand.

“Ying Mingchao, did you really think that I would not be able to defeat you without the assistance of everyone from the Infant Soul Sect?”

That said, even though the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was now at a disadvantage, he was not scared in the slightest. Not only that, but he even had a mocking smile on his face.

That’s right, it was an extremely mocking smile. He was not only mocking Ying Mingchao, but he was also mocking Zi Xunyi and the others.

“What do you mean by that?” Ying Mingchao sensed that the situation was amiss from his words.

“Since I dared to come to take care of you all by myself, I would naturally possess certainty in being able to take care of you all.”

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster finished saying those words, a dagger appeared in his previously empty left hand.

It was a golden dagger. The dagger did not appear to be extremely sharp. The reason for that was because dragon-scale like veined patterns filled the dagger.

However, once that golden dagger appeared, the aura of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster immediately increased by several times. In an instant, it surpassed Ying Mingchao’s aura.

“That is?”

Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster were fighting in close range; they were less than three meters away from one another.

Thus, when Ying Mingchao saw the golden dagger, his expression immediately changed. A deep sense of unease emerged in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when Ying Mingchao noticed the specialness of that dagger, the dagger let out a golden light.

That golden light shot straight toward Ying Mingchao's right shoulder. The speed was too fast. Before Ying Mingchao could react, his right shoulder had been penetrated by the golden light.

Then, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suddenly waved his hand and blood splattered everywhere. Ying Mingchao's right arm that he was holding his Ancestral Armament with was sliced off.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2620 - By Killing You - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2620 - By Killing You

Chapter 2620 - By Killing You

"Eeaahhh!!!"

After his right arm was sliced off, Ying Mingchao immediately covered his wound with his left hand. Not only did he immediately move back, but his expression also grew distorted, and he started screaming.

When Ying Mingchao let out his scream, Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng and the others all felt that the situation was extremely bad.

Ying Mingchao was a man of steel. He was most definitely not someone who would scream like that just from a superficial wound.

There was only a single possibility as to why Ying Mingchao screamed like that. That is, the seemingly normal pain from having his arm sliced off was actually an unbearable pain. Otherwise, there would not be a reason for Ying Mingchao to act like this.

"That weapon."

At this moment, Chu Feng also noticed the golden dagger the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster held in his left hand. It was not an ordinary weapon.

That was simply not an Ancestral Armament. The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt the same sort of aura from that dagger as the aura he felt from Li Yuer'er's pink sword.

That dagger was an Immortal Armament. This Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster actually possessed an Immortal Armament.

"You won't be able to escape."

Right at the moment when Ying Mingchao was retreating from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster tossed away the Ancestral Armament he held with his right hand and grabbed toward Ying Mingchao with his palm.

"Huu, huu, huu~~~"

In an instant, overwhelming suction energy was emitted from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. In an instant, it completely enveloped Ying Mingchao, who was moving away.

Even though Ying Mingchao was extremely powerful, he was actually like a trapped chicken. No matter how hard he struggled, he was unable to break free from the suction energy. In the end, he could only look on helplessly as he was caught in the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's grasp.

At the moment when Ying Mingchao was about to reach the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not capture Ying Mingchao. Instead, he closed his palm, forming a blade hand, and pierced it directly into Ying Mingchao's dantian.

"Eeeahhh~~~"

Ying Mingchao let out another painful scream. The reason for that was because the dark black gaseous flames that lingered around the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were currently pouring into Ying Mingchao's body in a steady stream.

Ying Mingchao's skin started to turn purple. Black lines also started to appear on his purple skin. Those black lines were like veins as they covered Ying Mingchao's entire body.

In this sort of situation, Ying Mingchao's aura started to grow weaker and weaker. Not to mention rank two True Immortal, his current aura was inferior to even an ordinary Martial Ancestor.

The current Ying Mingchao was like a person suffering from an extreme poison. The sight was truly appalling.

“Do you now know why I dared to come kill you all by myself?”

“The reason for that is because of this Incomplete Immortal Armament, the Dragonscale Dagger,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said as he fiddled with his golden dagger.

“So that’s actually an Incomplete Immortal Armament?”

After hearing what the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said, Chu Feng finally realized that powerful weapon was not an actual Immortal Armament, but rather an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

However, the weapon in the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s hand possessed a very similar aura to Li Yue’er’s pink sword. This meant that Li Yue’er’s weapon was actually also only an Incomplete Immortal Armament, and not an actual Immortal Armament.

This made sense. After all, Immortal Armaments were extremely powerful. Even though True Immortals were powerful, they remained to only be at the beginning of the Immortal realms. As such, they would naturally not be able to handle a true Immortal Armament.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that even though that dagger was only an Incomplete Immortal Armament, that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was still unable to completely master its control. Instead, he had merely unleashed a portion of its power.

However, even though it was only a portion of its power, it made him invincible in battle and allowed him to easily defeat Ying Mingchao.

From this, it could be seen how powerful Incomplete Immortal Armaments were.

They were weapons that mere Ancestral Armaments could not compare to.

Although it was only an Incomplete Immortal Armament, the disparity between it and Ancestral Armaments was as enormous as the disparity between True Immortals and Martial Ancestors. It was so wide that it was simply uncrossable.

“Let go of Mingchao!!!”

Zi Xunyi shouted anxiously and furiously.

She simply did not care about how the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster managed to defeat Ying Mingchao. All she cared about was Ying Mingchao’s safety.

“Yo, Mingchao here and Mingchao there. That’s quite a close way to call him, no? Seems like you should be Ying Mingchao’s sweetheart, no?”

“You don’t want Ying Mingchao to die? That’s fine. Get on your knees and kowtow to me. Beg me to not kill him and I’ll consider sparing his life,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“You promise?” Zi Xunyi asked.

“Naturally,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Xunyi, you must not! You cannot trust this animal! Do not kneel to this anim...” Ying Mingchao shouted.

“Eeahhh~~~”

However, before Ying Mingchao could finish his words, the hand that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster pierced into his dantian started to tremble. Following that, Ying Mingchao sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

That blood was black. Furthermore, it was very gooey, and was even emitting a stink.

After Ying Mingchao vomited out the blood, half of his pitch-black long hair turned white. Even his face aged greatly.

In an instant, his appearance went from that of a middle-aged man to an old man.

“Ying Mingchao, I know that your ego is very big. Truth be told, what our Infant Soul Sect feared the most back then was you.”

“If it wasn’t for the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s plot to kill you back then, with the momentum that you had, our Infant Soul Sect

would've likely already ceased to exist in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“However, things are very different now. The current me is no longer the same as the me from back then. You are no longer a threat to me,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster looked to Ying Mingchao with a beaming smile on his face.

Although he was smiling, his eyes were filled with hatred. It could be seen how much he hated Ying Mingchao.

Chu Feng was able to imagine that Ying Mingchao must’ve made the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster suffer greatly back then. Else, he would not detest Ying Mingchao so much now.

“Release them! If you have the ability, then aim at me!” Ying Mingchao shouted. However, not only was his voice no longer vigorous, but it was instead incomparably weak and hoarse. It was as if a dying old man were speaking.

“Puu~~~”

Right after Ying Mingchao said those words, the hand that had pierced into Ying Mingchao’s dantian trembled once more. Then, Ying Mingchao once again vomited a mouthful of blood.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao aged enormously once again. His hair had turned fully white. Wrinkles covered his face. His flesh was gone, and his skin started to cling tightly to his bones.

The current Ying Mingchao simply no longer resembled a vigorous and heroic hero. Instead, he had become someone with one foot in the grave.

“You are unable to even take care of yourself right now,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster mocked. Then, he looked to Zi Xunyi, “His life is in your hands right now. You decide what you want to do.”

“I’ll kneel, I’ll kneel. Please stop torturing him,” Zi Xunyi’s face was already covered with tears. As she spoke, she lowered her knees. She was truly planning to kneel.

“Paa~~~”

However, right at this moment, a hand held onto Zi Xunyi's arm and turned her around.

It was Chu Feng. Not only was Chu Feng currently standing beside Zi Xunyi, but he was also holding onto the Evil God Sword tightly.

"Senior Zi, even if you are to kneel to someone like him, he will definitely not spare Senior Ying."

"In fact, he simply never planned to spare any of us."

"There is only one way to save Senior Ying from his hands," Chu Feng said to Zi Xunyi.

"And what might that be?" the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster asked with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng turned his murderous-looking gaze toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

With an incomparably cold tone, he said, "By killing you!!!"

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2621 - Overflowing Demonic Aura

"Killing me? What makes you think you can kill me?"

"Could it be that you think the Incomplete Imperial Armament in your hand will be able to kill me?"

"Oh, my mistake, that's not an Incomplete Imperial Armament that you're holding. Rather, that's a Demon Armament. I've heard that it's quite powerful too. Wasn't it said that it could kill True Immortals?"

"However, I've also heard that you will suffer from a backlash from your Demon Armament after using it. Furthermore, it seems that backlash is quite intense too," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said to Chu Feng mockingly.

Even though Chu Feng had unleashed his Evil God Sword, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was still looking at Chu Feng with the same sort of

expression that he was looking at Ying Mingchao with earlier -- an expression of disdain.

He had simply never placed Chu Feng's Evil God Sword in his eyes at all.

"You will soon know what sort of power it possesses," Chu Feng said coldly.

"It would appear that you are determined to fight against me?"

"Chu Feng, don't say that I haven't warned you. Even if you are to use your Evil God Sword, you will still simply not be a match for me."

"The reason for that is because the Dragonscale Dagger in my hand is an actual Incomplete Immortal Armament!!!"

As the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, he raised the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand. A golden ray shot into the sky. Upon reaching the sky, that golden ray started to spread. In the blink of an eye, it fused with the black gaseous flames.

The golden radiance and the black gaseous flames were reflecting upon one another. As they covered the sky, it was as if light had fused with darkness. It gave off a peculiarly shocking sensation.

Most importantly, the enormous power of that Incomplete Immortal Armament was fully revealed.

Not only was the appearance of the sky changed, but one could feel the might of the Incomplete Immortal Armament from several miles away.

The allied army that was in the center of the Incomplete Immortal Armament's might was pushed back repeatedly. Even Zi Xunyi was unable to withstand it.

That said, it was fortunate that Zi Xunyi was here. Otherwise, Chu Feng and the others would've already been completely destroyed by that oppressive might.

Sure enough, that was a weapon that Ancestral Armaments could not compare against. Even rank two True Immortals were unable to contend against it.

"No matter how strong a Demon might be, it is still powerless before an Immortal. For your Demon Armament to encounter my Dragonscale Dagger, it

is like a rain dragon encountering an true dragon. The only possible end will be for it to be suppressed,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke proudly.

“Is that so?”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng tightened his grasp on his Evil God Sword. Then, his power started to flow into the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, the Evil God Sword that originally appeared to be extremely ordinary started to emit crimson gaseous flames. Wave upon wave, the flames twisted about the sword.

“Rumble~~~”

Immediately afterward, with the sky above Chu Feng’s head as the center, crimson clouds appeared in the sky covered by the dark black gaseous flames and the golden radiance.

The crimson clouds were surging violently. In the blink of an eye, they completely swallowed the dark black gaseous flames and the golden radiance.

At this moment, the only thing present in the sky were the crimson clouds.

The crimson clouds surged about in a very imposing and domineering manner. It was as if they were telling everyone that this was its domain.

The crimson clouds were overflowing with demonic aura. Before this demonic aura, the heinous air emitted by the dark black gaseous flames that covered the sky earlier were simply unable to compare.

At this moment, not to mention the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, even the people behind Chu Feng turned pale with fear.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s body was currently completely covered by crimson gaseous flames. Chu Feng was also emitting boundless amounts of demonic aura from his body.

That demonic aura was simply too frightening. It was simply the most frightening aura that all these people had ever felt.

Even though Chu Feng was not targeting them, they felt their blood run cold and felt fear from the bottoms of their hearts.

In fact, even the previous complacent Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed a frown on his face after seeing the sky covered by the crimson clouds.

When he looked to Chu Feng's Evil God Sword again, there was no longer the disdain he revealed earlier in his eyes. Instead, a restraining fear had emerged in his eyes.

"Quite an imposing aura. Merely, I wonder if it is true ability, or a bluff," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"You will soon know whether it is a bluff or not," Chu Feng said indifferently. After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng's eyes suddenly turned sharp.

He suddenly pointed his Evil God Sword at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Then, from the crimson clouds in the sky, several hundred clusters of crimson gaseous flames were shot down.

Those crimson gaseous flames were very peculiar. They were like vines. They were connected to the crimson clouds, but were also extending rapidly. With an unimaginable speed, they pierced toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had originally thought that Chu Feng's attack would strike toward him directly from the Evil God Sword when Chu Feng pointed it at him.

As such, he never anticipated for the crimson clouds to contain the Evil God Sword's power. Moreover, he never expected that Chu Feng would be able to control that power to unleash such a fierce attack.

Being caught off-guard, he immediately slashed with his Dragonscale Dagger and sent forth many golden blade rays to slice apart the crimson gaseous flames. However, even with that being the case, he was still pierced by a crimson gaseous flame.

That crimson gaseous flame pierced into the arm that he was grabbing Ying Mingchao with. Then, a 'rip' was heard as gaseous flames emerged from his arm.

"Ahhh!!!"

At the same time that happened, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster let out a painful scream.

Half of his arm had already been sliced off by the crimson gaseous flames. To be exact, it was not sliced off, but rather burned off.

After the arm was burned, the crimson gaseous flames actually wound around Ying Mingchao and tossed him toward Chu Feng and the others.

That said, even though they were both covered by the crimson gaseous flames, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster ended up having his arm burned off, whereas Ying Mingchao was completely unharmed.

"Exactly what the hell is this?!"

At this moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was still grimacing in pain. When he looked to the location of his burned arm, he started to panic even more.

At this moment, crimson gaseous flames were still present on his arm. Although the speed was very slow, they were still burning away at his arm.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster tried to use the black gaseous flames from his demonic technique to try to extinguish the crimson gaseous flames to relieve his pain, heal his injuries and regrow his arm.

However, even though he possessed an extremely vast amount of dark black gaseous flames in his body, so much that it was like the vast sea against a little stream when compared to the crimson gaseous flames burning away at his arm, when his dark black gaseous flames moved toward the crimson gaseous flames, they not only failed to extinguish it, but they instead increased its size and intensity.

The dark black gaseous flames emitted by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were actually devoured by the crimson gaseous flames.

Not only had the crimson gaseous flames devoured the dark black gaseous flames, but they also transformed its power to its own.

The strangeness of the crimson gaseous flames had completely surpassed the anticipation of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Damn it!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster raised the Dragonscale Dagger in his hand and hacked it down upon his burning arm.

He had directly sliced off the portion of his arm that was affected by the crimson gaseous flames.

This was the only option he had. Otherwise... if the crimson gaseous flames were to continue spreading, they would sooner or later cover his entire body. At that time, he might be killed.

After he sliced off his arm, he was now able to heal his injury. In the blink of an eye, he reformed his arm.

Merely, at this moment, there was no longer only restraining fear in his eyes when he looked to Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword. Instead, there was deep fear.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2622 - Unable To Contend Against

“Exactly where did you obtain that Demon Armament of yours?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Instead, he turned to Zi Xunyi, who had caught Ying Mingchao, “Senior, bring them away from here.”

“No, we cannot leave you here alone,” Before Zi Xunyi could answer, Zhao Hong voiced her disagreement.

“Listen to me, get away from here!”

Chu Feng shouted. His tone actually contained intense amount of anger.

Once his words were said, the expressions of the crowd from the allied army all changed.

The reason for that was because not only did they feel anger from Chu Feng’s tone, but they even felt killing intent when Chu Feng said those words.

That killing intent was ice-cold. It did not appear to be there merely to scare them. It was as if... Chu Feng would really end up killing them.

“Everyone, we will not be able to help little friend Chu Feng by staying here. Only by leaving will we be able to help him. Let’s get away from here.”

Right at this moment, Kong Shunlian spoke to urge the crowd to leave. Following him, Kong Yuehua and the guardian clan’s clan chief also began to urge the crowd to leave.

They were people that had experienced the might of Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword. Thus, they knew that Chu Feng would suffer a backlash from using the Evil God Sword.

In the end, Chu Feng would not be able to control himself, and would be devoured by the Demon Armament.

If they did not leave now, then they... would soon not only be people that Chu Feng would have to protect, but they would also... become people that Chu Feng would slaughter.

“Leave now!!!” Chu Feng shouted.

At that moment, the crimson clouds in the sky surged about even more violently. In fact, it was no longer as simple as only surging about.

The reason for that was because strange sounds were being emitted by the crimson clouds as they surged about. Those sounds were too strange, so strange that the crowd trembled with fear upon hearing them.

“Let’s go.”

Seeing the situation at hand, Zi Xunyi no longer hesitated. She led the crowd and left.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not stop them. At that moment, he was staring at Chu Feng.

“Hey! I am asking you a question here!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster called for Chu Feng.

“You wish to talk with me? I’m sorry, but I have no time to bother with your rubbish. Right now... there is only one thing that I wish to do.”

“As for that, it is to make you suffer a miserable death,” Chu Feng said to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

When Chu Feng said those words, his eyes turned blood-red. It was as if they were simply no longer his eyes at all.

Furthermore, an extremely wicked smile emerged on Chu Feng’s face.

The current Chu Feng was filled with a heinous air, filled with a demonic aura. Even though he had the same appearance as before, the crimson gaseous flames that covered him were rising nonstop.

At a glance, he no longer resembled a human. Rather, he resembled an actual... demon!!!

“Don’t you try to scare me. I have trained in the Infant Soul Demonic Technique for this long, and refined countless infants. You are simply seeking your own disgrace by pretending to be a demon before me!!!”

“I shall have you know exactly what an actual demon is!!!”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster finished saying those words, dark black gaseous flames exploded out from his body. The dark black gaseous flames no longer entered the sky. Instead, they began to revolve around him, taking his image.

Although the body of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster remained unchanged, the dark black gaseous flames were simply too overwhelming. As such, the image that they formed was simply enormous. It was like a black flame giant.

Most importantly, it was not only enormous, but the black gaseous flames were also emitting extremely sinister and horrifying infant cries. They were like the roars of ghosts that had died unjustly and sought revenge.

A heinous air. Boundless amount of heinous air filled the entire surrounding region.

If it were someone else, they would most definitely be scared witless upon seeing such an Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

However, Chu Feng's expression remained unchanged. Moreover, the smile he had on his face became more and more mocking.

"You dare look down on me?! I will have you know how powerful I am right now!"

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster grew incomparably furious. The Dragonscale Dagger in his hand started to shine brightly with golden light.

As he waved his arm unceasingly, countless golden blade rays were shot forth. Like a golden torrential rain, they flew toward Chu Feng.

However, faced with such an attack by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, Chu Feng did not even bother to move. In fact, he did not even bother to move the Evil God Sword in his hand.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Although Chu Feng did not move, countless clusters of crimson gaseous flame flew down from the crimson clouds in the sky above. Like a wall, they appeared before Chu Feng.

"Rumble~~~"

The next moment, the golden blade rays started to bombard the crimson gaseous flames.

However, when the golden blade rays finished bombarding the crimson gaseous flames, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was shocked to discover that not a single one of the many vine-like crimson gaseous flames that had emerged from the sky were damaged by the golden blade rays.

"How could this be?!" At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster grew extremely panicked.

Earlier, when the crimson gaseous flames were attacking him, he was able to easily slice them apart with the golden blade rays sent forth by the Dragonscale Dagger.

However, even though he had clearly increased the power of the golden blade rays just now, he was actually unable to cause any damage to the crimson gaseous flames.

There could only be one possible explanation for this -- the crimson gaseous flames had become more powerful, so powerful that he could not contend against them.

“You’re a demon?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng spoke.

“You are nothing more than an animal completely devoid of conscience who only knows about bullying the small and weak.”

“Demon, how could someone like you possibly qualify for the title of demon?”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, crimson gaseous flames began to descend from everywhere the crimson clouds covered the sky.

At a glance, there were millions and millions of vine-like crimson gaseous flames shooting straight down from the crimson clouds.

It was an extremely frightening sight.

That said, a sight like that was also extremely spectacular.

However, that sight was akin to a nightmare to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Seeing it, he became extremely frightened.

The current him was unable to even cut apart a single crimson stretch of gaseous flames. As such, facing millions and millions of crimson gaseous flames, he had no idea what to do.

“God damn it!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was no longer as egotistical and arrogant as he was before. He was so scared that his face turned pale and his body started shivering.

Suddenly, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

He had escaped. He knew that he was no match for Chu Feng. Thus, he chose to escape.

Afraid that Chu Feng would capture him, he deliberately used special methods to conceal himself.

However, Chu Feng did not panic at all upon seeing the escape attempt. In fact, he had the same mocking smile on his face the entire time.

Mockery, it was truly mockery.

It was as if a fierce tiger was mocking a mouse before killing it.

The mouse has already entered the tiger's killing range, yet it was still attempting to escape. Oh how ridiculous that was.

“Eeahhh!!!”

As expected, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's miserable scream soon sounded from the distance.

There was a stretch of crimson gaseous flames at the location where the scream had sounded. Merely, that stretch of crimson gaseous flames was different from the others. It was coiling around something.

As for that something, it was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Following that miserable scream, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster soon appeared.

The current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was in a very sorry state.

This time around, his entire body was covered by the crimson gaseous flames. The crimson gaseous flames were currently burning away at his body.

Thus, his screams were over a hundred times more miserable than the time when his arm was being burned away.

It was truly a pain so miserable that he wished he was dead.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2623 - Fleeing In Defeat

“Chu Feng, don't kill me! I beg of you, please don't kill me, please don't kill me!!!”

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster actually began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

"You don't want to die?"

"Very well, get down on your knees, kowtow and beg me," Chu Feng said to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

He made the same demand as the one the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster made to Zi Xunyi earlier.

As Chu Feng made that demand, the crimson gaseous flames that had surrounded the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster released him. **In**

The intention of this action was very obvious. Chu Feng wanted the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to kneel before him and beg for forgiveness.

"Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me. As long as you spare my life, I will agree to do whatever you want me to do."

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster kneeled in midair without the slightest hesitation. He began to kowtow and beg Chu Feng for forgiveness repeatedly.

His actions could be said to be very natural and unforced. There was not the slightest bit of hesitation at all.

However, Chu Feng had already anticipated such a thing.

Chu Feng had long since known that the great majority of the evildoers were people that would bully the weak but fear the strong. Before the weak, they would act like unyielding tough guys. However, when before the strong, their true, cowardly natures would be fully revealed.

Of course, there were most definitely unyielding and strong-willed evildoers. Merely, their numbers were relatively small.

That said, this was also understandable. After all, being craven and cowardly was human nature.

Not to mention the evildoers, even the great majority of benevolent individuals were afraid of death.

In other words, what was rare were those that were not afraid of death.

“Chu Feng, please spare me. I am willing to do whatever you want me to do.”

Seeing that Chu Feng did not have any response, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew even more earnest in his begging. Even though he was clearly in the sky, resounding slamming noises could be heard every time he kowtowed to Chu Feng. His forehead even became bloody.

From this, it could be seen how earnestly he was in his begging for forgiveness.

“Did you ever think that you would see such a day when you killed those infants?” Chu Feng asked the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“You... what do you mean by that?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster pulled his pupils back. He noticed that the situation was amiss.

“I am going to have you pay the price,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, several stretches of crimson gaseous flames flew over. They tightly surrounded the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“I have already begged you for forgiveness, why are you still planning to kill me?!”

“Ahhh~~~~, bastard, let me go!!!”

“Chu Feng, you are going back on your promise!!!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster screamed as he questioned Chu Feng’s action.

“You’re mistaken. I, Chu Feng, have always been one to keep my promises. Earlier, I said that I would have you die a miserable death.”

“Thus, I will definitely make you suffer a miserable death.”

“Nothing that I said after that was valid at all,” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“You!!!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to gnash his teeth furiously. However, he was powerless to do anything.

The reason for that was because he discovered that the disparity between his power and the Evil God Sword was simply too enormous. They were simply not on the same level at all.

He was filled with regret. By the time he discovered this, it was already too late.

“Save me! Save me!!!”

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to shout.

Hearing those shouts, Chu Feng’s expression changed. He discovered that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s cry for help was not aimed at him. Instead, it was meant for someone else.

There was someone behind the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster?

“Who are you talking to?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not answer Chu Feng. Instead, he continued to cry ‘save me.’

“If you do not tell me, I will make you suffer so much that you’ll wish you’re dead,” Chu Feng spoke coldly.

After Chu Feng said those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster began to sustain even greater sufferings.

The crimson gaseous flames that surrounded the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to flicker with a dark black radiance. Even its aura became increasingly strange.

The torture that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was bearing at that moment was most definitely not as simple as just being burned.

“Speak!!!” Chu Feng shouted.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, even though the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was in so much pain that he wished he was dead, he still refused to answer Chu Feng’s question.

“Boy, you will not be able to obtain the answer from him. Let this Evil God help you.”

Right at that moment, a voice sounded by Chu Feng's ear. It was the Evil God Sword's voice.

When the Evil God Sword's voice was heard, Chu Feng felt that his body as well as his consciousness were being attacked.

It was an extremely intense attack from the Evil God Sword. The Evil God Sword was trying to invade his body and forcibly seize it.

"Damn it, at such a time!"

At that moment, Chu Feng looked to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster with a gaze filled with irreconciliation.

He wanted to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. However, at that moment... he was unable to do so.

The reason for that was because he could not continue to utilize the power of the Evil God Sword. If he were to continue to utilize the power of the Evil God Sword, he would have his body seized by the Evil God Sword once again.

Chu Feng had no idea whether he would be as fortunate as he was last time if his body was seized again.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng wanted to put his Evil God Sword away. However, he was shocked to discover that the Evil God Sword seemed to be stuck to his hand. Even though he wanted to put it away, he was unable to do so.

It was not only the hand that he held the Evil God Sword with. At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if his entire body was no longer under his control.

"Boy, even your body has grown fond of this Evil God's powers."

"Even your body is unwilling to break away from this Evil God. You want to break away from this Evil God, are you really capable of doing that?" The Evil God Sword's mocking voice sounded in Chu Feng's ears.

"My apologies, I am the one to decide upon my own body," After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he gathered up his spirit and cast it upon the hand that he was holding the Evil God Sword with. Chu Feng needed to immediately release the Evil God Sword. Else... he would be in danger.

When Chu Feng began to battle against the Evil God Sword, the crimson clouds that filled the sky started to gradually dissipate.

Naturally, as the crimson clouds in the sky started to dissipate, the crimson gaseous flames that surrounded the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster also started to dissipate.

Although the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had regained his liberty after the crimson gaseous flames dissipated, not only were his clothes all burned away, but he was completely changed beyond recognition.

He was still screaming in pain. It was only after a while that he realized that he had managed to escape from the crimson flames.

Upon discovering that he had broken free, the first thing the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did was turn his gaze toward Chu Feng.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was unable to hear the conversation between Chu Feng and the Evil God Sword. He was only able to see that Chu Feng was tightly holding onto the Evil God Sword. As for the hand that he was holding the Evil God Sword with, it was trembling violently.

"Is he receiving the backlash?"

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster felt that to be what had happened. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's eyes were tightly closed. He was not looking at him. The crimson gaseous flames that surrounded Chu Feng was also extremely unstable.

This Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was, after all, an old monster that had lived for thousands of years. He was able to tell with a single glance that Chu Feng was resisting the power of the Evil God Sword.

"Truly, the Heavens are helping me!"

Seeing that an opportunity had arrived, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster resisted the pain with great difficulty and tightly held the Dragonscale Dagger in his hand.

He planned to seize this opportunity to kill Chu Feng.

However, right after that thought came to his mind, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suddenly ceased all movement.

Intense fear appeared in his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng.

That's right. He was afraid. He did not dare to attack Chu Feng again.

He feared that he would not be a match for Chu Feng. If Chu Feng were to attack him again, he would most definitely die.

“Woosh~~~”

After a series of mental struggles, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not attack Chu Feng. Instead, he turned around and started flying toward the direction of Chen Heavenly City.

He had actually fled.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2624 - Astonishingly Beautiful

Chu Feng did not know that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had fled. At that moment, all of Chu Feng's focus was on fighting against the Evil God Sword.

He discovered that the power of the Evil God Sword had grown stronger and stronger. Even though he had clearly only used the Evil God Sword for a very short period of time at that moment, the power of the Evil God Sword was very fierce, and much stronger than before.

It was so strong that Chu Feng found it very difficult to break free from it.

“Wuu~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng felt an acute pain from his right arm that he held the Evil God Sword with.

The next moment, the attack the Evil God Sword was unleashing against him also started to decline.

Chu Feng's consciousness began to return. When he opened his eyes, he discovered a beautiful woman standing before him.

It was a young girl with a petite build. However, her proportions were superb.

As for that young woman's face, it was awfully beautiful. Her large eyes were extremely enchanting.

Merely, she gave off an ice-cold air. That ice-coldness she emitted was not a disguise. Rather, it originated from deep within her.

Fortunately, she was wearing a long yellow skirt. Although that skirt was not very dazzling, it gave her a sort of brightness that complemented her coldness, making her seem less cold and detached.

Coincidentally, right when Chu Feng cast his gaze toward the young girl, a burst of wind just so happened to blow past. It lifted up the girl's long skirt and revealed her fair and beautiful legs.

With those legs, the beauty of the young girl was immediately increased to the extreme.

Beautiful. She was most definitely a rarely seen beauty.

Chu Feng had been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for some time now. He had also seen many beauties.

However, this beauty was definitely the most stunning beauty Chu Feng had ever laid his eyes on.

That said, Chu Feng actually knew that beauty. Merely, Chu Feng was still astonished upon seeing her. He was deeply charmed by her beauty.

The reason for that was because that young girl was Li Yue'er.

Li Yue'er who had always dressed up in male outfits was actually wearing a typical female outfit. In a female outfit, she was truly stunning.

Even someone like Chu Feng who had seen countless beauties before was deeply attracted by her beauty.

Perhaps it was because Chu Feng had accidentally touched that area when Li Yue'er was wearing a male outfit, but Chu Feng started to involuntarily cast his gaze toward that area.

At that moment, he discovered that her development in that area was truly quite ample. It was no wonder that the sensation felt that good.

As Chu Feng began to survey Li Yue'er up and down with his gaze, Li Yue'er's face turned red like an apple. Then, she glared fiercely at Chu Feng and said, "Continue looking, if you are to continue looking, you're going to bleed to death."

"Eh?" Chu Feng only realized the pain in his right arm after hearing what Li Yue'er said. He looked over and discovered that his right arm had actually been severed. His severed arm was on the ground.

However, even with that being the case, that severed arm was still tightly holding onto the Evil God Sword.

"Why are you so fierce after all this time? We have only just met, yet you've already decided to chop off my hand again?" Chu Feng said.

"If I didn't chop off your arm, would you be able to break free from that Demon Armament?" Li Yue'er asked.

"Hehe, I knew that you were doing it for my sake. Thanks girl," Chu Feng laughed mischievously.

How could he not know that Li Yue'er had hacked off his arm for his sake?

Earlier, Chu Feng's entire body was not under his control. If it wasn't for Li Yue'er severing his arm, he might really not have been able to break free from the Evil God Sword's evil clutches.

As Chu Feng expressed his thanks, he extended his hand toward his severed arm on the ground. Even though he was over ten thousand meters in the air, his severed arm was instantly sucked into his grasp.

After the severed arm entered his hand, Chu Feng removed the Evil God Sword from it. Then, he placed his severed arm onto his severed wound.

With merely a thought, his spirit power surged forth. Not only did he manage to suture his arm without a single scar, but even his severed clothes were restored with his arm.

“You’re still planning to keep that sword?” Seeing that Chu Feng had put the Evil God Sword away, Li Yue’er narrowed her eyebrows slightly.

“Although it is a bit dangerous, it remains to be a method to save myself. For example, it saved me this time around,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Is it really only a bit dangerous?”

Li Yue’er started to frown. She had witnessed the scene earlier in its entirety.

Even now, she felt lingering fear as she recalled the crimson clouds that had covered the sky and the demonic aura that had enveloped the earth.

That was truly a power capable of utter devastation.

“You should find a place to seal that sword. That sword is too strange. It is most definitely not an ordinary Demon Armament,” Li Yue’er said.

Chu Feng’s heart moved upon hearing what Li Yue’er said. Li Yue’er should possess an extraordinary origin. She knew much more than the people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

When even she gave the Evil God Sword such an evaluation, it verified to Chu Feng that the Evil God Sword was extremely remarkable.

That was understandable too. After all, the Evil God Sword was a weapon that not even his father could see through.

“I know what to do,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Even though he knew that the Evil God Sword was very dangerous, he still decided to continue to carry it with him.

“Do as you wish,” Seeing that Chu Feng was insistent on keeping the Evil God Sword, Li Yue’er no longer tried to urge him against it.

However, she still cast a glance at Chu Feng. It was a cold and detached glance. It was as if she was stating to him ‘your life and death is none of my concern.’

“Why would you appear here? You couldn’t possibly have been worried about me, right?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Li Yue'er cast a cold side-eye at Chu Feng. She said, "I have come to enjoy the liveliness. It is pure coincidence that I ran into you all."

"That's what I expected," Chu Feng was not surprised by that answer. How could someone with Li Yue'er's personality go out of her way to deliberately come find him?

Moreover, Li Yue'er should not know that he was there.

"I am leaving. I figured I might as well bid you farewell before leaving," Li Yue'er said.

What Li Yue'er said next completely shifted the topic around. She originally said that she did not come to deliberately find Chu Feng.

However, what she now said was clearly indicating that she actually had deliberately come to find Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng sighed. That girl Li Yue'er was truly amusing.

However, Chu Feng was also feeling a bit glad. This ice-cold and detached girl had decided to deliberately made the trip to bid him farewell. This meant that she must consider him to be her friend.

"Where are you going? Are you returning home?" Chu Feng asked. He had long since known that Li Yue'er was definitely not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. A girl as talented as her was most definitely from the Upper Realms.

"No, I'm not returning home. Merely, I'll be changing my training place," Li Yue'er said.

"Where to?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm," Li Yue'er said.

"In that case, we might meet again in the future," Chu Feng said with a slight smile.

"Although this place is under the control of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and the teleportation formations here also lead to the Great Chiliocosm Upper

Realm, if you do not wish to go to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, I can help bring you to the Upper Realm that you want to go to,” Li Yue’er said.

“You truly have a lot of abilities. However, there’s no need for that. After all, the place that I want to go the most is the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm,” Chu Feng said.

“Wuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly frowned. His previously smiling face was immediately replaced with an expression of pain.

In an instant, Chu Feng’s face turned paper pale. He was also clenching his fists tightly.

Upon closer inspection, Li Yue’er could see that Chu Feng’s entire body was shaking. He was trembling in pain.

“What’s wrong?” Li Yue’er immediately lent an arm to support Chu Feng.

“It’s the Demon Armament’s backlash,” Chu Feng said with great difficulty.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2625 - The Culprit From Behind The Shadows

“Backlash?”

After hearing that, Li Yue’er took out a golden medicinal pellet and handed it to Chu Feng, “Quickly, swallow that.”

“It’s useless,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“I said swallow it, so swallow it,” Li Yue’er forcibly shoved the medicinal pellet into Chu Feng’s mouth.

Then, she brought Chu Feng and started flying into the distance.

Chu Feng was surprised to discover that the medicinal pellet actually started to refine itself once it entered his mouth. It turned into strands of energy that assimilated with the various areas of his body.

At that moment, a warm current filled Chu Feng's entire body. As the warm current moved through his body, Chu Feng's unbearable pain actually really managed to improve greatly.

As that medicinal pellet possessed miraculous effects, Chu Feng knew that medicinal pellet was most definitely of considerable value. Else, it would be impossible for it to be able to curb the Evil God Sword's backlash.

Once again, he owed Li Yue'er another favor.

"Girl, the speed at which your cultivation increases is truly fast," At that moment, Chu Feng had noticed that Li Yue'er was traveling extremely fast even while bringing him along.

Li Yue'er's cultivation was no longer that of a peak Martial Ancestor. She had already reached a breakthrough. Currently, she was a rank one True Immortal.

"Peak Martial Ancestor is not some sort of difficult mountain pass. With your cultivation, you will, sooner or later, also reach a breakthrough," Li Yue'er said.

However, after she finished saying those words, she discovered that Chu Feng did not answer her. Thus, she took a glance at Chu Feng.

It was only then that she discovered that Chu Feng was currently sweating immensely. His entire face was twisted. He seemed to be in even more pain than before.

"That medicinal pellet of mine should be especially effective against backlashes. Could it be that it's ineffective?" Li Yue'er asked.

However, Chu Feng was in so much pain that he was nearly about to lose consciousness. The pain he was suffering was many times stronger than before Li Yue'er fed him the medicinal pellet.

That sort of pain was not something imaginable. It was as if his soul was being torn away by someone nonstop. Then, after it was completely torn apart, his soul would be reformed only to be torn apart again.

It was his soul, and not his body.

To a person of Chu Feng's cultivation, physical pain was nothing serious. Only pain to one's soul could be fatal.

If their physical body was destroyed, it could be reformed. However, if their soul was destroyed, there would be no cure, and they would truly die.

The pain that Chu Feng was suffering from at that moment was pain that originated from his soul.

Furthermore, the backlash this time was simply too powerful. Soon, Chu Feng's consciousness grew completely fuzzy. Then, he lost consciousness.

.....

At the Southwestern region of Chen Heavenly City was an ancient mountain range. The peak of that mountain range reached above the clouds. It was an extremely cold region covered in snow all year round.

Inside a cave within this extremely cold region was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. He was hiding there.

Even though that place was extremely ice-cold, his body was emitting steam.

Not only did the steam completely melt away the snow inside the cave, but it even melted away the snow covering the mountain peak.

After the Evil God Sword's power disappeared, the crimson gaseous flames that bound him also disappeared.

However, many crimson scars were left behind on his body. Not only were those scars emitting steam, but they were also inflicting him with unbearable pain.

Most importantly, he was unable to cure or heal those scars.

"Save me, Milord, I beg of you, please save me. I am soon to be unable to endure this anymore."

Resisting the pain he felt with great difficulty, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster knelt onto the ground and begged.

However, before him was not a soul in sight.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a figure appeared before him. That person possessed white hair and gave off an extraordinary air.

That person... was actually the old man with the greatest seniority and strongest strength among the three Chu Heavenly Clansmen who were looking down on what was happening in Chen Heavenly City from above the clouds.

“Useless trash.”

“You started to cry for me to help you right before Chu Feng. Did you know... that you’ve already exposed me?”

The old man looked to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster and spoke coldly. Ice-cold anger filled his eyes.

“Milord, I swear to the heavens that I did not mention your name to that Chu Feng.”

“In this world, apart from this lowly one here, there is no one who knows of your existence.”

“Milord, I beg of you, please save me. I do not want to die. I really don’t want to die.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was kneeling, kowtowing and begging nonstop.

However, that old man simply ignored him.

“Milord, as long as you save me, I will definitely accomplish what you wanted me to do. If I am to die, no one in the Infant Soul Sect will be able to properly accomplish that task,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster continued.

Originally, the old man’s expression remained unchanged from his begging. However, he was immediately moved upon hearing the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster mention the task that he gave him.

After a moment of silence, the old man took out a jade bottle from his Cosmos Sack.

Once he opened the jade bottle, a refreshing aura was immediately emitted from it. The old man gently flicked the jade bottle, and a droplet of water emerged from it. That droplet of water lightly landed on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Buzz~~~”

Once the water droplet landed on him, it started to rapidly expand in size. “Splash~~” The water droplet formed an enormous jade green splash of water that completely covered the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The splash of water did not roll down the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body. Rather, it stuck to his body and started to bubble. It was as if the splash of water was healing him.

However, that splash of water only lasted for an instant before disappearing.

It was as if a splash of water had fallen into a dry desert. Not only was it instantly absorbed, but there was not even the slightest trace of its existence remaining afterwards.

“Mn?”

Seeing this scene, the old man started to frown. Evidently... the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's injury was much more difficult to treat than he had originally anticipated.

Then, the old man flicked ten more droplets of water out of the jade bottle. All of the water droplets landed on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

This time around, it took a bit longer for the splashes of water to disappear. However, they still disappeared quickly. They were all engulfed by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body.

To be exact, they were all engulfed by the scars on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body

With that being the case, the old man had no choice but to continue to increase the amount of water droplets. After using roughly half of the water in the jade bottle, the scars on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body were finally healed.

“Milord, thank you for saving me, thank you for saving me!!!”

“I, Hun Poyuan, will forever remember Milord for saving my life.”

After his injuries were cured, Hun Poyuan looked to his healed body and was completely overjoyed. He began to kowtow to the old man nonstop.

As he was suffering from his injuries earlier, he knew very well how frightening his injuries were. They were injuries that he was unable to remove. Those scars were capable of burning away his soul. If it wasn't for that old man saving him, he knew that he might not even be able to live to the end of the day.

However, faced with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's thankfulness, that old man did not even bother to take a single glance at him. He merely looked to the jade bottle in his hand. A distressed expression filled his eyes.

“If you are to mess up this matter, I will definitely make you suffer pain a hundredfold, a thousandfold, that of what you've suffered here today. Then, I will take away your life.” The old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan said coldly.

“Milord, please rest assured. I will definitely not let down the trust Milord had placed upon me. I will definitely handle things properly,” The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster guaranteed.

“Don't speak it so quickly. That Chu Feng is still alive,” The old man said.

“He's still alive?” Hearing those words, the expression of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster changed. A deep restraining fear emerged in his eyes.

“Milord, that Chu Feng's Demon Armament is simply too strange. This lowly one is not a match for him. Milord, could you...” When he reached this point, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to hesitate. However, he still clenched his teeth and said, “Milord, can you help this lowly one eliminate that Chu Feng?”

“That Chu Feng has killed someone from our Chu Heavenly Clan. If I could act, how could he have lived till today?”

“But, what sort of status do we possess? How could we possibly involve ourselves in matters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

"If I could kill him directly myself, how could there be a need for a trash like you to help me? This old man would have completely taken care of everything by now," The old man spoke angrily.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2626 - Disgrace

"But, Milord... that Chu Feng feels enormous hatred toward me. In the future, he will definitely find me, and I am no match for him."

"If he is to find me, this lowly one will not be able to accomplish the mission that Milord has given me," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"Are you threatening me?" The old man narrowed his eyebrows. Immediately, boundless killing intent filled the entire cave.

"No, this lowly one would not dare." The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster immediately kneeled onto the ground. He did not dare to raise his head again.

"Actually, in the battle at the Kong Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng's Demon Armament was suppressed by a Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. As long as you obtain that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, you will be able to curb his Evil God Sword. With his abilities, how could he possibly contend against you then?" That old man said.

"Demon Armament Suppression Talisman? Where is that thing right now?" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster asked.

"It is in the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's possession," The old man replied.

"That Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief has disappeared for a very long time now. Where should I go to find him?" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed a difficult expression.

"Humph, truly slow-witted. Everything that occurs in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is in my eyes. While others might not know where that Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief might be, how could this old man not know?" That old man said.

“What Milord says is extremely correct. This lowly one was truly slow-witted,” After hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a joyous expression.

However, he seemed to immediately recall something else. His expression changed slightly. Then, he asked, “Although this lowly one is slow-witted, I am still able to tell that the Demon Armament Chu Feng possessed is most definitely not an ordinary item. As such, how could the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief possess a treasure capable of curbing that Demon Armament?”

“He would naturally not be able to possess such a treasure. It is something given to him by a grand individual,” The old man said.

“Then, who is it that gave it to him?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked.

“You are asking too many foolish questions,” After hearing those words, the old man was immediately furious. He shouted, “Since your injuries have been healed, why are you still here? Go and finish the task!”

After he finished saying those words, the old man tossed a stone toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Written on the stone was the location where the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was currently hiding. Upon receiving the stone, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster respectfully bid his farewell to the old man and then left immediately. He proceeded to the location written on the stone.

He knew very well that he was only able to defeat Ying Mingchao because of that Incomplete Immortal Armament. As for that Incomplete Immortal Armament, it was given to him by the old man.

It was that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan who had bestowed upon him power surpassing everyone else in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, he also knew very well that his life was no longer his to control since the day that old man got in contact with him.

If he wanted to live, then he must do one thing. That is... he must obey every word from that old man.

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster left, the old man did not immediately leave.

Instead, he looked into the distance and softly muttered, “Ever since Chu Feng entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm has become completely different. Those that originally did not meddle with things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm all started to involve themselves because of that Chu Feng.”

“But... exactly who is it that gave them the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman? Originally, I thought he was someone with a conflict against Chu Feng, and that he would eliminate Chu Feng. However, he evidently did not do that.”

“Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, exactly what is your origin? Could it be that you really are his descendant?”

Thinking about that, the old man started to tightly clench his fists that were within his sleeves.

Although he was tasked with monitoring the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, there were many things that he possessed no knowledge of.

This was especially true in regards to the many secrets concerning Chu Feng. Even now, he had no answer to them.

That was precisely the reason why he became furious when the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked about the origin of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. *novelb-1n*

The reason for that was because he did not know who the owner of that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was. This made him feel a sense of failure.

Even though he should be an existence akin to a god in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was unable to control everything like a god.

The old man let out a soft sigh. However, he still didn’t leave. He seemed to be waiting for something.

“Senior.”

After roughly six hours passed, the middle-aged man from the Chu Heavenly Clan flew over from afar. He landed before the old man and bowed respectfully to him.

“You’ve returned. How is Chu Feng?” That old man asked.

“Senior, Chu Feng has been taken away by that young woman called Li Yue’er. Although he has suffered from the pain brought forth by his backlash, there should be no danger to his life.”

“As for that Li Yue’er, she should be previously known as Young Master Li Ming. I truly never expected... that she actually hid herself this well.”

“However, Chu Feng clearly knew that Young Master Li Ming was actually a female. I wonder... did he come to know it when he was at Mount Cloud Crane, or was it from elsewhere?”

“This junior was truly negligent. I have failed to maintain my absolute surveillance on him,” When the middle-aged man said those words, he revealed an ashamed expression.

“This cannot be blamed on you. It is orders from above that transferred away too many of our clansmen in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As we lack the manpower, we are unable to monitor things to a satisfactory degree. It is all within reason,” The old man said.

After saying that, the old man asked, “Have all of our clan’s younger generation that were sent to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm left?”

“Senior, please rest assured. They have all left. After all, our clan has already canceled all missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Without any mission, they will naturally not stay in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” The middle-aged man said.

“It is for the best that they’ve left. We have no idea what sort of shenanigans the Infant Soul Sect is planning to get up to this time around. We must not allow our clan’s younger generation to get involved in this matter. Else... according to our clan’s rules, even if they are to encounter danger, we must absolutely not act to save them,” The old man said.

“Senior, we are not allowed to save them because they were tasked with missions. Now that all the missions are canceled, they are no longer tempering themselves in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Are we still not allowed to save them should something happen to them in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” The middle-aged man asked.

“Who said that all the missions were canceled? Isn’t the mission of eliminating the Infant Soul Sect still present?” The old man said.

“.....” Hearing those words, the expression of the middle-aged man changed. He looked to his left hand. On his wrist was a visible scar. It was a scar that he had from his palm being chopped off before.

Seeing that scar, the middle-aged man’s tone became complicated, “The mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect is too difficult. Likely, apart from our clan’s several heavenly beloved geniuses, no one will be able to accomplish it.”

“I feel that the mission that should be canceled the most is that mission.”

“Chu Huai, actually, the mission that you do not wish to be canceled the most is the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, no?”

“Actually, you, more than anyone else, want a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation to be able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. Isn’t that right?” The old man said with a faint smile on his face.

The middle-aged man did not refute him.

“Actually, with your talent, you are more than capable of attaining accomplishments in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. There was no need for you to apply to come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to monitor it, no?” The old man said.

“I was incompetent. I failed to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect within the age limit. Instead, I received the humiliation of a blade.”

“However, I still hope that someone from our clan will be able to help me obtain revenge for my humiliation,” That man by the name of Chu Huai said.

The old man sighed. “You are still young, you must let go of what you should let go. Do not let this matter linger in your heart the entire time, for it will not bring you any benefit,” As the old man spoke, he faced his palm toward Chu Huai’s wrist and gently swiped it across the air before him.

Then, a layer of spirit power entered Chu Huai’s wrist and completely removed the scar on his wrist.

The old man knew very well that with Chu Huai's strength, he was more than capable of eliminating that scar by himself. He had deliberately left that scar on his wrist.

The old man knew that Chu Huai had left that scar to remind himself that he had been defeated in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, that he had been defeated by the Infant Soul Sect.

He was trying to use that scar to urge himself to become stronger.

However, to someone as proud as Chu Huai, that scar did not become a motivation to become more powerful. Instead, it became an imprint in his heart that he was unable to erase.

As for that imprint, it was something called disgrace.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2627 - The Lifespan Of A Martial Cultivator

“Senior.”

Right at that moment, that middle-aged female flew over.

She did not bow to the old man respectfully like Chu Huai did after landing. Instead, casually, she said, “The people from Hero City did not return to Hero City. Likely, they feared that they would be implicated should Chu Feng fail, and have decided to hide elsewhere.”

“Where is elsewhere?” Chu Huai asked.

“Eh...” The woman did not know how to answer that question. An awkward expression appeared on her face.

“Why does this happen every single time? Do you not know what your duty is here? Why are you unable to even handle minor things like this properly?” Chu Huai was slightly annoyed.

The woman pouted her lips. With a tone filled with grievance, she said, “Aiyah, all those people have been transferred back to the clan, and all the missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have been canceled. Not to

mention that we do not have sufficient manpower, even the continued surveillance is meaningless.”

“They’re not people from our Chu Heavenly Clan. What they’ve done, whether they live or die, what does that have to do with us?”

Even though her appearance was that of a middle-aged woman, she still had the personality of a child.

“This is a mission given to us by senior. We must accomplish it earnestly,” Chu Huai said.

“Now, now. Chu Huai, stop blaming Chu Yue. What she said is correct. Everyone from our Chu Heavenly Clan has left, and the missions here have all been cancelled. There really isn’t much for us to monitor here.”

“Actually, we will soon have to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and return to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm ourselves,” The old man said.

“Senior, is what you said the truth?” Hearing those words, the woman called Chu Yue was overjoyed.

“Naturally,” The old man said.

“But, senior, didn’t you say that there’s still the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Compared to Chu Yue’s exultation, Chu Huai was unwilling to leave.

“Although our Chu Heavenly Clan’s several heavenly beloved geniuses all possess the strength to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, they have all passed the age limit to accomplish that mission.”

“Apart from them, there is currently no one in our clan who could accomplish that mission.”

“Unless, of course, another heaven-defying member of the younger generation is to appear in our clan, and that person is willing to come to a place like this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to accomplish that mission.”

“Otherwise, there will likely not be anyone from our Chu Heavenly Clan that will be willing to come to this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As such, it will be meaningless for us to continue to stay here.”

“Moreover, if there really is a person from the younger generation who is willing to come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to challenge that mission, we can just secretly follow that person here,” The old man said.

Hearing those words, that woman called Chu Yue was overjoyed. She started to hop and skip around happily.

As for the middle-aged man, he grew downcast.

“The two of you are finally able to resume your original appearances too. There’s no need to be secretive anymore.”

As the old man spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, a burst of spirit power scattered over Chu Huai and Chu Yue like starlight.

The next moment, their appearances started to change. Chu Huai turned into a young man, and Chu Yue turned into a young woman.

Merely, compared to Chu Huai’s ordinary appearance, Chu Yue was somewhat of a beauty.

“It’s time to leave this desolate place. I’m finally able to use my own appearance now.”

“Being youthful is truly better.”

Chu Yue took out a mirror and looked at her charming face with a satisfied expression.

This was her actual face. This was her original appearance. This was what she was immensely proud of.

“We are middle-aged people to begin with,” As for Chu Huai, he had an expression of indifference.

“Foolish child, how could the world of martial cultivators be compared with that of ordinary people?”

“People that are less than a hundred years old are considered people of the younger generation. People that are less than a thousand years old are youths. After a thousand is middle-age, and only after five thousand years can one be considered old. That is something that our Ancestor set up.”

“As for the two of you, you are both not even a hundred years old. You two can only still be considered to be of the younger generation. Thus, how could you say that you’re middle-aged?”

“The two of you are still very far away from becoming middle-aged,” The old man said with a beaming smile.

“But, in that case, why is it that many of the weak cultivators in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will grow old and weak after reaching fifty years of age, and be filled with white hair by the time they pass a hundred years old? If they want to maintain their youthful appearance, they will have to disguise themselves using world spirit techniques,” Chu Huai asked.

“Could the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possibly be considered to be actual cultivators? In the old man’s eyes, true cultivators need to have at least reached the True Immortal realm.”

“Let me ask you two this, do those cultivators who reach True Immortal realm grow old within a hundred years? Will they become an old man like myself within a thousand years?” The old man asked.

Chu Huai and Chu Yue started to recall the True Immortals that they’d met, and discovered that all those within a thousand years of age really did have youthful appearances. Only after they reached a thousand years of age did they show signs of aging. However, even if they were to age, they would only age to middle-aged appearances.

As for becoming actual old people, they would have to reach at least five thousand years of age. Apart from deliberately disguising themselves, True Immortals would only show signs of grizzled hair and distinctive wrinkles on their faces after they passed five thousand years of age.

As for True Immortals within a hundred years of age, they were people filled with spirit. Their skin was soft and tender like the water’s surface.

There were even some among them that looked like youngsters or young girls.

“In that case, does it mean that reaching True Immortal realm could be considered to be shedding one’s mortal body and being born again?” Chu Huai asked.

“You have been a True Immortal for all these years, yet you still didn’t notice that?” The old man smiled. Then, he said, “What you said is correct. Only by reaching the True Immortal realm will martial cultivators surpass the confinements of their mortal bodies.”

“Generally speaking, True Immortal-realm experts are all able to live for more than ten thousand years. Think about it. If non-cultivators have a life expectancy of a hundred years, then they will definitely become old when they reach sixty. Thus, to call them middle-aged at forty will not be an issue at all. After all, their lifespan is so short.”

“However, the lifespan of True Immortals must be determined using ten thousand years. With that... wouldn’t considering those under a thousand to be middle-aged far-fetched?” The old man asked.

“That’s right. Compared to ordinary people, a thousand years would only be ten years. How could it be considered to be middle-aged? It should be still considered to be childhood.”

“Wow! Big brother Chu Huai, so you’re actually still a child,” Chu Yue said to Chu Huai with a innocent expression.

“Haha, foolish girl,” Hearing those words, the old man laughed. He gently caressed Chu Yue’s hair and said, “The categorization of age is something that has been determined by our ancestor. As such, there is definitely a reason for it. Even if we find it unreasonable, we must still acknowledge it.”

“After all, even for True Immortals, they will still age after living for a thousand years. They will not be able to stay young forever,” The old man said.

“But, senior, logically, shouldn’t cultivators’ lifespans increase as their cultivation grows stronger?”

“In that case, why is it that in our clan, regardless of whether one might be a True Immortal, Heavenly Immortal or Martial Immortal, the limit of their lifespan can all be considered to be ten thousand years?” Chu Huai asked.

“That’s right. Not to mention the Half Martial Ancestors and Martial Ancestors, I’ve heard from my father that even Martial Emperors that managed to encounter fortuitous meetings will be able to live up to ten thousand years should they take good care of their health and use treasures to extend their lifespan.”

“In that case, why is it that the life expectancy for True Immortals, Heavenly Immortals and Martial Immortals is also only ten thousand years?”

“This is simply too unfair. Even though the difference in cultivation realms is so great, even though they’ve placed so much effort in reaching a breakthrough, they are unable to extend their lifespan even after reaching breakthroughs in cultivation,” Chu Yue said.

“One can extend one’s lifespan upon reaching the Exalted Realm,” The old man said.

“Exalted Realm? That’s too difficult, no?” Chu Yue said.

“Even upon reaching the Exalted Realm, the number of years their life is extended will also be determined by the individual.”

“However, something like that is also reasonable and fair. You two should not think of it as unfair. After all, even martial cultivators are limited by their lifespan. In the end, they will also grow old, become sick and die.”

“If one can extend one’s lifespan without limit by increasing one’s cultivation, then those experts from the Ancient Era would have been able to live till this day. With their strength, how could the world be filled with modern people like us?”

“Likely, it would still be those seniors from the Ancient Era that rule the Galaxies and Starfields,” The old man said.

“That’s true. I’ve heard from my grandfather that those seniors from the Ancient Era were extremely frightening existences. Their strength was not something that we can compare to,” Chu Yue said.

“Actually, it is already very good that us cultivators can live up till ten thousand years of age. After all, compared to the lifespan of ordinary people, ten thousand years is an extremely long period of time,” The old man said.

“While that is true, it remains that we are True Immortals. When even those Martial Ancestors, Half Martial Ancestors and even Martial Emperors are able to live as long as we do, I still feel that it is very unfair,” Chu Yue said with pouted lips.

“While that might be the case, not mentioning the Martial Emperors, even for Half Martial Ancestors and Martial Ancestors, how many among them can really live till ten thousand years of age?” The old man asked.

“I don’t seem to have met any,” Chu Yue shook her head.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2628 - The Pain From The Backlash

“Actually, things like that all depend on one’s own encounters, one’s own luck. There is nothing absolute.”

“Using our clan as an example, there was once a True Immortal-level senior. He possessed limited talent, and was only able to stay at the True Immortal realm for the rest of his life.”

“However, he managed to live for fifty thousand years before passing away. Although he used various methods to extend his life expectancy, it remains that being able to live for fifty thousand years is extremely rare.”

“On the other hand, there was a senior from our clan that was a peak Martial Immortal. He was only a step away from becoming an Exalted. However, he only managed to live for six thousand years. Without even reaching ten thousand years, he reached the limit of his lifespan and died of old age,” The old man said.

“I heard of this matter before. That senior was a genius with great talent for martial cultivation. He was only a step away from becoming an Exalted. Unfortunately... his lifespan was too short. Reportedly, he started to age rapidly after reaching five thousand years of age.”

“Back then, for the sake of helping him extend his lifespan, our clan used countless methods to extend his lifespan. However, they were all useless on him. It was truly an enormous pity.”

“If it wasn’t for that, our clan would have another Exalted expert,” Chu Yue sighed.

“Thus, something like one’s life expectancy should be left to fate. It will not be beneficial to concern oneself too much with it,” The old man said.

“In that case, senior, you are one with a naturally long lifespan then, no?” Chu Yue said with a beaming smile.

“Senior, you must take good care of your health now. You need to make sure to use methods to increase your lifespan when needed,” Compared to Chu Yue’s mischievousness, Chu Huai was worried for the old man’s health from the bottom of his heart.

The two of them both knew that the old man before them possessed an extremely high seniority in the Chu Heavenly Clan. The reason for that was because... he was someone who had lived for ten thousand years.

In other words, the old man was an old monster that had countless years of experience, and had seen through all forms of humanity.

“Something like one’s lifespan should be resigned to fate itself. To forcibly extend one’s lifespan would be going against the natural order. One should not do that,” The old man sighed and spoke indifferently.

“Senior truly has a broad vision. I hope that I will also be able to be like you when I reach your age,” Chu Yue said.

“Hahaha...” The old man burst into laughter.

Although the old man’s laughter seemed to be relaxed, worry filled his deep and profound eyes.

“Senior, this must be the place where that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was healing his injuries, right?”

“How is he? Could it be that his injuries are already healed?”

Suddenly, Chu Yue cast her gaze to the place where the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was earlier. The reason for that was because the aura of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was still there.

“They have already healed,” The old man said.

“How did he manage to cure himself? Chu Feng’s Demon Armament is extremely strange. Even if that Demon Armament’s power disappeared, the injuries left by it should not be that easily cured, no?” Chu Huai said.

“That’s true. His injuries didn’t seem to be that easily cured,” Chu Yue nodded in agreement.

The two of them both witnessed the battle between Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster in secret earlier. Thus, the power of the Evil God Sword was fresh in their memories.

No matter what, the two of them were True Immortal-level experts. Furthermore, both of them possessed cultivation above that of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Yet, neither of them knew what they could possibly do should they be injured by the Evil God Sword’s powers. As such, how did the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster manage to cure himself despite such injuries?

“It is all because of that Infant Soul Demonic Technique that the Infant Soul Sect was able to exist in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for so long. That Infant Soul Demonic Technique is extremely strange. Else... it wouldn’t be that difficult to handle. A genius like you, Chu Huai, would not have lost to them either,” The old man looked to Chu Huai.

Hearing those words, Chu Huai said no more.

Even though he felt that the current him was able to easily eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, he knew that back then, when he was still much younger, he was indeed no match for the Infant Soul Sect.

It was precisely due to his defeat from back then that the Infant Soul Sect left a deep impression in his heart.

“But, senior, even if the Infant Soul Sect possesses special abilities, the power of that Demon Armament seems to have already surpassed them...” Chu Yue wanted to ask further questions.

Chu Yue had not fought against the Infant Soul Sect. Her strength had already surpassed that of the Infant Soul Sect by the time she arrived.

Thus, she looked down on the Infant Soul Sect from the bottom of her heart. Thus, she questioned how the Infant Soul Sect could possibly cure the Demon Armament's injury when even she herself could not.

Thus, it was not that she did not believe it after finding out that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had managed to cure his injury. Merely, she was unable to accept it.

"Enough, there's no need to continue lingering on this matter. Let me tell you two some good news."

"I have actually already asked the clan to bring the two of you back into the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Likely, not long from now, the two of you will be able to return to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. There will not be a need for you two to accompany this old man and suffer here," The old man said.

"Senior, is what you said for real?" Chu Yue was overjoyed upon hearing those words.

"Foolish girl, when has this old man ever lied to you?" The old man said with a slight smile.

"This is great! I am finally able to leave this desolate place!" At that moment, Chu Yue was beaming with happiness. She was truly overjoyed.

"Senior, with such a major movement from the Infant Soul Sect, they are most definitely plotting something. This junior wants to know exactly what they plan to do. Might it be possible for me to continue to stay here?" Chu Huai asked.

"Chu Huai, we have come here with the purpose of monitoring our clan's younger generation. Our task was to record how they accomplished their missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"As for what happens in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it is unrelated to us. Even if there was conflict between you and the Infant Soul Sect, you still cannot cross the line."

"Go on and return. From today on, you two do not have to involve yourself with anything in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Just leave everything to me and wait for news from the clan to tell you two to return," The old man said.

After hearing what the old man said, although Chu Huai was somewhat unwilling, he found it unsuitable to say anymore.

As such, he could only choose to leave. After all, they had to listen to the old man's orders in this place.

After Chu Yue and Chu Huai left, the smile on the old man's face instantly disappeared. An ice-cold ruthlessness emerged in his eyes.

"Brats, the two of you had best listen obediently and not ruin this old man's plan. Else... don't blame me for not taking into consideration the affections of being fellow clansmen."

.....

Being assailed by the backlash, Chu Feng soon lost consciousness.

After a long time passed, Chu Feng finally managed to regain his consciousness. When he opened his eyes, he was surprised to discover that he was currently in a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood.

Chaos filled his entire field of view. Apart from corpses, there was no sign of life.

It was as if the entire world had been destroyed.

Suddenly, crimson clouds began to roll about in the sky. Two eyes appeared in the rolling crimson clouds.

Those eyes were crimson in color. In the sky and within the crimson clouds, they shone brightly like suns.

However, the two eyes were emitting an overflowing demonic aura. One would feel fear from the depths of one's soul upon seeing those eyes.

Frightening. Those eyes were truly frightening. Even Chu Feng was shivering.

It was not that Chu Feng was cowardly. Rather, he was unable to withstand that frightening gaze in the sky. He was simply unable to control his body.

His fear originated from the depths of his soul, from the bottom of his heart.

Suddenly, the crimson clouds started to descend. That pair of enormous and frightening eyes was also growing closer and closer to Chu Feng.

“Scram!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted hysterically.

He had screamed with all of his body’s energy.

He had done so because he was afraid. He was scared that that frightening existence was growing too close to him.

“Boy, you will not be able to escape this Evil God’s grasp. One day, you will be controlled by me.”

An extremely sinister and confident voice sounded from the crimson clouds.

That voice seemed to be able to snatch away one’s soul. At the moment that voice sounded, Chu Feng felt as if his soul was being controlled by it. He felt as if he would be ripped apart by it. An unbearable pain once again filled his entire body.

Too painful. The pain caused Chu Feng to tightly close his eyes and scream nonstop.

Just like that, Chu Feng continued to suffer for an unknown amount of days.

Then, after days of sufferings, Chu Feng suddenly heard a familiar voice.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng...”

At that moment, Li Yue’er’s voice sounded beside Chu Feng’s ears.

Strangely, after hearing Li Yue’er’s voice, the pain that was tormenting Chu Feng started to fade away.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes, he discovered that he was no longer in that mountain of corpses and sea of blood. Instead, he was in a palace hall. That palace hall was not very large, yet it was very exquisite.

Chu Feng was currently covered by a grand healing formation. Even the bed that he was lying on was a bed specially made to help one heal.

A person was standing outside of the grand formation. That person was calling out his name. She was... Li Yue'er.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2629 - Weaponry Refinement

"It would appear that I have managed to endure the backlash."

Chu Feng rubbed his still-hurting head and let out a bitter laugh.

He knew very well that he had returned to reality. As such, he should have managed to endure the torture of the backlash.

Seeing that Chu Feng was fine, Li Yue'er removed her healing formation. Although she did not say anything, Chu Feng noticed the change in her expression.

Earlier, there was obvious worry in her eyes as she looked to Chu Feng. However now, the worry in her eyes was gone.

Even though Li Yue'er appeared to not be feeling anything, she was clearly worried for Chu Feng before he woke up.

"It seems that this girl doesn't truly have a heart of stone. Chu Feng... how about we cook the raw rice and take her down? I can tell that this girl is pretty decent," Her Lady Queen spoke with a mischievous laugh.

Chu Feng coughed, then said, "Do I resemble someone who will capture any pretty decent girl I encounter? I am a very single-minded man, okay?"

"Single-minded? Pah!" Her Lady Queen cast a ruthless side-eye at Chu Feng. Her side-eye was filled with disdain.

"Eh..." Chu Feng also started to blush after saying the words 'single-minded.'

If he were single-minded, he wouldn't have Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei, three lovers. That said, while Chu Feng felt that he might not be single-minded, he was not a fickle lover.

He would most definitely not like someone merely because of their appearance. More than that would be the feelings he felt after getting along with them.

As for feelings, that was something that was extremely difficult to control. If feelings were to come, one would not be able to stop them. If feelings did not come, one would not be able to insist on having them.

Seeing that Chu Feng had awakened, yet did not say anything, Li Yue'er was finally unable to contain herself, and asked, "Are you alright?"

"I'm fine," Chu Feng hurriedly answered. After all, the conversation between Egg and him could not be heard by Li Yue'er.

"You're fine? Then why are you blushing?" Li Yue'er asked.

"It's because this room is too hot," Chu Feng said embarrassedly.

He would naturally not tell Li Yue'er that he blushed because he was discussing whether or not he was a single-minded lover with his world spirit.

Hearing those words, Li Yue'er frowned. Then, she took a glance around.

Hot?

For the sake of healing Chu Feng, she had placed meticulous effort into setting up that place. As such, even martial cultivators would feel that the temperature there was cold. Thus, how could it be hot?

Even though she knew that Chu Feng was lying, Li Yue'er didn't ask anymore. After all, she was not extremely curious.

"It would seem that you are fine," Li Yue'er said.

"Yeah. I should have managed to endure through it," Chu Feng stood up and started to stretch, "Oh, that's right. How long was I unconscious for?"

"A month and three days," Li Yue'er said.

"That long?" Chu Feng's gaze changed upon hearing those words. The relaxed expression on his face immediately disappeared. Deep worry

emerged in his eyes. He asked, “How are Zhao Hong, Senior Ying and the others doing?”

“I only know that they’ve returned to Hero City once. However, they left soon after. As for where they’re at right now, I have no idea.”

“That said, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster has been busy in the Infant Soul Sect the entire time. He did not go to deliberately find Ying Mingchao and the others. Perhaps he simply did not place them in his eyes at all. Or perhaps what he is dealing with is more important.”

“In short, I feel that your friends should all still be safe ,” Li Yue’er said.

“Thanks,” Chu Feng thanked Li Yue’er because he knew that she must’ve meticulously scouted for information to be able to tell him all these things so quickly.

Actually, the life and death of those people were completely unrelated to Li Yue’er. She had deliberately scouted the information about them all for the sake of telling Chu Feng about it.

She had already anticipated that Chu Feng would ask for news of those matters after waking up.

“What is the situation at the Infant Soul Sect right now?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is still unknown as to exactly what the Infant Soul Sect is planning. However, it seems that they are planning to gather everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm before acting.”

“The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is a massive place. Furthermore, the general cultivation of the martial cultivators here is not very high. Even with the help of those various sects and schools, I feel that it will take at least three months for them to gather everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Infant Soul Sect’s location,” Li Yue’er said.

“I wonder if I’ll make it in time,” Chu Feng took out the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart as he said those words.

“What is that?” Li Yue’er cast her curious gaze over.

“Come have a look. This weaponry refinement chart is no ordinary weaponry refinement chart. It is able to allow one to gain martial comprehension while refining weapons,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s a treasure. You should keep it for yourself,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Li Yue’er cast her curious gaze away from the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

“There’s no need for this, no? I don’t mind sharing it with you,” Chu Feng said.

“I mind. I don’t want an unmerited reward,” Li Yue’er said.

“In that case, consider it that I am asking you to help me analyze it. Would that work?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Before Li Yue’er could answer, Chu Feng added, “Furthermore, with the care that you’ve given me these days, how could it be considered an unmerited reward?”

“Moreover, if it wasn’t for you slicing off my arm and severing the connection between the Evil God Sword and I, I might already be dead by now. As such, you could be said to have saved my life.”

However, Li Yue’er was still ignoring Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was a smart individual. Since he was determined to share the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart with Li Yue’er, he would naturally have a way of doing so.

Chu Feng stopped trying to force Li Yue’er to read and comprehend it together with him.

Instead, he began to deliberately voice all the understanding he already had from the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

At the beginning, Li Yue’er ignored Chu Feng. However, later on, she also began to earnestly listen to the things he said.

It was not that she was excessively scheming and cunning. Rather, the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart were simply too fascinating. To world spiritists, it was truly irresistible.

Soon, Li Yue'er was swayed. She decided to bluntly stand behind Chu Feng and read the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart together with him.

It should be noted that not only was Li Yue'er's talent toward martial cultivation superb, but even her talent in world spirit techniques was excellent.

Thus, Li Yue'er helped Chu Feng quite a bit when she started to comprehend and analyze the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart with him. With the two of them jointly disassembling and analyzing its contents, they were able to increase their comprehension speed.

In merely half a month, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er actually managed to completely decipher the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, and gain a preliminary grasp of the weaponry refinement method stated within it.

"There's no time to lose, let's begin now."

After grasping the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, Chu Feng took out all of his weaponry refinement treasures.

His treasures scattered all over the palace hall. As for the main item that he wanted to refine into a weapon, it was naturally that stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood, that so-called Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

That said, even though it was a stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood, as it has been refined by Grandmaster Kai Hong before, it looked like a lump of rectangular-shaped metal.

"That scrap metal..."

When Chu Feng took out all of his precious weaponry refinement treasures, not a single item caught Li Yue'er's attention. However, the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler had managed to make Li Yue'er's expression change.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

**Martial God Asura #Chapter 2630 - Incomplete
Immortal Armament - Read Martial God Asura Chapter
2630 - Incomplete Immortal Armament**

Chapter 2630 - Incomplete Immortal Armament

“Good eyesight. That is the best material that I have on me,” Chu Feng said.

“Its aura is very special. What is its origin?” Li Yue’er asked.

“It is a stone dyed with the Divine Dragon’s blood. Merely, as it is not complete, it is difficult to turn it into an Ancestral Armament,” Chu Feng said.

“You only plan to turn such a good material into an Ancestral Armament?” Li Yue’er asked in astonishment.

“Are you suggesting that I turn it into an Incomplete Immortal Armament? While this Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler is qualified, I do not have other materials to work with,” Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

After deciphering the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, Chu Feng had obtained a whole new level of understanding toward weaponry refinement techniques.

Thus, he felt that he was capable of refining an Ancestral Armament using the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler. However, if he were to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament, it would be absolutely impossible.

It wasn’t that he doubted his own weaponry refinement techniques, nor was it because he didn’t dare to attempt it. Rather, Chu Feng felt that apart from the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler, the rest of his weaponry refinement materials were simply unable to allow him to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Li Yue’er suddenly waved her sleeve. She pushed all of Chu Feng’s weaponry refinement materials into a corner and left behind only the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

Chu Feng revealed a confused expression upon seeing this.

However, before Chu Feng could question Li Yue’er’s action, Li Yue’er took out a Cosmos Sack and tossed it into the air. The next moment, countless treasures flew out from the Cosmos Sack and landed on either side of the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

Those were all weaponry refinement treasures. Furthermore, they were all very precious materials. In fact... some of those weaponry refinement materials were comparable to the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

"Wow! This girl is truly rich!"

"Chu Feng, you must capture this girl and hug onto her thighs."

At that moment, even her Lady Queen was unable to contain herself from exclaiming in admiration. In fact, even her eyes started to shine with light.

If Chu Feng did not possess any materials apart from the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler that could help him refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament, then now, he possessed enough materials to refine three Incomplete Immortal Armaments.

"Choose whatever material you want from these. Use the best among them," Li Yue'er said.

"Very well, consider it that I'm borrowing them from you. I will definitely repay you in the future."

Chu Feng did not refuse the materials. After all, he really did need them.

However, those materials were truly precious. Chu Feng could not accept them just like that.

"There's no need. That All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart of yours is over a thousand times more precious than these materials here. I am the one who owes you here," Li Yue'er said.

"That's something completely different. I said that I'm borrowing them, so I'm borrowing them," Chu Feng said.

"It will be very difficult for you to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament by yourself. Even if you are able to accomplish it, there would not be sufficient time. Let me help you. Although I can only provide assistance, it remains that I have also grasped the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart. Thus, if we are able to succeed in refining an Incomplete Immortal Armament, I would be able to benefit greatly too."

“Thus, even though I am providing these materials, it is also for my sake. You do not have to think too hard about it,” Li Yue’er said.

“I said that I am just borrowing them,” Chu Feng said determinedly.

Seeing how determined Chu Feng was, Li Yue’er started to frown. Then, she said in an annoyed manner, “Do as you wish.”

“Heh... that’s more like it,” Seeing that Li Yue’er had come to terms with him, Chu Feng smiled.

Then, he said, “My little assistant, there’s no time to delay, let us begin right away.”

Then, Chu Feng and Li Yue’er began to set up the Weaponry Refinement Grand Formation according to the methods laid out in the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

Chu Feng was in charge of setting up the spirit formation, whereas Li Yue’er assisted him.

That said, even though the two of them were joining hands, even though there were sufficient materials, even though they were able to choose the best materials to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament, it was still extremely difficult to successfully refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Chu Feng felt that they only had a fifty percent chance of success.

After all, that was an Incomplete Immortal Armament they were dealing with. Apart from Li Yue’er, only the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster possessed an Incomplete Immortal Armament in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still had to attempt it. After all, depending on the difference in the weaponry refinement’s difficulty, Chu Feng would also be able to obtain different levels of martial comprehension.

.....

Then, Chu Feng and Li Yue’er began to jointly refine the Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Although there were many materials that could compare to the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler, Chu Feng still insisted on having the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler be the main material in the refinement process.

This... was actually Li Yue'er's proposal.

Li Yue'er said that if the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was really dyed with the Divine Dragon's Blood, it would surpass the value of all the materials that she currently possessed.

If they were able to successfully forge an Incomplete Immortal Armament, then the Divine Dragon's blood in the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler might awaken.

If that were to happen, they might be able to refine a top quality Incomplete Immortal Armament.

After Chu Feng and Li Yue'er began, they spent three entire months in the refinement process.

After three months passed, the appearance of the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler did not change much. Apart from the addition of a sword hilt that it could be held with, its body was still a four-sided lump of metal.

However, the carefully-selected materials used in the refinement process were all gone. They were fused into the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

Although the appearance of the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler did not change, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er had actually succeeded in assimilating those materials into the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

Thus, the current Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was no longer the same as before. It possessed actual Immortal-level martial power.

It was only a step away from becoming an actual Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted, "Girl, hang on! We are about to succeed!"

At that moment, they had reached the most crucial moment for the weaponry refinement process. However, both Chu Feng and Li Yue'er had exhausted an enormous amount of energy over the past three months.

The current Li Yue'er was already pale and covered in sweat.

Chu Feng, on the other hand, seemed to be doing better than her. He, at the very least, was still steady and stable. However, Li Yue'er's hands were already trembling slightly.

This was the greatest fear during weaponry refinement. The reason for that was because Li Yue'er was also contributing to the continued activation of the spirit formation. As for weaponry refinement, the hands that one used to activate the spirit formation were the most crucial aspect. Even if one were to waver one's hands in the slightest, it might affect the result of the weapon.

“Snap~~~”

Sure enough, as Li Yue'er's hands trembled, a crack suddenly appeared on the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

.....

Following that, more and more cracks began to appear. Soon, cracks covered the entire body of the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

“Girl, steady yourself,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to panic.

If the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler were to shatter at such a time, their efforts would truly have been wasted.

In fact, the two of them even might receive a backlash from the failure.

“Chu Feng, my apologies, I will soon be unable to continue,” Li Yue'er said with great difficulty. Even her voice was trembling when she said those words. Her health was truly weak.

Hearing what Li Yue'er said, Chu Feng's heart immediately sunk.

After interacting with Li Yue'er, he knew that she was not someone that would easily give up.

Since she was saying something like that, it meant that she was truly unable to hold on any longer.

Right at that moment, surging spirit power suddenly emerged from Chu Feng's body. That spirit power covered the entire weaponry refinement formation.

Then, Chu Feng tightly clasped his palms and shouted, "Slow!"

Then, the spirit formation actually stopped its operation.

To be exact, it didn't stop. Instead, the speed had decreased. Chu Feng had forcibly decreased the speed of the weaponry refinement formation's operation.

"Girl, help me out. Move the assistant's formation core onto my body," Chu Feng said.

"No, Chu Feng... it will pose a danger to your life if I am to do that," Hearing that, Li Yue'er immediately revealed an expression of panic.

"Chu Feng, you can't make such a rash decision. Are you planning to throw away your life for cultivation?" Compared to Li Yue'er, Eggy was even more panicked

The two of them both knew very well that both Chu Feng's stamina and spirit power had been greatly consumed. They were on the verge of being completely exhausted.

In such a situation, it was already extremely difficult for him to persist as the main operator of the formation.

If he were to take on the responsibility of the assistant operator too, the burden upon his body would be so great that Chu Feng would not be able to persist. Because of that, his body would be wrung dry by the spirit formation, and he would die from over-exhaustion.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2631 - Moment Of Life and Death

“Listen to me, I am still able to persist,” Chu Feng said.

“No,” Li Yue’er refused.

“I cannot afford to fail this time around. I must succeed. Girl... listen to me, help me,” Chu Feng said anxiously.

Although Chu Feng knew from the very start that they only had a fifty percent chance of success, Chu Feng began the weaponry refinement process with an absolute determination to succeed.

He must increase his cultivation immediately. Only by increasing his cultivation would he be able to contend against the Infant Soul Sect.

Else, he feared that if the Infant Soul Sect’s plot were to succeed, they would move on to take care of Ying Mingchao and the others.

“Do it! I am unable to persist for much longer!” Chu Feng shouted.

At that moment, Li Yue’er revealed a very difficult expression. However, after a moment of mental conflict, she still ended up carefully transferring the formation core on her body to Chu Feng’s body.

Then, she moved out of the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation.

After exiting the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation, Li Yue’er sat powerlessly onto the ground. She was truly exhausted.

However, she had no time to rest, as she immediately cast her worried gaze toward Chu Feng.

... she had exited the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation.

If the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was supported by both her and Chu Feng earlier, then it was now completely supported by Chu Feng alone. Thus, all of the pressure was placed onto Chu Feng alone.

“Eeeahhh~~~~”

After Li Yue'er exited the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation, Chu Feng suddenly shouted. The next moment, boundless spirit power surged out of Chu Feng's body and fused with the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation.

"Chu Feng, have you gone insane?! How could you act this recklessly?!"

Seeing this scene, Her Lady Queen was immediately worried.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was attempting to fuse with the grand formation.

This sort of fusion would assist Chu Feng's control over the grand formation. With that, it would save a lot of power on Chu Feng's end.

In the current situation where Chu Feng's power was about to be completely exhausted, using this sort of method was indeed something feasible.

However, upon using this sort of method, Chu Feng's life and death would be linked with the grand spirit formation.

If Chu Feng wanted to live now, there was only a single way. That is, he must successfully refine the Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Else... only death would await him.

From then on, Chu Feng would not be able to stop even if he wanted to. The reason for that was because the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation would automatically extract spirit power from Chu Feng's body without the need for Chu Feng's control at all.

"Eeeahhh~~~"

As the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation continued to operate, it started to forcibly extract spirit power from Chu Feng.

In such a situation, Chu Feng started to endure immense pressure. That immense pressure brought pain to Chu Feng and caused him to scream nonstop.

He was risking his life. He was using the final bits of strength he had to complete the grand formation.

If he didn't succeed, he would die!!!

With Chu Feng's full effort, the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation started to blossom with dazzling light.

The Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation started to tremble. The power within the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was trembling. In fact, even the entire palace was trembling.

The Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was shrinking. It was concentrating on the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

At that moment, both Li Yue'er who was outside of the grand formation and Eggy who was within Chu Feng started to tightly clench their fists. They were extremely nervous.

The reason for that was because if the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was to fuse into the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler, it would mean success.

If it didn't, then it was a failure.

That said, what they were worried about the most was whether or not Chu Feng would be able to hold on.

Chu Feng was operating the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation with his life. Thus, there would only be two possibilities.

Either Chu Feng would be able to successfully complete the Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Or his power would not be able to persist, and he would exhaust all of his power and die of exhaustion. As for the Incomplete Immortal Armament, it would also end in a failure.

In such a critical situation, time seemed to be moving extremely slowly.

That said, neither Li Yue'er or Eggy had the heart to concern themselves with any of that. The two of them only hoped that the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation would be able to concentrate on the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler sooner.

"Almost, it's about to succeed. Chu Feng, hold on, hold on! It's halfway there!"

Finally, the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation had condensed halfway onto the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler. However, at that time, it suddenly stopped.

At such a time, neither Li Yue'er and Eggy were able to even open their mouths to encourage Chu Feng to continue.

They both felt that Chu Feng was unable to continue. However, it was already too late to give up.

Chu Feng could only succeed and not fail.

"Eggy, my apologies, I'm afraid that I'll be going first."

At the moment when worry filled the air, Eggy heard Chu Feng's voice. Merely, Chu Feng's voice was incomparably weak. It was as if his life was already hollowed out. It was as if he was already dead.

"Fool, clench your teeth and persist. How could you give up at a time like this?"

Her Lady Queen was so worried that she started shedding tears. This was a moment of life and death. At such a time, Chu Feng could decide upon his death with merely a thought.

"My head is already empty. My soul is already empty. I have completely exhausted all the spirit power within me. I am unable to support this Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation anymore," Chu Feng said with his weak voice.

"If you are to die at a time like this, then what about your mother?! Your mother went through all the effort to seal this Queen in your body for your sake! If you are to tumble here, it will be truly humiliating!"

"Your mother is a grand world spiritist who is capable of forcing her way into our Asura Spirit World and forcibly capture us! How could you be this weak?! How could you fail to control a mere Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation?!" Her Lady Queen shouted angrily.

It was not that she was truly angry at Chu Feng for failing. Merely, she wanted to encourage Chu Feng to persist through this ordeal.

If Chu Feng was to die from over exhaustion of his spirit power, Her Lady Queen would not be implicated by his death. She would continue to survive.

However, to Her Lady Queen, her life and death was not what mattered to her. She didn't want Chu Feng to die. She didn't want him to die at a place like this.

"Mother?" Hearing that word, Chu Feng's heart suddenly trembled.

At the moment when he thought of his mother, Chu Feng's consciousness suddenly grew fuzzy. Before him was no longer that Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation that was forcibly extracting his spirit power.

Instead, a vast expanse of whiteness filled his eyes. Faintly, he saw a figure. It should be a woman, a woman with fluttering long hair.

That figure was very close to him. She was right before him. However, Chu Feng was unable to clearly see her face.

No matter how hard he tried, he was unable to see it clearly. He could only feel that woman was gently caressing his head with her hand.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if the softest and warmest hand in the world was caressing him.

An indescribable sensation exploded from his heart and filled his body.

At that Moment, Chu Feng wished to speak. However, he was unable to speak. He was unable to express himself.

Right at that moment, an incomparably gentle voice sounded by his ears.

"Feng'er, it's all my fault. I am unable to be by your side and protect you."

"I do not hope that you will forgive me. I merely wish that you will be able to stay strong and live on."

After that voice said those words, the figure before him started to scatter away. The scene before Chu Feng returned to that of the palace hall. He was before that Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation again.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was able to sense that boundless spirit power had emerged from his completely dried up body.

It was a sensation like a volcanic eruption. He was unable to stop it at all.

“Heeaaahhh!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. Then, boundless spirit power burst forth from his body.

The spirit power was so strong that it actually brought forth waves of wind. In an instant, it covered the entire palace hall and blew everything all over the place.

Even Li Yue'er was blown back by the wind. The wind was so strong that she found it difficult to open her eyes.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2632 - Mother's Bloodline

“This spirit power, how could it be this strong?”

At that moment, Li Yue'er had an astonished expression on her face.

She felt that even if Chu Feng's stamina and spirit power weren't completely exhausted, even if his state of being was the same as before, he would not possess such overwhelming spirit power.

Although this burst of spirit power was still Immortal-level spirit power, the sensation that she felt from it had already surpassed that of Immortal-level spirit power.

It was an extremely pure and grand spirit power.

If spirit power of the same level possessed a class difference, then the spirit power that Chu Feng emitted right now would be the noble among nobles, the king among kings.

Finally, the spirit power that rushed forth like a volcanic eruption from Chu Feng's body started to gradually vanish.

As Chu Feng's overwhelming spirit power vanished, Li Yue'er immediately revealed an overjoyed expression.

The reason for that was because the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was right before Chu Feng. However, the aura that it emitted was completely different from before.

It was no longer a lump of scrap metal. Instead, it was emitting intense Immortal-level martial power. It had become an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

"Chu Feng, you've succeeded. You managed to successfully refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament!" At that moment, Her Lady Queen was also overjoyed.

One must know that Chu Feng was on the verge of dying earlier. There was a very high chance that he could have died.

However, in the end, he had succeeded. This sort of success was simply too difficult. As such, how could Her Lady Queen not feel joy?

"Its appearance is a bit ugly. Before fusing the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation with it, I should've fixed its appearance. However, I was so anxious on fusing them that I decided to not bother with its appearance for the sake of saving my spirit power," Chu Feng said with a light laugh.

The Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was indeed a bit ugly. Although it now had a sword hilt that Chu Feng could hold onto, its appearance was still that of a block of metal.

Most importantly, it was even uglier than before it went through the whole weaponry refinement process. Due to Li Yue'er's mistake, the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler now had many cracks. It made it resemble a shattered iron block.

If it wasn't for the fact that it was emitting Immortal-level martial power, no one would think that it was an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

"It's all my fault. If I had been able to hold on, it wouldn't have been like this," said Li Yue'er with self-blame.

"It's alright. Didn't we still succeed? If it hadn't been for you, I wouldn't have been able to persist either. Refining an Incomplete Immortal Armament is simply too hard," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, what was that spirit power you emitted earlier?" Li Yue'er asked.

Li Yue'er was not someone fond of meddling in others' business. However, she was truly too curious as to what happened earlier.

The reason for that was because the spirit power Chu Feng had emitted earlier gave her a sensation that she had never felt before.

If she had to describe it, then it was a sensation of a ruler overlooking the world.

As a fellow world spiritist, she wanted to know exactly where Chu Feng's spirit power came from.

"Earlier? Was there something different about it?" Chu Feng was confused by Li Yue'er's question.

Earlier, he had merely felt that boundless spirit power had emerged from his dried up body.

Thus, he used that spirit power to operate the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation. Apart from that, he didn't do anything different.

"It was completely different," Li Yue'er said.

"That's right, your spirit power earlier was simply frighteningly powerful," Her Lady Queen said.

"Buzz~~~"

With a thought, Chu Feng unleashed his spirit power from his body.

"No, this is not the same spirit power you used earlier," Li Yue'er shook her head.

The spirit power Chu Feng unleashed this time around was the same as the spirit power that he always had. Although it was still Immortal-level spirit power, it simply did not possess the majestic grandeur of a ruler overlooking the world like earlier.

"I don't know what's going on. This is the spirit power that I can unleash," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng did not know what sort of spirit power he had managed to unleash earlier to astonish Li Yue'er and Her Lady Queen like that.

However... this was the sort of spirit power that he could unleash at that moment. It was the same as it had always been.

Hearing such a response from Chu Feng, Li Yue'er stopped inquiring further. She felt that Chu Feng was not lying to her, and would most likely not lie to her.

"You really don't know what happened? Why would you burst out with such a powerful spirit power for no reason at all?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"Was it really that powerful?" Chu Feng asked.

As that matter was, after all, something that had happened to him, Chu Feng was also very curious.

"It's wrong to say that it was powerful. After all, it was still Immortal-level spirit power. However, the feeling was completely different. Regardless, it was very powerful," Her Lady Queen said.

"Eggy, did you not see what I saw earlier?" Chu Feng asked.

"What? What did you see?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"It seems that you didn't see it," Chu Feng said.

"Exactly what did you see? Tell me. You damned bastard, don't tease this Queen, okay? Tell me, tell me, tell me, tell me, tell me..." Her Lady Queen urged with incomparable curiosity.

"I seemed to have seen my mother," Chu Feng said.

"Mother? What is going on? Where did you see her? Your mother came to find you?" Her Lady Queen grew even more curious upon hearing that.

"It should be from when I was an infant. That sensation seemed more like a memory," Chu Feng said.

"Did you manage to awaken some sort of power after seeing your mother? That's very possible. After all, your mother's world spirit techniques were extremely powerful. You should have inherited her bloodline and talent."

“Merely... it’s possible that your bloodline and power have not awakened completely yet. As for earlier... it was awakened after you recalled the memory of your mother.”

“Although it only managed to awaken for an instant, it is very likely that such was the case earlier,” Her Lady Queen analyzed.

“It might be it,” Chu Feng did not dare to be certain of anything. He was only concerned with completing the Incomplete Immortal Armament earlier, and had truly not paid attention to his spirit power.

“It would be truly great if that is the case.”

Her Lady Queen was overjoyed. She had felt Chu Feng’s enormous spirit power. Because of how extraordinary that spirit power was, Her Lady Queen hoped that Chu Feng would continue to have that spirit power in the future.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, what does your mother look like? As long as you know her appearance, you will be able to go and find her in the future,” Her Lady Queen said.

“I wasn’t able to see it clearly. However, I feel like my mother must be a great beauty,” Chu Feng said confidently. Although he had only managed to see a vague image, Chu Feng felt that his mother possessed a lot of class, and was a great beauty.

That was understandable. Likely, to everyone, their mother would be a very beautiful person.

“However... I remember her voice. It was extremely gentle,” Chu Feng felt a great amount of warmth as he recalled that voice.

Chu Feng felt intoxicated with that sensation of warmth. He did not want to let go of it.

He felt that perhaps this was the feeling of motherly love.

“It is truly a pity that you didn’t manage to see her appearance clearly. However, being able to hear her voice should be a very happy thing for you, no?” Her Lady Queen said.

Being with Chu Feng for so long, Her Lady Queen knew very well how much Chu Feng wanted to see his mother.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded. He was still remembering the scene that he had seen.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng,” Right at that moment, Li Yue’er’s voice suddenly sounded.

“What’s wrong with you? I’m asking you a question, why aren’t you answering me?” Li Yue’er asked Chu Feng.

“Eh...” Chu Feng felt embarrassed. He was immersed in his memory, and had forgotten where he was. He had actually failed to hear Li Yue’er’s voice.

“You might be overly exhausted. Take a seat and have some rest,” Li Yue’er said.

“Girl, you don’t have to worry about me. You should take care of yourself first,” Chu Feng supported Li Yue’er with his arms and brought her to a seat.

Then, he began to set up a spirit formation to help her recover her spirit power.

Li Yue’er’s face was deathly pale. Her clothes were soaked with sweat. Even though she was a powerful little chili hot pepper, she currently resembled a weak woman, powerless to even truss a chicken.

Chu Feng felt very bad about it. If it wasn’t for helping him with his weaponry refinement, Li Yue’er would not have exhausted herself to such a state.

“Stop, your situation is worse than mine,” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually helping her recover her spirit power, Li Yue’er immediately urged him to stop.

“It’s alright, I am fine,” Chu Feng smiled and continued to help Li Yue’er recover.

After a short period of time, Li Yue’er managed to recover a lot. Although her complexion was still pale, she was at least spirited.

As for Chu Feng, he appeared to be completely fine. Compared to when they were still operating the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation, Chu Feng looked like a completely different person.

“How could you suddenly recover this quickly?”

“Could it be that there is some sort of hidden power within you?” Li Yue’er was still curious.

She knew very well that Chu Feng’s recovery should be related to that overwhelming spirit power.

Ever since that spirit power emerged, Chu Feng became incomparably spirited. It was as if he had been reborn.

If Chu Feng had no idea what was going on still, then there could only be one possibility to explain it. That is, there was still a hidden power within Chu Feng’s body. That power was something that Chu Feng possessed no knowledge of, and did not know how to utilize.

“That would be great if that is the case,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he said to Li Yue’er, “Oh that’s right, what is it that you wanted to ask me earlier?”

“I wanted to ask you how much progress you’ve managed to obtain from this weaponry refinement?” Li Yue’er asked.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2633 - Wang Qiang’s Awakening

“Although you weren’t able to persist until the end, you should’ve also gained some harvest from this weaponry refinement process, no?” Chu Feng asked Li Yue’er.

Li Yue’er had directly asked him how much progress he gained from the completion of the weaponry refinement process, and not whether or not he had managed to obtain any harvest from it.

Chu Feng felt that Li Yue’er asked that because she had already obtained martial comprehension from the weaponry refinement process.

Since even she had managed to obtain martial comprehension, it would mean that Chu Feng must've definitely obtained martial comprehension too. Moreover, the martial comprehension he should've received should be greater than hers.

"Indeed, I have obtained martial comprehension. However, due to the fact that I was unable to persist through the latter half, due to my spirit power being insufficient, what I managed to comprehend grew less and less. Thus, it was not ideal."

"What about you? You should've managed to gain quite a harvest, no?" Li Yue'er asked.

"The most crucial aspect in weaponry refinement would be the final step. However, due to the fact that my stamina was insufficient, I had neglected the comprehension method from the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart during the crucial moment so that I could successfully craft the Incomplete Immortal Armament."

"However, even with that being the case, I still received quite a harvest. I think... I can attempt to breakthrough to the True Immortal realm now," Chu Feng said.

"When do you plan to begin?" Li Yue'er asked.

"We have spent three entire months in the weaponry refinement process. Regardless of what sort of conspiracy the Infant Soul Sect might have, they will most definitely be on the verge of accomplishing it. Time is urgent, I must immediately enter closed-door training," Chu Feng said.

"Right now?" Li Yue'er was very shocked. She was worried about Chu Feng's health.

However, as she saw how spirited Chu Feng appeared, she felt that her worries were somewhat unnecessary. Chu Feng's current state could be said to be extremely good.

No matter how she looked at it, he did not resemble someone whose body was completely exhausted and on the verge of dying of exhaustion earlier.

After declaring that he would enter closed-door training, Chu Feng immediately did so. However, Li Yue'er knew that Martial Ancestors would

definitely cause quite a commotion when breaking through to the True Immortal realm.

As for this commotion, it would differ according to the Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique that they trained in.

When Li Yue'er reached her breakthrough, she had made quite an enormous commotion. As for Chu Feng, he trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Thus, she felt that the commotion that Chu Feng would cause might be unprecedented.

For the sake of not catching the attention of the Infant Soul Sect and having them come and affect Chu Feng's breakthrough, Li Yue'er not only took out the umbrella that was able to block Heavenly Lightning, but she even deliberately prepared many other treasures for Chu Feng.

Not only were those treasures capable of greatly lessening the commotion in the sky, but they were also able to decrease the fierceness of the Divine Tribulation's Lightnings so that Chu Feng would have a greater certainty of success in his breakthrough attempt.

At the moment when Chu Feng entered closed-door training, a large group of people were gathered in a certain ancient forest somewhere in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

This group of people were Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong and the others.

All of them were gathered there. The previously seriously-injured Ying Mingchao was vigorous and lively now. He had been completely healed from his injury that day.

However, at that moment, they all seemed to be awaiting something.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, the earth trembled, and trees began to rock back and forth violently. Soon, as the trembling grew even more intense, the enormous trees that reached the sky started to topple one after another.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. Then, a figure flew out from beneath the ground and arrived in midair.

That person possessed an extremely powerful aura. It was that of a rank two True Immortal.

As for that person, he was actually Wang Qiang.

“Husband, you’ve succeeded?”

Overjoyed, Zhao Hong immediately soared into the sky upon seeing Wang Qiang. She arrived beside him.

“W-wife, I’ve s-successfully made my b-breakthrough. O-on t-top of that, I have the p-power of my Divine Body. T-that cur, that Infant Soul Sect’s S-Sectmaster, will not be able to-to live for much longer.”

“L-Let us g-go and avenge my b-brother now,” Wang Qiang said.

As it turned out, Zhao Hong and the others had deliberately returned to Hero City after escaping from the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster so that they could bring the still-sleeping Wang Qiang away.

Not long after they brought Wang Qiang away, Wang Qiang emerged from the spirit formation that surrounded him. He had successfully fused with the power of his Divine Body.

After obtaining Divine Power, Wang Qiang’s cultivation had directly increased to that of a rank one True Immortal. Furthermore, his cultivation was at the peak of rank one True Immortal.

After the battle that day, there was no more news of Chu Feng. No one knew whether he was dead or alive. As such, everyone became very worried for him.

This was especially true after they verified that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was actually alive and healthy. With that, they became even more certain that a disaster might’ve happened to Chu Feng.

That said, regardless of whether Chu Feng was alive or dead, it remained that the main culprit was the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Thus, Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and the others had been making plans on how to take care of the Infant Soul Sect the entire time.

Unfortunately, even if Ying Mingchao were to recover from his injuries, he would not be a match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

As such, Wang Qiang proposed to enter closed-door training. The reason for that was because after he fused with his Divine Power, not only did his cultivation reach rank one True Immortal, but even his comprehension ability had increased.

As a peak rank one True Immortal, Wang Qiang felt that he would be able to reach a breakthrough to rank two True Immortal.

Thus, he entered closed-door training, and managed to successfully break through to rank two True Immortal today.

"Little brother Wang Qiang, excuse me for speaking frankly. Even though your cultivation has increased to rank two True Immortal, you might still not necessarily be a match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. The reason for that is because he not only possesses the assistance of the Infant Soul Demonic Technique, but he also possesses an Incomplete Immortal Armament," Ying Mingchao said.

"I do not know exactly how powerful an Incomplete Immortal Armament might be, but the power of my Divine Body is most definitely not something a mere demonic technique could contend against."

As Wang Qiang spoke, the weather started to change. In the sky rolling with black clouds appeared the image of four extremely fierce-looking ferocious beasts.

To be exact, those were four demonic beasts. The reason for that was because the aura they were emitting was ice-cold and dark.

That said, regardless of what those demonic beasts were, when Wang Qiang unleashed them, an extremely powerful aura descended from the sky and covered the entire region.

"This aura."

Upon sensing that aura, not to mention the others, even Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, who were both rank two True Immortals, revealed serious expressions.

Wang Qiang had been saying that his power was Divine Power the entire time. However, Divine Power was generally filled with auras of righteousness. Even Ying Mingchao's ferocious beast-like Divine Power emitted a righteous aura.

However, Wang Qiang's Divine Power was emitting a concentrated aura of darkness. To be exact... his Divine Power's aura resembled the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's dark black gaseous flames, or the Evil God Sword's crimson gaseous flames.

Such a Divine Power was truly rare. It could be said that Wang Qiang's Divine Power was strange.

That said, regardless of how strange Wang Qiang's Divine Power might be, it remained that his aura was extremely powerful. He was infinitely close to reaching rank three True Immortal. With such overwhelming power, it might really be able to contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Mingchao, Wang Qiang's battle power is this strong. If we are to assist him using the grand formation, he might really be able to defeat the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster," Zi Xunyi said.

"N-n-no, r-regardless of whether or not i-it is feasible, I m-must still g-go and s-settle the d-debt with the Infant Soul Sect's S-Sectmaster today."

"I a-am un-unable to wait any l-longer. I must g-go and fetch his head to a-avenge my b-br-brother," Wang Qiang spoke with killing intent all over his face.

"Very well. Brothers, let us kill our way into the Infant Soul Sect today and avenge Brother Chu Feng!!!" Ying Mingchao shouted loudly.

"Avenge Brother Chu Feng!"

"Avenge Brother Chu Feng!!!"

"Avenge Brother Chu Feng!!!"

The next moment, the people from the allied army all started to shout with raised arms.

Their voices resonated through the sky like thunder. They were most definitely not shouting those words like a slogan.

They were all going to battle with death in mind. They were entering the battle with the determination to avenge Chu Feng. They did not know whether or not they would be able to survive.

Although the current allied army was scattered and much less imposing than before, these people who remained were a group of true warriors.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2634 - He Likes You

The palace that Li Yue'er and Chu Feng were in was actually a treasure that Li Yue'er possessed.

While the interior of the palace might appear to be glorious and dazzling, the two of them were actually only inside a piece of stone.

That piece of stone was placed into a mountain by Li Yue'er. As such, it looked very unremarkable.

No one would've ever imagined that that stone was actually a treasure. Furthermore, hidden in that treasure were two cultivation geniuses, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er.

However, at that moment, dazzling nine-colored lightning appeared over that desolate mountain.

The nine-colored lightning rushed forth from deep within the sky and covered the entire sky.

That lightning was galloping, raging and fluttering in an unpredictable manner.

Sometimes, the lightning would look like tens of thousands of dragons flying in the sky. At other times, the lightning would look like giant hands tearing the sky apart.

In short, such a scene was truly spectacular and intimidating.

“Heavens! What is going on with that?!”

The people that lived in the area that possessed ambitions of becoming stronger had all left for the Infant Soul Sect.

All those who remained were people without ambitions or those with extremely weak talent for martial cultivation.

Those people could be said to be the bottom rung of society who lived lives similar to those of ordinary commoners.

Moreover, that place was a desolate place without any major powers around. Thus, powerful experts generally did not pass by.

As such, how could people like them possibly have witnessed something so spectacular. At that moment, practically everyone stopped the work they were doing.

Their attention was deeply caught by the lightning that covered the sky like divine dragons.

There were those among them that started to cheer, and those among them that started to scream. There were those who were excited, and those who started to panic.

However, the great majority of people were gasping in amazement at the scene.

“This should be caused by the breakthrough of someone with a Heavenly Bloodline, right?”

“I have heard that those with Divine Bloodlines will give rise to Divine Lightning during their breakthroughs,” A youngster said.

An old man that seemed to possess some expanse of knowledge said, “Indeed, the Nine-Colored Divine Lightning is indeed the special characteristic of Divine Bloodlines. I have witnessed those with Heavenly Bloodlines reaching breakthroughs in cultivation, but never have I witnessed such a spectacular sight. An abnormal sight like this simply does not resemble the

breakthrough in cultivation of a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. Could it be... that it is the descent of a natural disaster?”

“The descent of a natural disaster?”

“Heavens! Why would a natural disaster suddenly arrive upon us? If I had known this would’ve happened, I should’ve followed my second son and left for the Infant Soul Sect.”

The less knowledgeable someone was, the more slow-witted they were. The more slow-witted someone was, the more timid they were. Upon hearing that this might be the arrival of a natural disaster, the people all began to panic. They began to tidy up their possessions and started to flee while dragging their entire family with them.

However, the Divine Lightning simply covered too vast of an area. Furthermore, those people possessed limited cultivation. Thus, no matter how they tried to escape, no matter how far they fled, they were still underneath the lightning-filled sky.

They felt as if they would not be able to escape from the grasp of the Divine Lightning no matter how hard they tried to escape.

“We’re done for, we’re done for now. That frightening lightning seems to have covered the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. This is truly a calamity. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will perish.”

In this sort of situation, many people felt that they would not be able to escape from the impending calamity, and started to weep in fear.

This was especially true after the thunder grew more and more resounding. Even the earth itself started to rumble and tremble nonstop. At that moment, the people felt that they would not be able to escape from the calamity.

In fact, it was not only those ignorant commoners that were looking at the lightning-filled sky.

Within the palace, Li Yue’er also had her head raised upward.

For a world spiritist of her level, the special palace hall was simply unable to obstruct her line of sight.

Thus, at that moment, what she saw was not the top of the palace hall. Instead, it was the vast sky, as well as the nine-colored lightning galloping high in the sky.

It was precisely because Li Yue'er was able to see the spectacular sight high in the sky outside that she revealed deep worry in her eyes.

"The lightning this time is much more frightening than last time. Will Chu Feng be able to withstand it?"

"Although the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is powerful, its tribulation lightning is truly frightening."

"That is something that ordinary individuals will not be able to withstand," Li Yue'er said.

She was present during Chu Feng's last breakthrough in cultivation. The Divine Tribulation's lightning that appeared last time had already astonished her.

However, the lightning this time around was several times more ferocious than last time. Li Yue'er was afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to withstand the torment of the lightning.

Her worries were not unfounded. She felt that even she herself would not be able to withstand such ferocious lightning.

"Little girl, don't be too worried. Chu Feng will definitely succeed," Suddenly, a sweet-sounding voice was heard.

Upon hearing that voice, Li Yue'er immediately turned her gaze toward the direction of the voice.

At that location was a table. A young girl wearing a black short skirt was sitting on the table.

That girl was extremely beautiful. As she sat on the table, she moved her snow-white and slender beautiful legs back and forth in a hyperactive and mischievous manner.

As for that girl, she was naturally Her Lady Queen Eggy.

Her Lady Queen had asked Chu Feng to let her out so that she could watch from the outside while Chu Feng entered closed-door training.

Thus, Chu Feng had opened his world spirit gate and released Her Lady Queen before he attempted to make his breakthrough.

“Little girl?” Being addressed in such a manner by Her Lady Queen, Li Yue’er took a careful glance at Her Lady Queen. Then, she said, “Shouldn’t you be the little girl?”

Over the years, Chu Feng had grown from a youngster to a robust young man.

However, Her Lady Queen’s appearance had remained that of a young girl. There was not the slightest change in her appearance at all.

Even though Li Yue’er’s appearance was also that of a young woman, when compared to Her Lady Queen, Her Lady Queen seemed to be even younger.

“Rude little girl, watch how you talk to this Queen. Address me as big sister,” Eggy said with a beaming smile.

Her Lady Queen had always been a proud and haughty person. For many people, they would not be able to enter her discerning eyes, and she would refuse to even acknowledge their existence.

However, Her Lady Queen was quite fond of Li Yue’er. Thus, Her Lady Queen was actually quite genial when speaking with her.

However, due to the fact that Her Lady Queen truly looked too young and possessed an exceptionally beautiful face, Li Yue’er felt that she did not resemble someone amiable and cute. Instead, she resembled more of a mischievous little beauty playing around with her.

Thus, Li Yue’er did not continue to argue the issue of seniority with Her Lady Queen.

“How are you so certain that Chu Feng will be able to successfully make this breakthrough? Right now, the sight outside is truly frightening.”

“It is truly the sight of doomsday’s arrival. The way I see it, no one would be able to withstand that lightning,” Li Yue’er said.

“I can’t be certain. However, I know that Chu Feng will be able to persist through it.”

“Actually, according to the way this Queen sees it, no matter how overwhelmingly powerful one’s Self-Punishment Mysterious Technique might be, they will only be testing one’s spirit and endurance. They will not destroy the cultivator’s body, even with their overwhelming power.”

“As for Chu Feng, his spirit is very strong, and his endurance is also extremely strong. Thus, according to my understanding of him, no matter how ferocious that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique might be, he will still be able to overcome it in the end.”

“To Chu Feng, what he needs the most is to reach the junction that will allow him to reach a breakthrough in cultivation. The most crucial aspect for him is to attain greater comprehension towards the way of martial cultivation.”

“As for the so-called Divine Tribulation’s Lightning, as long as he is able to draw upon it, it will mean that he has successfully reached a breakthrough in cultivation,” Her Lady Queen said.

“You are truly confident in him. However, you are a world spirit, and you do not know about the profoundness of the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques, nor do you know how frightening the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques are.”

“In short, the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques are not as simple as you imagine them to be,” Li Yue’er said.

“Oh?”

Hearing Li Yue’er saying such words, Her Lady Queen smiled sweetly. She did not try to argue with Li Yue’er.

After all, Li Yue’er was someone trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique. She had personally experienced the torment from the Heavenly Tribulation’s Lightning many times before. Thus, she most likely possessed her own impressions of the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques.

That said, regardless, Her Lady Queen still believed in Chu Feng. She felt that he would be able to endure the torment from the Divine Tribulation's Lightning.

Actually, what Li Yue'er said was very true. Her Lady Queen was merely confident in Chu Feng.

"Little girl, this Queen has a question for you," Her Lady Queen said.

"What is it?" Li Yue'er asked.

"Do you have someone that you like?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"No," Li Yue'er answered.

"Then is there someone that likes you?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"No," Li Yue'er answered.

"In that case, you do not have a lover, nor do you have a fiance?" Her Lady Queen asked.

Li Yue'er's expression changed slightly upon hearing that question. She asked, "What do you mean?"

"What do you think about Chu Feng?" Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous smile.

"What do you mean, what do I think?" Li Yue'er was confused.

"Chu Feng has told me that he likes you," Her Lady Queen said.

"Ah?" Li Yue'er was immediately stunned upon hearing those words. Evidently, she was caught unprepared.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Although Li Yue'er was caught unprepared by Her Lady Queen's words, she was only surprised momentarily.

Soon, she adjusted her state of mind and asked, "And what of it?"

“I can tell that you have quite a decent opinion of that boy Chu Feng. Why don't you consider being with him? Actually, Chu Feng is quite a decent guy.”

“Furthermore, let me tell you this, Chu Feng's parents are both extraordinary individuals. If you are to marry him, you will be able to have people back you in the future,” Her Lady Queen said.

“You're overthinking things. I merely consider him to be my friend. Furthermore, the way I see it, he only considers me his friend too,” Li Yue'er said.

“Friends can become lovers too. How about... you confess your love to him when he wakes up?”

“That boy Chu Feng is shy, and finds it embarrassing to confess to you. As such, he could only secretly tell me about it.”

“But you're different. You're a woman. As the saying goes, for a man to woo a woman, a mountain stands between them, for a woman to woo a man, a layer of muslin stands before them.”

“If you are to confess, the marriage between the two of you will be sealed,” Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous laugh.

“Nonsense,” Li Yue'er was a smart person. She soon realized that Her Lady Queen was messing with her.

Thus, after she cast a side-eye at Her Lady Queen, she turned her gaze towards the sky again.

After that, Li Yue'er completely ignored Her Lady Queen regardless of what she said.

However, Her Lady Queen's attitude toward Li Yue'er was extremely good. She was actually urging Li Yue'er nonstop.

Although Li Yue'er was ignoring her, she continued to stand right before her and urge her.

Li Yue'er was truly unable to endure Her Lady Queen's endless pestering. Thus, she said to Her Lady Queen, “In that case, why don't you be with Chu Feng?”

“Little girl, this Queen is a world spirit, and Chu Feng is a world spiritist. How could I be together with him? That would be going against the natural order of things,” Her Lady Queen said.

“But Chu Feng told me that he likes you,” Li Yue’er said.

“Nonsense. I know everything he sees and hears. How come I don’t remember him saying something like that to you?” Her Lady Queen had an expression of disbelief.

Li Yue’er did not say anything.

Seeing that Li Yue’er had grown quiet, Her Lady Queen became immensely proud.

“Little one, trying to use this trick against this Queen? Did you think this Queen is that easily deceived? Little girl, compared to this Queen, you are still very inexperienced.”

“It’s his gaze that told me that,” Li Yue’er said.

“What?” Her Lady Queen’s eyes’ shifted. She revealed a surprised expression.

Gaze? How could one’s gaze speak?

“I managed to tell that he likes you from the way he looks at you,” Li Yue’er said to Her Lady Queen with a very serious tone.

“Yo, I really wasn’t able to tell that, little girl, you are truly one to blabber nonsense,” Her Lady Queen said.

“It’s up to you whether or not you believe me,” Li Yue’er said.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a sudden ear-piercing rumble was heard.

In an instant, the nine-colored lightning gathered together, forming an enormous nine-colored dragon. With frightening oppressive might and an ear-piercing roar, it struck down from the ninth heaven. It was aimed straight at Chu Feng.

“Zzzzzz~~~~”

The next moment, the entire palace was covered by nine-colored lightning.

“This...”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen’s expression also changed enormously. Deep worry filled her eyes.

Being inside the Divine Tribulation’s lightning, she was able to sense with greater certainty how overwhelmingly powerful that Divine Tribulation’s lightning was. Sure enough, the lightning this time was stronger than all the lightning before.

Even though the lightning did not attack Her Lady Queen and Li Yue’er at all, they began to violently attack Chu Feng.

Their appearance simply seemed as if they wanted to rip Chu Feng apart alive.

When in such a situation, Chu Feng’s expression immediately became distorted and pain filled his face.

Even though Her Lady Queen was filled with confidence toward Chu Feng, she was still worried for him after seeing what he was going through.

The reason for that was because the lightning this time was truly much fiercer than every other lightning Chu Feng had experienced while making a breakthrough.

Soon, Chu Feng’s flesh started to tear. He was being torn apart and burned away by the lightning. He was being charred black like burned coal. Not only was his flesh changed beyond recognition, but it was also steaming.

“Eeeahhh~~~”

Seemingly unable to tolerate the pain, Chu Feng started to scream hysterically. His voice was truly tragic.

“Chu Feng,” Her Lady Queen was unable to stand by upon seeing this scene.

However, although she wanted to rush toward Chu Feng, her arm was grabbed by Li Yue’er. Li Yue’er had stopped her.

“Do not disturb him. His tribulation’s lightning is completely different from all others. If his attention is to be disturbed, he might end up dying on the spot,” Li Yue’er said.

After hearing what Li Yue’er said, Her Lady Queen recalled Chu Feng telling her that the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would bring about Divine level Tribulation. When the Divine Tribulation’s lightning arrives, he would have to either endure through the tribulation or die.

If he were to fail, he would simply die.

“Is there any way to help him?” Her Lady Queen asked Li Yue’er.

She was truly panicking. Even though she was generally a calm and composed individual, Her Lady Queen would turn into a completely different person when it concerned Chu Feng’s life and death.

She recalled that Li Yue’er had trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique and possessed a vast amount of knowledge. Perhaps she might know of a way to help Chu Feng.

“No, this Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is too powerful. The treasures that I’ve deployed for Chu Feng have all unleashed their effects already.”

“With such a ferocious Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, there is no one who can help him. As to whether or not he will be able to successfully reach a breakthrough, he can only rely on himself,” Li Yue’er said.

Her Lady Queen grew even more worried upon hearing those words. However, because she was afraid of affecting Chu Feng, she grew even quieter.

Fortunately, the overwhelming Divine Tribulation’s lightning did not persist for a long time. Soon, the intensity of the ferocious lightning began to die down.

“Don’t worry, he has managed to endure it,” Li Yue’er said.

“You’re certain of that?” Her Lady Queen asked. Even though the lightning’s intensity was decreasing, it remained that the remaining lightning was still tormenting Chu Feng. Chu Feng still had a painful expression on his face.

“It seems that you’re not that confident in him either. However, that’s understandable. The more one loves a person, the more one will be concerned for that person. The more one is concerned for someone, the more one will worry,” Li Yue’er said to Her Lady Queen with a smile on her face.

That girl was actually ridiculing Her Lady Queen. However, Her Lady Queen had no heart to pay attention to her. At that moment, only concern for Chu Feng’s safety filled Her Lady Queen’s eyes.

Actually, with merely this... what Li Yue’er said was actually correct.

At that moment, it was as Li Yue’er had said, Chu Feng seemed to really have managed to endure the tribulation this time around.

The power of the lightning grew weaker and weaker. Even Chu Feng’s charred black skin started to peel away from him and new skin emerged from underneath. It was as if he was experiencing a rebirth.

When the lightning disappeared, Chu Feng had returned to having a completely undamaged appearance.

When Chu Feng’s eyes opened, it signified that he had truly succeeded.

The current Chu Feng was no longer a Martial Ancestor. Instead, he was a True Immortal, an actual rank one True Immortal.

“Good job. This Queen knew that you would be able to endure through it,” Seeing that Chu Feng had succeeded, Her Lady Queen ran towards Chu Feng excitedly.

Her Lady Queen no longer possessed the worried expression that she did earlier. Instead, she was completely at ease. It was as if she had anticipated this would happen, that she had anticipated that Chu Feng would definitely succeed.

“The breakthrough this time around was truly a bit hard to bare. However, all of this was worth it,” Chu Feng sensed the power that he possessed at that moment and became extremely excited.

It was truly the feeling of tasting sweetness after enduring bitterness.

After a short moment of chatting with Her Lady Queen, Her Lady Queen entered the world spirit gate and returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space.

It was only at that moment that Chu Feng noticed that Li Yue'er was currently looking at him with a slightly strange expression.

"Girl, what's wrong? Why are you looking at me like that? Could it be that you can't recognize me?" Chu Feng asked.

"No, it's nothing. Your world spirit knows you very well," Li Yue'er said.

"Why did you say that?" Chu Feng asked.

"Go and ask her," Li Yue'er said.

"Milady Queen, what did you say to this girl?" Chu Feng immediately asked Her Lady Queen.

"It's nothing. That said, you can be at ease and pursue that girl. Trust me, you will definitely succeed," Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous laugh.

"Ah?" Chu Feng was confused by what Her Lady Queen said. Evidently, the two girls were not talking about the same thing.

"Let me tell you this in secret. Although your closed-door training was completed very quickly, that girl Li Yue'er told me a lot of intimate things. Most importantly, she told me that she likes you," Her Lady Queen said.

"Ah?" Chu Feng was surprised upon hearing those words.

However, a smile soon emerged on Chu Feng's face. He said, "Milady Queen, while your cheap trick might be enough to deceive others, they are not enough to deceive me."

From his understanding of Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was certain that she was toying with him.

"Believe whatever you want. I have given you the chance. It will be up to you whether or not you'll be able to grasp that chance," Her Lady Queen said unyieldingly.

"I am finally able to subdue this weapon now, no?"

As Chu Feng spoke, he arrived before the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler and grabbed it.

The next moment, the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler let out boundless power. In a flash, it surrounded Chu Feng.

It was a layer of golden gaseous flames. However, it was also emitting specks of faint red.

The gaseous flames sealed Chu Feng off completely. They surrounded him as if they were burning him. It was an extremely imposing sight.

"This weapon?"

Seeing that scene, Li Yue'er started to frown.

Although it was an Incomplete Immortal Armament refined by Chu Feng, it was currently an ownerless item.

If Chu Feng wanted to make it his weapon, he must subdue it.

And now, the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was emitting an extremely intense opposition.

That weapon possessed an intense temper.

It was harder to subdue than she had anticipated.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2636 - Ocean Of People

Those gaseous flames appeared very imposing. It seemed as if they were planning to burn Chu Feng to death.

However, the gaseous flames soon started to gradually vanish. To be exact, they were being absorbed by Chu Feng. The gaseous flames were currently fusing with Chu Feng.

Seeing this, Li Yue'er heaved a sigh of relief. Even though the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler had initially resisted Chu Feng, from the way it

appeared now, Chu Feng had evidently successfully subdued the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

"I had thought that it would enter Absolute Submission to me. After all, I personally forged it."

"Never did I imagine that this Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler would be this stubborn. It truly was quite taxing to subdue you," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile as he fiddled with the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler in his hand.

In the past, most of the weapons that he had subdued entered Absolute Submission. As such, he would, to a lesser or greater degree, receive power from the weapons that he subdued. Those weapons' power would, to a greater or lesser extent, provide assistance to his cultivation or even increase it directly.

However, even though he had managed to subdue the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler and made it recognize him as its master, he was unable to make it undergo Absolute Submission.

"Incomplete Immortal Armaments all possess lives. It is best that you do not say those infuriating words toward it. Else... even if it is willing to be used by you, it will not entrust all of its power to you," Li Yue'er warned Chu Feng.

"Understood," Chu Feng lightly smiled. Then, he gently caressed the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler and said, "You are, after all, the weapon that I have personally forged. I will definitely treat you well."

"You should give it a name," Li Yue'er said.

"Let's just continue to call it the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler. After all, its appearance resembles a ruler more than a sword," Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

Originally, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er had planned to forge the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler into a sword.

However, as Chu Feng had decided to skip the process of customizing the appearance of the weapon, the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler ended up having the same appearance as it did before, and simply did not resemble a sword at all.

“That works,” Li Yue’er said.

“Oh, that’s right. When do you plan to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m planning to set off right away. Do you want to journey there with me?” Li Yue’er asked.

“I’m afraid that I can’t. I must still go and settle my debt with the Infant Soul Sect,” Chu Feng said.

“Even though you’ve managed to successfully reach a breakthrough, your cultivation is still only that of a rank one True Immortal. Even though you’ve grasped that overwhelmingly powerful secret skill, you might not necessarily be a match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster with your current cultivation.”

“Unless... you’re planning to use the power of your Demon Armament again?” Li Yue’er asked.

“Rest assured, I do not have to utilize the power of the Demon Armament again. Furthermore... I will definitely be able to destroy the Infant Soul Sect with my own hands this time around,” Chu Feng said in a very confident manner.

As Chu Feng was extremely confident, he was also extremely excited at that moment.

His father, Chu Xuanyuan, had given him a mission before he went to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. That mission was to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

However, because of his insufficient strength and impatience to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, Chu Feng had given up on that mission, given up upon eliminating the Infant Soul Sect personally.

When the allied army was formed, Chu Feng felt that Ying Mingchao would be the one to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. After all, Ying Mingchao was the strongest individual in the allied army at that time.

However, never did any of them expect the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to be that powerful. Even Ying Mingchao was no match for him.

However, the situation had changed. After Chu Feng entered the True Immortal realm and felt the strength he currently possessed, Chu Feng felt that he would be able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect by himself.

With that, he would be able to accomplish the mission given to him by his father.

Although Chu Feng was already thirty years old, compared to the age limit of being under forty years old to accomplish this mission, Chu Feng was still very young.

As long as Chu Feng was able to accomplish the mission, it would mean that he would have brought shame upon the Chu Heavenly Clan.

After all, the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect was a mission set up by the Chu Heavenly Clan for their younger generations.

However, not all of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation could attempt the mission, as there was also the forty year age limit. Those who were older than forty years old would not be able to attempt the mission.

This led to there being no one from the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation capable of accomplishing the mission even after many years had passed. In fact, many talents from the younger generation of the Chu Heavenly Clan had even been killed by the Infant Soul Sect.

The Infant Soul Sect, this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's demonic sect, was simply incomparable to the powers in the Upper Realms.

However, it had become a nightmare in the eyes of countless Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. In fact, it became a taboo that they did not dare to touch.

As for Chu Feng, who was he? He was a child deemed trash and discarded by the Chu Heavenly Clan. On his forehead was still imprinted the character 'trash' that was personally branded upon him by the Chu Heavenly Clan.

If Chu Feng, this trash in the eyes of the Chu Heavenly Clan, was able to accomplish that mission, it would most definitely serve as an enormous humiliation to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Since you are determined to go, I will not stop you. Let us bid our farewells now,” Li Yue’er said.

“I believe that we will meet again,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“I think so too. As long as both of us are still alive,” Li Yue’er said.

“We definitely will be,” Chu Feng said.

Then, Chu Feng parted ways with Li Yue’er.

Li Yue’er proceeded toward the teleportation formation leading to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. In other words, she had proceeded for the so-called Stairway to Heaven.

As for Chu Feng, he proceeded directly toward Chen Heavenly City, the headquarters of the Infant Soul Sect.

Chu Feng wanted to know exactly what sort of grand activity was happening at the Infant Soul Sect, exactly what was it that the Infant Soul Sect spent so much time and effort plotting for.

.....

Chen Heavenly City was completely destroyed on the day when Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect’s Sect master battled.

However, not only was Chen Heavenly City completely restored now, but it was even many times larger than before.

This new Chen Heavenly City was unimaginably large. Even when standing in the sky and looking down below, one could only see the tip of the iceberg known as Chen Heavenly City.

This city was large enough that it could accommodate everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

That said, even though the city had expanded many times in size, there were no other buildings apart from the city walls. To be exact, this was merely an empty city with city walls around it.

That said, the city was not a ghost city. On the contrary, it was utterly bustling with noise and excitement.

At a glance, one could see figures all over the city. Those were not ants. Instead, they were humans.

In fact, it was not only humans that were in the city. There were also a lot of monstrous beasts.

There were so many people that one simply could not see the end of them. At a glance, people's silhouettes seemed to extend all the way to the horizon.

This was a boundless ocean formed with people's bodies. This was... an ocean of people.

A scene like this could not be described even with the word 'spectacular.'

Although not everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was gathered in Chen Heavenly City, at least ninety percent of them were gathered there.

At that moment, the faces of those people were all filled with excitement. They were all anticipating the opening of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. They were all waiting for the Infant Soul Grand Formation to grant them martial comprehension that would allow them to increase their cultivation.

"Sectmaster Hun, everyone that should be here has arrived. The people that did not come are all those that do not want to come. How much longer are you planning to wait till the activation of your Infant Soul Grand Formation?" The Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple asked.

"Don't be so anxious. There are still people on their way here. The Infant Soul Grand Formation will be activated once they're all here."

"Everyone, please rest assured. The Infant Soul Grand Formation will bestow all of you with its power. Everyone here will be able to benefit from the Infant Soul Grand Formation," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke to the crowd with a deeply resonating voice.

Even though not everyone was able to see his image, they all heard his voice.

"Long live the Infant Soul Sect! Long live Lord Sectmaster!!!"

It was unknown who started shouting those words. However, soon, everyone started to echo those words. n(-OvElb1n

The densely packed crowd of millions and millions of humans and monstrous beasts were all shouting in unison. This scene was truly spectacular.

That said, it was also very lamentable at the same time. After all, the Infant Soul Sect was a power that willfully slaughtered the innocent.

Such a demonic sect should be the target of scorn. They should be detested by all.

Yet, the Infant Soul Sect... was actually revered and worshipped by everyone like gods.

As such, how was it not lamentable???

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2637 - Bitterly Disappointed

“Today, the Infant Soul Sect shall perish!!!”

Suddenly, a voice sounded from the heavens. That voice forcibly suppressed the unified shouts from the hundreds of millions of people.

The crowd present were all surprised upon hearing that voice.

The current Infant Soul Sect could be said to be everyone’s light of dawn, a light that would increase their cultivations. As such, how could someone dare say these sorts of words at a time like this?

It was simply outrageous and insolent behavior.

“Finally, you’re here. Ying Mingchao... I knew that you would come.”

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster cast his gaze to the distant sky with a beaming smile on his face.

As the people present were mostly of a low level of cultivation, they were simply unable to see that far into the distance. However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was, after all, a rank two True Immortal. With his strength, he would naturally be able to see very far into the distance.

Thus, he had already noticed the allied army that was proceeding toward Chen Heavenly City.

Soon, the allied army led by Ying Mingchao appeared before the crowd's field of view.

"Ying Mingchao. It really is them?"

"What? Ying Mingchao has come? Why did they come here?"

Although not everyone present was able to see Ying Mingchao and the others, they all came to know of their arrival from the conversations of others.

"Ying Mingchao, was the humiliation you received that day not enough for you? You actually still dare to come cause a disturbance?" The Immortal Sword School's Headmaster said to Ying Mingchao.

"Amitabha, Almsgiver Ying, why must you do this?"

The Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple also stood up. There was a trace of mockery in his tone.

"Ying Mingchao, Lord Sectmaster has already spared you once. Yet, you dare to come stir up trouble again? How could there be someone as shameless as you?"

More and more people present started to mock Ying Mingchao and the others.

They were all people who were ignorant of the truth. They were people that believed that the Infant Soul Sect was truly going to help them.

Furthermore, they had no idea that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster went to secretly chase after Ying Mingchao and the others to kill them.

All they knew was that Ying Mingchao had led the allied army to attack the Infant Soul Sect, but was instead defeated by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster decided to let Ying Mingchao go.

Thus, they felt that the fact that Ying Mingchao and the others dared to come create a disturbance today meant that they were shameless pests.

As such, they naturally started to look down on Ying Mingchao and the others. Some among them also started to verbally attack Ying Mingchao and the others.

“If I hadn’t witnessed it myself, I truly would never have believed that the renowned Lord Ying Mingchao was actually this sort of man.”

“Truly one may know a person for a long time, yet never understand their true nature.”

More and more people started to mock Ying Mingchao. In fact, even those that did not witness what happened that day, and even people that were unable to even see Ying Mingchao and the others started mocking Ying Mingchao.

At that moment, the great hero in the eyes of countless people had become the target of criticism from all around. He had become the object of public disgust, and even the target of hatred.

“Truly fools.”

Seeing that bunch of fickle people, Ying Mingchao revealed deep disgust on his face.

Ying Mingchao had already witnessed a lot of selfish actions in his life. However, the scene before him caused him to be bitterly disappointed.

After all, many of the people that were verbally attacking him were people who had previously worshipped and admired him.

Yet, for the sake of self-interest, they immediately changed their attitudes.

Such a rapid change in attitude had caused Ying Mingchao to feel utterly disappointed.

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang walked out from the allied army. He walked to the front of the ally army and said, “In-Infant Soul S-Sect’s Sectmaster, is it? W-W-Where is my B-Brother C-Chu Feng right now?”

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster simply ignored him.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster felt that even though Wang Qiang possessed some reputation in the Hundred

Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was nowhere near qualified enough to talk to him.

He felt that the only person in the allied army that was qualified to talk to him was Ying Mingchao.

Seeing that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was ignoring him, Wang Qiang revealed a large blade and pointed it at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. He shouted, "Your g-granddaddy is questioning you right n-now! D-Don't you p-play d-deaf and mute w-with me! A-Answer me immediately!"

"This Wang Qiang's aura?"

Once Wang Qiang spoke again, all the experts from the Infant Soul Sect's side revealed a change in expression.

Even the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had a surprised expression in his eyes when he looked to Wang Qiang again.

They were all able to sense that Wang Qiang's aura was that of a rank two True Immortal.

Furthermore, they noticed that even though the weapon in Wang Qiang's hand resembled a kitchen cleaver, it was actually an Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it was a top quality Ancestral Armament.

"You're asking about Chu Feng?"

"Didn't Chu Feng escape with Ying Mingchao that day? How would I know where he is?"

"If you want to ask someone, you should be asking Ying Mingchao instead," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said with a confused expression on his face.

"T-Truly to p-pretend to be s-stupid, is it? V-Very well, I'll beat the t-truth out of you!"

Wang Qiang was disinclined to bother with superfluous words. He raised his Vegetable Cutting Edge and hacked it down toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Boom~~~"

A slash was sent forth from the sky to the ground. Even the air and space itself were sliced in half by it.

That powerful slash could be said to be truly capable of splitting apart the heavens and cleaving apart the earth. It directly shot toward Chen Heavenly City, where hundreds of millions of people were gathered.

If that slash were to successfully reach the Chen Heavenly City, it would definitely cause countless people to lose their lives.

However, Wang Qiang did not care about that. He only wanted to avenge Chu Feng, and simply could not care about the lives of those selfish fools.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster also revealed his Ancestral Armament. With a wave of his hand, he also shot forth a slash. That slash managed to block Wang Qiang’s incoming slash outside of the Chen Heavenly Clan.

“If you want to kill me, then come at me directly! Do not harm the innocent!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster shouted. As he spoke, he actually had a faint trace of anger in his tone.

Hearing those words, the people that were previously enveloped by Wang Qiang’s attack, those people that felt that a great catastrophe was about to befall them, were all moved to tears.

They actually all ended up really considering the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster as a great hero who considered their well-being.

“Y-You’re q-quite an actor. V-Very g-g-good, your daddy shall s-see how much longer you can c-continue your pretense!”

Seeing that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was fond of being pretentious and putting on a show before the crowd, Wang Qiang decided that he might as well send forth countless more slashes with his Vegetable Cutting Edge.

Although the slashes Wang Qiang sent forth this time around were about as powerful as his previous slashes, the scope of his attack was many times larger than his previous attack.

Furthermore, not a single one of his slashes that he sent forth this time around was aimed at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Instead, the many slashes were all aimed at the people inside Chen Heavenly City.

Wang Qiang wanted to see exactly how much longer the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster could continue to put up his disguise for.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster reacted extremely fast. Right after Wang Qiang sent forth his attacks, he immediately sent forth counterattacks. Many slashes were also shot out from his Ancestral Armament.

As explosions sounded, he actually managed to really block Wang Qiang's slashes. He had successfully prevented those innocent people from being injured or killed by Wang Qiang's slashes.

"Wang Qiang, you are truly too excessive! You actually planned to willfully slaughter the innocent!"

"Today, on behalf of all living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, I, Hun Poyuan, shall eliminate a scourge like you!" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster held his Ancestral Armament in hand and rushed to attack Wang Qiang.

That said, when he rushed to attack Wang Qiang, he even gave himself a title of being righteous and fighting for justice.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2638 - Wang Qiang Revealing His Might

"Y-You're c-calling me a scourge?"

"I, Wang Qiang, am a-actually being c-called a scourge?"

"F-Fucking hell! I've s-seen d-despicable people before, and I've a-also seen shameless people before, but y-your d-daddy I have never seen s-someone as d-despicable and s-shameless a-as-as you."

“D-Doesn’t matter, I, W-Wang Qiang, do not c-care a-about how others view me. T-Today, I a-am de-definitely going to kill you and a-avenge my brother!”

Wang Qiang was not to be outdone. He held the Vegetable Cutting Edge in his hand and rushed forth to confront the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

As the two rank two True Immortals collided and started battling with one another, they created overflowing oppressive might even without using special martial skills. Their battle was truly world-shaking.

“He’s that Wang Qiang? Chu Feng’s friend and a person deemed to be one of the strongest geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, that Wang Qiang?”

“No wonder. No wonder he’s already a rank two True Immortal at such a young age. That talent of his is truly astonishing.”

“Although his strength is overwhelmingly powerful, his character is truly lacking. He actually wanted to kill us earlier. For Chu Feng to have a friend like him, it could be seen that Chu Feng is not someone good either.”

“Humph, that Chu Feng was not a good person to begin with. When the Infant Soul Sect announced to the world that the Infant Soul Grand Formation was capable of helping us increase our cultivations, that Chu Feng insisted on saying that it was a trap. He even declared that we were blinded by self-interest and cursed us as fools.”

“Humph, we were all present and clearly witnessed the Infant Soul Grand Formation helping the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief increase his cultivation. The ability of the Infant Soul Grand Formation is real. It is not a trap at all.”

“Yet, merely because he possessed conflict with the Infant Soul Sect, that Chu Feng actually decided to invert right and wrong to speak ill of the Infant Soul Sect. He is simply not a good person at all.”

“That’s right. And here I was hearing rumors that Chu Feng was righteous and loyal. Turns out, he’s nothing but a phony.”

“That’s right. Facts speak louder than words. All the heroic deeds that Chu Feng did are merely lies. Even if they were real, they must all have been an act.”

“Truly, one may know a person for a long time without knowing their true nature. People are truly selfish.”

After Wang Qiang unleashed his attacks at them, the crowd grew even more certain that Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and the others were merely a bunch of hypocrites. In fact, they even began to verbally attack Chu Feng.

“It’s alright, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is going to uphold justice for us. Today... those two-faced hypocrites will all be killed.”

Even more infuriating, those people actually really considered the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster as their savior. They all started to desire from the bottom of their hearts that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster would defeat Wang Qiang.

“Heavens! What is going on? Why does it seem like that Wang Qiang is holding the upper hand in their battle?”

At that moment, there were those with powerful strength that discovered that Wang Qiang was actually winning in the confrontation with Ancestral Armaments.

“What? That Wang Qiang is winning? That’s impossible! No matter how strong he might be, he couldn’t possibly surpass the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. After all, Lord Sectmaster is someone who defeated even Ying Mingchao.”

Due to the fact that the overall cultivation of the crowd gathered here was quite low, they could only enjoy the lively excitement, and were simply unable to make out anything from the battle in the sky.

The only things that they could see were the surging energy ripples and overflowing oppressive might caused by the battle in the sky. They were simply unable to even see the figures of the two fighters.

However, as the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had defeated Ying Mingchao before, the crowd all felt that he would definitely win the battle. They had all thought that it would most definitely be the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster who would be holding the upper hand in the battle.

“That guy... how could he be this powerful?”

While others might not be able to clearly see the battle, people like the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster were able to witness the battle clearly.

They were able to clearly see that Wang Qiang, with his naked upper body, straw sandals on his feet and a kitchen cleaver-like weapon, was attacking recklessly in the sky.

However, his seemingly reckless and aimless attacks were able to suppress the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster could do nothing but defend himself against Wang Qiang's nonstop attacks. He did not even have the opportunity to fight back. He was completely locked down by Wang Qiang's barrage of attacks.

In fact... in a moment of carelessness, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster received a slash on his left arm from Wang Qiang. Immediately, blood started to splatter across the sky.

"Brother Wang Qiang's battle power is truly not something that we can compare with."

Seeing that Wang Qiang held the upper hand in the battle, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi and the others were all overjoyed.

At that moment, neither Wang Qiang nor the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were using special methods to assist themselves. They were only fighting with one another with their rank two True Immortal-level cultivation and Ancestral Armaments.

Generally speaking, such a situation would cause the two fighters to be equally matched. However, Wang Qiang was able to rapidly gain the upper hand in their battle.

This signified one thing. That is, although they were both rank two True Immortals, Wang Qiang's battle power greatly surpassed that of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Puchi~~~"

Suddenly, another slash from Wang Qiang landed on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's right leg. This time around, the power behind the slash was so strong that it actually managed to slice off the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's right leg.

"Haha. T-Trash. Y-You're nothing much either," Wang Qiang laughed out loud.

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed incomparable fury.

He was infuriated by Wang Qiang. Wang Qiang had never stopped talking ever since they started fighting. Wang Qiang had been insulting him nonstop the entire time.

At the beginning, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not take Wang Qiang's insults to heart. The reason for that was because he felt that even though Wang Qiang was a rank two True Immortal, his strength would definitely not surpass Ying Mingchao's.

When even Ying Mingchao was no match for him, he felt that someone like Wang Qiang would most definitely be easily defeated by him.

However, when he actually started fighting against Wang Qiang and was suppressed by Wang Qiang in battle, all of the insults that Wang Qiang had been showering him with turned true.

He had actually really become the trash that Wang Qiang spoke of.

He felt this to be completely unacceptable.

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shouted, "Set up the formation!!!"

Right after he said those words, the people from the Infant Soul Sect reacted as if they were already prepared. Immediately, they unleashed the formation.

Merely, as the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not utilize the Infant Soul Demonic Technique when fighting against Wang Qiang, the dark black gaseous flames emitted by those members of the Infant Soul Sect did not enter the sky.

Instead, they directly entered the body of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“W-What’s wrong, trash? Y-You weren’t able t-to win a-against your granddaddy W-Wang Qiang, and now need to f-find others to help you?” Wang Qiang started to laugh mockingly.

“Formation, rise!” At the moment when the people from the Infant Soul Sect used their formation to help the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster increase his battle power, Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong and the others who had already prepared for this immediately unleashed the same battle power-increasing spirit formation that they assisted Ying Mingchao with that day.

“No need.”

However, right when they started activating that spirit formation, before the crowd could assimilate their power into it and send it to Wang Qiang, Wang Qiang suddenly waved his hand.

He actually refused the assistance from Zi Xunyi and the others.

At that moment, it was not only Zi Xunyi and the others who were confused. Even the crowd from the Infant Soul Sect were confused by Wang Qiang’s action.

“T-Trash, do y-you s-see this? Y-Your g-granddaddy Wang Q-Qiang simply does not need the assistance of o-others t-to take care of you. Your g-granddaddy is c-completely un-unlike you. G-Grandson, h-how could you be t-this u-useless to r-request the assistance of tha-that many people?”

“F-Furthermore, i-it’s one t-thing to r-request the assistance of o-others, but t-they’re actually e-even w-weeping and howling a-as they’re providing you w-with their assistance. F-Furthermore, t-their c-cries even s-sounded like those of infants. D-Don’t you f-find that disgusting?” Wang Qiang mocked.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not refute Wang Qiang’s mockery. The reason for that was because his battle power had already increased enormously after receiving the assistance of the formation.

At that moment, he had unleashed many offensive techniques. There was only one goal in his mind. He planned to make Wang Qiang shut up with his strength.

Unfortunately, he was shocked to discover that Wang Qiang’s battle power was overwhelmingly strong. It was strong enough to make his hackles rise.

Even though he had obtained the assistance of the formation formed by the Infant Soul Sect's members and increased his battle power greatly, he was still no match for Wang Qiang.

"T-T-Trash, d-did you r-really think that you w-would be able to d-defeat your g-granddaddy Wang Qiang with j-just the h-help from that tr-trash? You a-are s-simply delusional."

"Y-Your granddaddy W-Wang Qiang is merely playing with you. If I a-am to get serious, I will t-turn you into m-mincemeat in minutes," Wang Qiang said.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2639 - Astonishing Battle Power

"You damned stutterer! This Sectmaster has yet to unleash my full strength. Don't you continue to act this pleased here!"

"Right now, this Sectmaster shall have you experience my true strength!"

Finally, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was unable to tolerate Wang Qiang's insults, and returned Wang Qiang insults.

Furthermore, as he said those words, boundless dark black gaseous flames began to surge outward from his body into the sky.

Immediately, the vast sky was covered by the dark black gaseous flames. The infant cries also began to fill their surroundings.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had unleashed his Infant Soul Demonic Technique, his technique that could contend against Divine Power.

"Die!!!"

After increasing his strength, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster immediately unleashed an attack at Wang Qiang.

"Heeahh~~~"

Wang Qiang shouted loudly. Then, four different-colored gaseous flames emerged from his body.

At the same time, from the sky that was originally covered by the dark black gaseous flames emerged four fierce and malevolent-looking beasts.

Those four ferocious beasts were simply too frightening. The auras that they emitted were extremely ice-cold. Even though those four ferocious beasts were only images and did not even let out a single roar, their grandeur surpassed that of the black gaseous flames that filled the sky and shadowed the infant cries.

They were truly frightening.

At the moment when Wang Qiang unleashed his Divine Power, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's attack was about to reach him.

Logically, at such a close distance, Wang Qiang would not be able to dodge the attack.

However, Wang Qiang merely raised his hand, and the Vegetable Cutting Edge in his hand actually arrived before him with an unimaginable speed.

"Clank!" Not only did Wang Qiang's Vegetable Cutting Edge manage to block the attack from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, it even knocked the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster back.

"This..." The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster only managed to stabilize himself in midair after being forced back several steps.

At that moment, astonishment filled his face. Logically, the attack earlier should have most definitely struck Wang Qiang.

However, not only did it not manage to land on Wang Qiang, but he himself was even knocked back by Wang Qiang. He felt this to be utterly unbelievable.

"S-Say, grandson, d-didn't you s-say that y-you wanted y-your granddaddy I to w-witness your p-power? Why d-don't you t-try doing th-that?" Wang Qiang mocked.

"Humph," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was furious from the humiliation. After letting out a snort, he once again rushed forth to attack Wang Qiang.

However, regardless of whether he tried to fight Wang Qiang at close range or attack him from afar, all of his attacks were easily blocked by Wang Qiang. He was simply unable to injure Wang Qiang at all.

Instead, he was beaten back by Wang Qiang repeatedly.

He felt extremely humiliated by what was happening.

“It’s those strange things?!”

After gradually calming down, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster took note of the four strange gaseous flames on Wang Qiang.

Then he looked upward, and discovered the ferocious image of the four imposing beasts in the sky.

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to frown. He discovered that the power that Wang Qiang was unleashing right now was actually even more frightening than his Infant Soul Demonic Technique.

“You’ve trained in a Forbidden Demonic Technique?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked.

“D-D-De-Demonic Technique? Your g-granddaddy’s power is c-called Divine Power!” Wang Qiang mocked.

“Nonsense! That is Divine Power? How could a Divine Power’s aura be like this?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster refused to accept Wang Qiang’s declaration.

He simply did not believe that the power Wang Qiang unleashed was Divine Power.

As he had trained in the Infant Soul Demonic Technique his whole life, he firmly believed that Wang Qiang’s power also originated from a Forbidden Demonic Technique.

The reason for that was because he felt that the aura of Wang Qiang’s power was much stronger than his own Infant Soul Demonic Technique in both its murderousness and its heinous nature.

“F-For you t-to have never f-felt this s-sort of aura before only m-means that y-you are i-ignorant and l-lacking in knowledge,” Wang Qiang said.

“Don’t you act this arrogant! Even if you’ve trained in a Forbidden Demonic Technique, I will still eliminate a scourge like you today!” With a flip of his wrist, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster tossed away the Ancestral Armament in his hand.

Both the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Abbot and the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster revealed a confused expression upon seeing that.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was not a match for Wang Qiang. Given that that was the case, if he were to throw away his Ancestral Armament, he would be even less of a match for Wang Qiang.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when they were having misgivings, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a golden dagger in his hand.

“This aura, could that be... an Incomplete Immortal Armament?”

It was only after they saw the weapon held by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster that they came to a sudden realization.

Naturally, the golden dagger held by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster would be the Incomplete Immortal Armament Dragonscale Dagger.

“Y-You’re f-finally re-revealing your final t-trump card? S-Sure enough, that Incomplete Immortal Ar-Armament possesses an e-extraordinary aura. H-However, y-your granddaddy is s-still going to kill you today.”

When the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster unleashed his Incomplete Immortal Armament, Wang Qiang finally revealed a serious expression.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s battle power had indeed increased enormously when the Incomplete Immortal Armament appeared.

The current Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster now had the strength to make Wang Qiang take him seriously.

“C-Come. Let y-your g-granddaddy see exactly w-what sort of power your Incomplete Immortal Armament might have.”

As Wang Qiang became serious, he also became excited. Holding the Vegetable Cutting Edge, he actually took the initiative to rush to attack the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

He was impatient to experience the might of an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

"Humph, ignorant child, by the time you realize the strength of my Incomplete Immortal Armament, you will already be dead."

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster snorted coldly. Then, with the Dragonscale Dagger in hand, he rushed to confront Wang Qiang.

The two of them were thinking the same thing. They both wanted to kill their opponent using the most humiliating method.

Thus, neither of them used any martial skills. Instead, they decided to fight one another at close range using only their weapons.

One was an Ancestral Armament, whereas the other was an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

As the two fought, sparks scattered about and energy ripples started to wreak havoc.

To the crowd's astonishment, the battle that should have been easily decided entered a stalemate.

Wang Qiang actually managed to contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who was using an Incomplete Immortal Armament, with a kitchen cleaver-like Ancestral Armament.

"Brother Wang Qiang is truly powerful."

At that moment, even Ying Mingchao was unable to contain himself from praising Wang Qiang.

He knew very well that even though Wang Qiang's Ancestral Armament was a top quality Ancestral Armament, it was simply unable to contend against that Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Furthermore, Ying Mingchao had fought against that Incomplete Immortal Armament before. Thus, he knew very well how powerful it was.

There was only one reason why Wang Qiang was able to fight on par with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who was using an Incomplete Immortal Armament, with only an Ancestral Armament. That is, Wang Qiang's battle power was outstanding.

Wang Qiang was making up for the deficit in the strength of his weapon with his own battle power.

With how powerful Wang Qiang's battle power was, how could one not be astonished by it?

"S-Say, g-grandson, that Incomplete Immortal A-Armament of y-yours is not that s-strong either. W-Why is it th-that you are still n-no match for your g-granddaddy ev-even after fighting for so long?"

"That Incomplete I-Immortal Armament of yours couldn't p-possibly be a fake, right?"

Wang Qiang was blabbering nonstop as he fought against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Insults were being shot out from his mouth toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster incessantly.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was so furious that his face turned green. However, he didn't say anything, and merely continued with his attacks against Wang Qiang. Each and every one of his attacks were fatal. From this, it could be seen how much he detested Wang Qiang.

Unfortunately, all of his attacks were blocked by Wang Qiang. He was simply unable to injure Wang Qiang at all.

This caused the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to be even more furious. He was already using an Incomplete Immortal Armament. Thus, how could he not defeat an Ancestral Armament?

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang suddenly accelerated his attacks and caught the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster off-guard.

"Puu." A line of blood splattered forth. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was struck by Wang Qiang. His entire left shoulder was nearly severed.

Seeing such a scene, the expressions of the experts present all changed. They involuntarily opened their mouths in amazement.

Although the two fighters were both rank two True Immortals, Wang Qiang actually managed to injure the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who was using an Incomplete Immortal Armament, with an Ancestral Armament.

"Impossible!"

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster looked at the deep wound on his left shoulder. He was actually unwilling to believe it to be real.

He was truly unable to accept it.

After all, he had utilized the power of his Incomplete Immortal Armament, which had increased his overall battle power.

It was one thing for him to not be able to kill Wang Qiang even with all this. Yet, how could he possibly be injured by Wang Qiang?

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang unleashed a barrage of attacks at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster with his Vegetable Cutting Edge.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster refused to accept his defeat, and rushed forth to meet Wang Qiang's attacks.

However, he was defeated even more thoroughly the second time around. After a mere couple bouts, his entire body was riddled with wounds.

"Woosh~~~"

With the situation being like that, even though the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was unwilling to accept it, he had no choice but to admit that he was no match for Wang Qiang.

Thus, he moved back explosively and distanced himself from Wang Qiang.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2640 - Golden Forbidden Medicine - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2640 - Golden Forbidden Medicine

Chapter 2640 - Golden Forbidden Medicine

Wang Qiang did not chase after the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster who had turned around to escape. Instead, he burst into loud laughter.

Mockingly, Wang Qiang said, "S-Sure enough, you're t-trash. Even if you possess an In-Inc-Incomplete Immortal Arm-Armament, y-you r-remain t-trash still."

"Say, t-trash g-grandson, how a-are you s-supposed to kill your g-granddaddy like this? Wouldn't w-what you de-declared earlier be n-nothing more t-than a pipe d-dream?"

"H-How a-about your g-granddaddy g-give you a h-handicap, and u-use o-only one hand?"

"H-How about this. Y-Your g-granddaddy will give you a massive handicap of b-both hands and legs."

"Your granddaddy m-might a-as well not fight back. I-I'll just stand here and I-let you cut m-me down."

"Damned stutterer! Shut up!"

Finally, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke. He was filled with rage, Flames were shooting out from his eyes.

Not to mention the rage on his face, all of his veins in his entire body were bulging forth.

In fact, he was already shivering in anger.

The reason for that was because he discovered that he was truly unable to match the Wang Qiang before him.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's heart suddenly grew tense. He discovered that items had appeared in his palm.

"Swallow them."

Then, a voice transmission entered the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's ears.

It was the voice of that Chu Heavenly Clan's old man.

When that voice was heard, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was immediately overjoyed. He immediately looked to his palm.

That old man possessed overwhelming power. If he were to help him, then regardless of how powerful Wang Qiang might be, Wang Qiang would still be defeated by him.

"These are..."

When the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster looked to his palm, he immediately revealed a stunned expression.

There were tens of medicinal pellets in his palm.

Those medicinal pellets were not very large. They were each only one tenth the size of an ordinary pearl.

Those medicinal pellets were golden, and were emitting bright golden light and extraordinary auras.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was able to tell with a single glance that they were forbidden medicines. Furthermore, they were an extremely powerful sort of forbidden medicine.

"Swallow them," Right at that moment, that old man's voice sounded again.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not do as he indicated. He knew very well that he would definitely die should he swallow all of the forbidden medicine.

"Swallow those medicinal pellets and this old man will guarantee that you will live."

“If you are to refuse to swallow them, even this old man will not be able to save you,” that old man’s voice sounded again.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually knew very well what sort of situation he was in. Due to his identity, even if that old man possessed overwhelming power, he would not be able to act to help him.

If he wanted to defeat Wang Qiang and the others, he could only rely on himself. If he were to swallow those medicinal pellets, he would be able to defeat Wang Qiang.

If he did not swallow the medicinal pellets, he would only be killed by Wang Qiang.

Judging from that, swallowing the forbidden medicines would be the most optimal choice for now.

However, even though he knew that was the case, he still did not dare to swallow the forbidden medicine.

The reason for that was because he knew that swallowing those forbidden medicines would be equivalent to taking one foot and placing it over the gates of hell. He would have no way to go back on his decision.

“What’s t-this? You’re u-unable to d-defeat your g-granddaddy, and plan t-to use forbidden medicines now?”

“Say, my d-dear grandson, look at y-yourself. Y-You a-are t-truly a d-d-d-disappointment to your g-granddaddy.”

“Forget a-about i-it-it. Go ahead and t-take them. Your granddaddy shall see w-what tricks you have l-left,” Wang Qiang mocked.

Although Wang Qiang was able to tell that those were forbidden medicines, he did not stop the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang simply did not place those forbidden medicines in his eyes.

He felt that even if the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster were to take those forbidden medicines, he would still not be able to defeat him.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang was able to sense exactly how powerful his battle power was. It was precisely because he knew how powerful he was that he acted so confidently.

“Take t-them. Your g-granddaddy is telling you to take them. W-Why are you s-still lingering around?”

“Grandson, take them right n-now. S-Swallow them and c-come fight a-against your granddaddy again.”

Seeing that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was hesitant to take the forbidden medicines, Wang Qiang started to laugh mockingly.

“Damned stutterer! Shut the fuck up!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster shouted furiously.

Then, he raised his hand and directly tossed the handful of golden forbidden medicines into his mouth.

He was truly and utterly enraged by Wang Qiang. It was precisely because of the fury he felt toward Wang Qiang that he gained the courage to take those forbidden medicines.

After all, those forbidden medicines would be able to help him teach Wang Qiang a proper and ruthless lesson. They would be able to help him vent the anger in his heart.

“Bang~~~”

Right after those forbidden medicine entered his mouth, an explosion sounded from within the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s body. It sounded as if something had exploded within him.

Following that, he started to emit a golden radiance.

The golden light was emitted directly from his body. It was like his bones were shining with golden light.

Soon, the skin of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to fall off of his body. He became a humanoid shaped pile of mutilated flesh that was shining with golden radiance.

After his skin started to fall off, his flesh also began to fall off. In the end, only his bones remained.

Round little pearls were present on his bones. Those pearls were shining golden bright.

Looking carefully, those pearls were the same golden forbidden medicines that he had swallowed earlier.

Merely, at that moment, those golden forbidden medicines had already fused with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. They now resembled a part of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

That said, even though he was emitting golden light, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster appeared to be extremely frightening. After all, his flesh and skin were completely gone. All that remained was his skeleton.

“Hahahaha...”

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster burst into loud laughter. It was an extremely frantic and crazy laughter, so much so that the crowd was unable to endure it.

Most importantly, with his current appearance and that laughter, he was truly frightening.

“What's wrong, grandson? D-Did you eat too m-many forbidden medicines that y-you've turned s-stupid?” Wang Qiang mocked.

“You will soon find out why I'm laughing,” The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said to Wang Qiang.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster moved. His speed was extremely fast. He was flying straight at Wang Qiang.

“This guy.”

At that moment, even Wang Qiang's expression changed.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had arrived before Wang Qiang instantly.

That Dragonscale Dagger was already slashing down on Wang Qiang. The speed was so fast that even Wang Qiang was caught off-guard.

However, Wang Qiang was not to be underestimated either. At the critical moment, Wang Qiang managed to, with all his might, raise the Vegetable Cutting Edge in his hand.

“Clank~~~”

Sparks scattered everywhere. Wang Qiang managed to block the attack.

However, Wang Qiang was knocked back several meters after blocking the attack.

Furthermore, a deep dent had appeared in his Vegetable Cutting Edge.

Not only that, but the arm that he was holding the Vegetable Cutting Edge with started to tremble violently.

“This guy’s power, it a-actually increased t-this much?”

At that moment, Wang Qiang’s heart sunk. Even though he knew that the forbidden medicines would increase the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s strength, Wang Qiang never expected the forbidden medicine to increase his strength to such a degree.

It seemed that he was truly no match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster now.

“Damned stutterer, come at me. Come and fight against this Sectmaster.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster stood where he was. He did not give chase. Instead, he began to insult Wang Qiang like Wang Qiang had insulted him earlier.

“Hehe... g-grandson, d-don’t t-think that y-your granddaddy w-will be a-afraid of you with m-merely this.”

Wang Qiang did not cower. His body shifted, and he disappeared.

When he reappeared again, he was right above the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. With the Vegetable Cutting Edge in hand, he hacked down on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s head.

However, right at the moment when Wang Qiang's slash was about to land, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suddenly raised his hand. He had raised the Dragonscale Dagger above his head. Then, he slashed with it.

"Clank!" Wang Qiang was once again knocked away.

This time around, the hand and arm that Wang Qiang was holding his Vegetable Cutting Edge with started to tremble even more intensely. In fact, blood was flowing from his palm.

"Brother Wang Qiang, accept the power of the formation immediately!" Ying Mingchao shouted.

At practically the same moment Ying Mingchao shouted those words, the power of the grand formation that drew power from Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and everyone else from the allied army entered Wang Qiang.

After the power of that grand formation entered Wang Qiang, Wang Qiang's battle power increased greatly.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2641 - Arrival Of Doomsday

"Woosh~~~"

Right at the moment when Wang Qiang obtained the power of the spirit formation and strengthened his battle power, that Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster rushed toward him.

Faced with the incoming Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, Wang Qiang again did not cower. He too rushed forth to confront him. He wanted to have a final confrontation against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang knew very well that he had no way out of this apart from fighting with his all.

However, right after they started fighting, Wang Qiang was shocked to discover that he was unable to defeat the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Even though he had obtained the assistance of the allied army's power, he was still no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Puu~~~”

Soon, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s Dragonscale Dagger struck Wang Qiang.

With that one strike, Wang Qiang’s flesh was cut open. Even his bones were injured by the slash. From this, it could be seen how powerful the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s attack was.

However, that was merely the beginning. Following that.....

Another slash, two slashes, three slashes, four slashes, five slashes.....

Soon, Wang Qiang was covered with wounds. His body had become badly mutilated. He had become completely bloodied.

Most importantly, as Wang Qiang continued to be struck by the slashes, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster managed to assail Wang Qiang’s body with the strange dark black gaseous flames emitted by his Infant Soul Demonic Technique.

Soon, Wang Qiang started to scream miserably in pain. His aura also started to grow weaker and weaker. Not long afterward, he lost the ability to continue fighting, and could only allow himself to be thrashed around.

“Bastard, get the hell away from my husband!”

How could Zhao Hong possibly contain herself after seeing this? She immediately grabbed her Ancestral Armament and rushed forth.

Immediately afterward, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi and everyone else from the allied army rushed forth.

They were all prepared for death the moment they’d decided to attack. They knew that they would either eliminate the Infant Soul Sect or die trying.

“Hahaha. Come at me, come all at once. I shall see who can possibly stop me today.”

Even though he was surrounded, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster burst into loud laughter. He began to shuttle through the allied army.

Regardless of what sort of ability the crowd tried to use, not a single person was able to injure him in the slightest.

However, the Dragonscale Dagger in his hand was like a butcher's knife. It streaked across the bodies of the crowd repeatedly. Blood splattered about all over the place. This was truly a miserable scene.

It was like a group of little hares were gathered around a tiger. Although they were not afraid of dying and extremely aggressive, the enormous disparity in strength made it so that they were unable to harm that tiger in the slightest. All that they could do was to allow themselves to receive a beating.

Although the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster attacked savagely, he left only superficial wounds on the crowd, and did not kill anyone. He merely mutilated everyone and left them covered in wounds.

It was not only the men, even Zhao Hong, Zi Xunyi and the other women were not spared by him.

However, the wounds he left were most definitely not merely superficial wounds. The reason for that was because black gaseous flames assailed their bodies through the wounds.

The entire allied army was affected by the black gaseous flames. They became an army without the strength to battle, without strength to even stand.

Seemingly deliberately humiliating Ying Mingchao and the others, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster set up a prison cell with his spirit power and then tossed everyone from the allied army into that prison cell.

That prison cell was floating in the sky, and was very noticeable. Furthermore, as it was very large, the people down below were all able to notice it.

What the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had done could be said to be extremely inhumane.

However, not only was he not criticized by the crowd, he was instead showered with cheers and praise.

"Long live Lord Sectmaster! Despicable vile things like them should be punished!"

“This sort of punishment is simply not sufficient at all! You should kill them all! Only by killing them all will we be safe! Only by killing them all will our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm be peaceful!”

There were even those that shouted for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to kill Wang Qiang and the others.

Even though Wang Qiang and the others had never done anything wrong to them, these people were acting as if Wang Qiang and the others had killed their parents. They were truly ruthless.

Zi Xunyi was lying beside Ying Mingchao. With a weak voice, she asked, “Mingchao, don’t you regret that we’ve fought for people like them?”

“I do regret fighting for them. However, I don’t regret fighting against the Infant Soul Sect. Merely, I...”

As he saw Zi Xunyi beside him, as he saw her filled with wounds and changed beyond recognition, Ying Mingchao started to choke with emotions.

She was his most beloved woman. Yet now, she was tortured to such a state. But he was helpless to do anything about it.

He felt extremely pained in his heart. He started to blame himself for being so powerless.

“Everyone, don’t be so anxious. They will definitely receive their punishment.”

“However, before that, I wish to have everyone witness the power of our Infant Soul Grand Formation,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Lord Sectmaster, are you planning to activate the Infant Soul Grand Formation now?”

The crowd was immediately overjoyed upon hearing those words. After all, they had all traveled far and wide to this place for that Infant Soul Grand Formation, that grand formation capable of helping them increase their cultivation.

“That’s right, of course. Everyone, prepare yourselves for ascension to a higher state.”

After saying those words, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to form hand seals. Then, dark black gaseous flames started to emit from everyone from the Infant Soul Sect. The dark black gaseous flames shot directly to the sky and formed an enormous formation.

As for that dark black grand formation, it was the so-called Infant Soul Grand Formation.

Merely, compared to last time, it was much more imposing.

Like an enormous range of black clouds, this grand formation filled the entire sky and completely covered the hundreds of millions of people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm within it.

It was spinning and surging about.

Even though such a thing clearly looked like the arrival of a calamity, the hundreds of millions of people down below did not feel the slightest bit of fear. Instead, they were all showing ecstatic expressions.

Cheering and excited noises were sounding from the vast crowd nonstop.

"Everyone, this Infant Soul Grand Formation is capable of helping you all increase your cultivation. However, you all must remember one thing firmly."

"The Infant Soul Grand Formation will cover you all, assimilate itself into you and fuse with your souls."

"At that time, you all must relax and willingly accept its powers, willingly allow its powers to enter you and fuse with your souls. You must not resist it."

"The reason for that is because that is the only way for the Infant Soul Grand Formation to instill martial comprehension to you all. Else... you will have wasted the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. If you fail to obtain martial comprehension, do not blame the formation for being ineffective," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"We will definitely not let down Lord Sectmaster's kind intentions."

"Lord Sectmaster, go ahead and begin the operation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. We can wait no longer. We really want to fuse with the grand formation."

“That’s right, we truly want to enjoy the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation sooner.”

“Lord Sectmaster, please begin. Everyone here will firmly remember your kindness, we will firmly remember this grand day.”

The hundreds of millions of people were all shouting excitedly. They were all impatient to fuse with the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

They were so excited that none of them noticed that a smile had emerged on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s fleshless skull-like face.

That smile was ice-cold, wicked and frightening.

“Rest assured, I will make sure that everyone receives the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation.”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster finished saying those words, countless dark black gaseous flames started to surge from the Infant Soul Grand Formation. They descended straight down and landed on the hundreds of millions of people below.

Each dark black gaseous flame would reach a single person. They began to rapidly cover that person and completely seal them off.

At that moment, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang and the others that were trapped in the prison cell started to resist their injuries and looked down below.

They all wanted to see exactly what conspiracy the Infant Soul Sect was plotting. They all felt that the foundation of the plot should be that Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, the dark black gaseous flames that covered the vast crowd below started to glow with light blue light.

Ying Mingchao and the others felt that those light blue lights should be coming from the people that those gaseous flames covered.

The reason for that was because even though they were all emitting light blue light, the intensity of the light was different. The ones that shone brighter should be emitted by those with stronger cultivations.

As for those weak lights, they should be emitted by those with a weak level of cultivation.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

Suddenly, those blue lights started to be removed. Following the dark black gaseous flames, they emerged in the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Eeeeahhh~~~~~”

The next moment, miserable screams began to be heard from the millions of people.

Those screams were truly miserable. It was as if they were being tormented by thousands of blades. If a single person was to let out that sort of scream, it would be enough to cause others to feel panicky and uneasy.

When hundreds of millions of people all let out that sort of scream at the same time, it was truly frightening.

One would feel as if doomsday had arrived. Ninety percent of all the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were suffering from danger to their lives.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2642 - The Final Dawn

“Sure enough, there’s an issue. That is simply not a formation capable of increasing everyone’s cultivation. Instead, that is a demonic formation.”

“That formation is currently extracting everyone’s souls.”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao and the others that were imprisoned were finally able to understand the intention of the Infant Soul Sect.

Everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had been deceived. The Infant Soul Grand Formation that they had looked forward to, the Infant

Soul Grand Formation that brought them all together, was simply not a formation capable of helping them increase their cultivations.

Instead, it was a formation that extracted their souls and lives.

“Nooo!!!!”

“Eeaaahhh!!!!!!!!”

The miserable screams grew louder and louder. They filled the entire region. It was as if screams were resonating through the entire vast land of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

It was an incomparably mournful sound.

At that moment, the people who were covered by the dark black gaseous flames started to struggle violently.

However, they seemed to already be powerless. Even though it could be seen that they were struggling violently, not even a single person was able to break free from the dark black gaseous flames.

Just like that, they continued to have their souls extracted by the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“This is truly too cruel. This Infant Soul Sect is actually planning to refine all the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

At that moment, Grandmaster Pocket and many others were unable to continue watching. After all, such a scene was truly too miserable.

This was especially true for the monks like Grandmaster Pocket. Pitiful expressions filled their faces.

“Humph, those fools have wished for our deaths. They had forgotten about everything at the first sign of potential benefits.”

“What’s happening right now is for the best. They deserve it. Their deaths are their own fault.”

Zhao Hong said with an expression of hatred on her face. She was not a merciful person like Grandmaster Pocket.

All she knew was that when they, the allied army, fought for the sake of those people, they were betrayed by them. Then, they were insulted and held in contempt by them. She knew very well what sort of people they were.

“That’s right, those ignorant bastards deserve to die.”

What Zhao Hong said gained the approval of the great majority of the people from the allied army.

If it was before, they would definitely grieve upon seeing this sort of thing. After all, those were all living people.

However now, after they were betrayed by them, after they were spoken ill of and humiliated by them, after they witnessed those people’s true natures, they no longer felt any sympathy for those people. Instead, they only felt that the suffering of those people satisfied their hatred.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, an ear-piercing explosion suddenly sounded from the distant sky.

Looking toward the direction of the sound, the crowd was able to see that a golden light was rapidly approaching. One should know that that entire region had already been covered by the dark black gaseous flames. That entire region was already pitch black.

Thus, the sudden appearance of a golden ray of light like that was particularly eye-catching.

As that golden light grew closer and closer, the area covered by the golden light started to expand more and more.

It was as if what was approaching was a sun that was once again illuminating the earth.

“That is?”

Suddenly, Ying Mingchao and the others revealed a change in expression. The reason for that was because they discovered that the source of the golden radiance was a sword.

It was an enormous golden sword that reached several hundred meters long.

That golden sword was shining brightly with golden light. Although the size of the sword was still insignificant when compared to the dark black gaseous flames that filled the entire region, that sword was shining with golden light and extraordinary dominance.

As it passed, even the dark black gaseous flames started to squirm violently. It was as if they were trembling in fear.

Most importantly, on that enormous golden sword stood a figure.

As for that person... his clothes and hair were fluttering in the wind.

As the golden radiance was simply too dazzling, they were actually unable to see that person's appearance clearly.

However, for that person to appear at such a time and with such golden light, it was like dawn appearing during an apocalypse. Looking at him, one would start to feel hope in one's heart.

"Chu Feng! Look! It's C-Chu Feng! It's my B-Brother Chu Feng!!!"

Suddenly, Wang Qiang shouted sutteringly. Even though his face was already mutilated, one could still feel the joy that he felt at that moment.

"Chu Feng! It's Chu Feng! It really is Chu Feng!!!"

After verifying that it was Chu Feng, everyone in the allied army grew incomparably overjoyed.

After all, Chu Feng was someone who they all cared deeply about. While being able to be saved was one thing, Chu Feng's appearance at such a time also informed them that he was still alive.

As such, how could they not be in joy?

"Chu Feng? Why would he come now?"

Upon seeing Chu Feng, The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke with a displeased tone. He felt that Chu Feng's arrival would be a thorny problem.

He was able to sense how powerful Chu Feng was. Although Chu Feng's aura was only that of a rank one True Immortal, the enormous golden sword he was standing on was giving off an extremely powerful aura.

Most importantly, he was wholly concentrated on the operation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. As such, there was no way for him to fight Chu Feng. If he were to fight Chu Feng, this Infant Soul Grand Formation would have to cease operating.

At that moment, Chu Feng also noticed the situation with the Infant Soul Grand Formation. However, he did not even bother to pay attention to it. Instead, he directly rushed toward Ying Mingchao and the others.

The Ancient Era's War Sword shot through the sky and directly shattered the prison cell that Ying Mingchao and the others were trapped in.

After the prison cell was destroyed, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others, all being seriously injured, lost the ability to fly and started falling toward the surface.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after they started descending, a layer of gentle power caught them. It was a grand spirit formation.

After Chu Feng caught them with his grand spirit formation, he did not bother with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Instead, he sat cross-legged on the grand spirit formation and started to set up a healing formation.

After an hour passed, a healing formation was completed. It covered everyone in the allied army.

The badly mutilated bodies of the crowd that were in the grand spirit formation floating in midair started to heal, and soon returned to their original appearances.

Furthermore, the expressions of pain on their faces also lessened greatly. Even the dark black gaseous flames were being expelled.

“Chu Feng, my d-dear brother, I k-knew t-th-that you w-were still alive. S-Sure enough, y-you're alive.”

Wang Qiang was extremely overjoyed. Even though he was still extremely weak, he rushed limping toward Chu Feng and grabbed Chu Feng by the shoulder. He began to pat Chu Feng's shoulder and size him up repeatedly.

"Your cultivation actually increased to rank two True Immortal? This progression speed is simply too fast, no?" Chu Feng was extremely happy to see the progress that Wang Qiang had made.

Actually, Chu Feng was feeling extremely happy. Even though the people from the allied army appeared to be in a miserable state, their injuries were only superficial.

None of them had suffered any fatal injuries. This could be said to be great fortune among misfortune.

"O-of course. A-After all, I'm a g-ge-genius," Wang Qiang revealed a proud expression upon hearing those words. He added, "That s-said, y-you're pretty decent too, brother."

Wang Qiang's was naturally talking about Chu Feng's cultivation of rank one True Immortal.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng's cultivation was that of a rank one True Immortal, the aura of the Ancient Era's War Sword controlled by Chu Feng had already surpassed that of a rank one True Immortal. It was truly a heaven-defying method.

"Brother Chu Feng, it's truly great that you're fine. We have been worried to death for you."

At that moment, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi and everyone else from the allied army all dragged their weak bodies, arrived before Chu Feng and surrounded him.

Chu Feng's appearance not only informed them that he was safe and sound, but the power that Chu Feng revealed also made them feel a sense of security.

Although Chu Feng was only a rank one True Immortal, the aura Chu Feng emitted caused them to feel at ease.

This was especially true for the aura of that Ancient Era's War Sword. It was even greater than Wang Qiang from before.

This meant that the current Chu Feng was most definitely capable of contending against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Thus, Chu Feng's arrival was like the dawn of hope to them.

Not only was this dawn of hope capable of possibly saving them, it might also be capable of beating back the black gaseous flames that filled the sky and rescuing the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2643 - Chu Feng Vs. Infant Soul Sect

At that moment, Grandmaster Pocket rushed toward Chu Feng and begged with an anxious expression on his face, "Almsgiver Chu Feng, you must shatter that grand formation and stop the Infant Soul Sect. Else, all the people from our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will die tragically by that grand formation."

After hearing those words from Grandmaster Pocket, Chu Feng took a glance at the situation below. However, his expression was cold and detached.

Then, he looked to Grandmaster Pocket and said, "Grandmaster, even if you want to be merciful, you should still judge who to be merciful to."

"For people like them, people who repay kindness with malice, people who are unable to distinguish right from wrong, people who decided to attack you all out of their own self-interest even though you have come to help them, are you really certain that you want to save them still?"

"Almsgiver Chu Feng, regardless of what they've done, we absolutely cannot sit and watch; remaining indifferent. If they are all to die, it would be equivalent to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm perishing," Grandmaster Pocket continued to urge Chu Feng to help them.

However, Chu Feng ignored Grandmaster Pocket's plea. Instead, he turned to Ying Mingchao and the others, "While this grand formation is able to heal

everyone, its healing speed is relatively slow. Thus, it's best that everyone continues to stay in this grand formation.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others also started to disperse. They sat back in the grand healing formation in an orderly manner.

However, one person did not return to the grand healing formation. It was Grandmaster Pocket. He was still standing beside Chu Feng and urging Chu Feng to save those people.

“Grandmaster, everyone has their own way of handling things. Today, I, Chu Feng, will not go and kill those foolish traitors.”

“However, I will definitely not save them either,” Chu Feng said determinedly.

Grandmaster Pocket still wanted to urge Chu Feng against it after hearing those words.

However, at that time, Chu Feng cast his sharp gaze toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. He said, “However, as for that person, I must kill him.”

“Rumble~~~”

After saying those words, the Ancient Era's War Sword shot forth rapidly as if it were given a command. It was rushing toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

No matter how strong the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster might be, he was only the size of a regular human.

As for the Ancient Era's War Sword, it was several hundred meters in length. As it flew toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, it resembled a giant mountain. That sort of pressure was not something that ordinary people could possibly endure.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was completely confident. He did not even bother to move. Just like that, he stood there and waited for the Ancient Era's War Sword to arrive.

Finally, the Ancient Era's War Sword arrived before him. The enormous power made the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's clothes flutter violently. Spatial cracks even appeared in the surrounding space.

However, even with that being the case, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster still continued to stand there. Then, he raised his palm and pushed it forth explosively at the Ancient Era's War Sword. "Bang!" He had actually managed to push the Ancient Era's War Sword aside using only the power of his palm, causing it to return to Chu Feng.

However, once he attacked with his palm strike, his connection with the Infant Soul Grand Formation was severed. Immediately, the operation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation stopped.

Even though the Infant Soul Grand Formation had ceased its operation, the hundreds of millions of lives who were trapped by the Infant Soul Grand Formation were still unable to escape.

"Chu Feng, you are truly a genius. You've actually managed to reach a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm this quickly."

"Since you've become a True Immortal, why aren't you entering the Upper Realms? Why did you return? If I were you, I would definitely not have done such a thing," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"Because I cannot disregard the safety of my friends," Chu Feng said.

"You are quite loyal to your friends. However, what makes you think that you can save them? Is it because of that sword?"

"That sword must be from the inheritance you obtained from the Ancient Era's War Clan, no? It actually possesses the strength to surpass an entire level of cultivation. It is truly a heaven-defying secret skill."

As the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, he put the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand away.

"What's this? Did you lose the will to fight after seeing my Ancient Era's War Sword?" Chu Feng asked.

"No," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shook his head. He said, "I don't even need my Incomplete Immortal Armament to take care of you."

“Although your appearance has become even uglier, it seems that you’ve also become even more confident?” Chu Feng mocked.

“My confidence originates from the power that I currently possess.”

“As for your mere Ancient Era’s War Sword, it is simply impossible for it to match me,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Oh?” Chu Feng sneered upon hearing those words, “Since you said it like that, I will insist on killing you with the Ancient Era’s War Sword today.”

“Buzz~~~”

After Chu Feng said those words, his gaze shifted. Then, the Ancient Era’s War Sword started to rush toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster again.

“Although your Ancient Era’s War Sword possesses heaven-defying battle power, it will not be able to withstand a single blow from this Sectmaster.”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, he shot forth a palm strike.

“Boom~~~”

The overwhelming battle power turned into countless palm silhouettes. Those palm silhouettes started to bombard the Ancient Era’s War Sword repeatedly.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

The bombardment from the overwhelming power of the palm strike caused the Ancient Era’s War Sword to echo in vibration. It was being pushed back repeatedly.

“Humph.” n--0v&ℓb1n

Chu Feng let out a cold snort. Then, the Ancient Era’s War Sword started to emit even brighter golden light. At that moment, the power of the Ancient Era’s War Sword greatly increased.

Even though the martial power that filled the sky was still bombarding the Ancient Era’s War Sword, the Ancient Era’s War Sword was not moved a single jolt.

“You want to defeat my Ancient Era’s War Sword with merely an attack of this level? You are truly delusional,” Chu Feng mocked.

“This is merely the beginning,” After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, he unleashed another attack. This time around, he waved his sleeve, and an unending stream of martial power started to pour from his sleeves.

After his martial power was sent forth, it started to transform. Soon, a spear was formed.

Soon, countless more spears appeared. In an unceasing manner, they began to bombard the Ancient Era’s War Sword.

Most importantly, those golden spears were not merely an ordinary attack using martial power. Rather, it was a martial skill, a taboo martial skill.

Thus, at that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Sword started to sway left and right again. It appeared as if it would soon be defeated by the bombardment of spears.

However, Chu Feng did not panic in the slightest. He continued to have a calm and confident expression on his face.

“If that is all that you possess, then you really disappoint me. Seems like even after you’ve changed beyond recognition, you’re still this weak,” Chu Feng said indifferently. Then, he suddenly extended his fingers. At that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Sword started to be directly controlled by him.

At that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Sword seemed like an awakened lion that had lain dormant for a long time. The golden spears that filled the sky and were attacking it nonstop were like a bunch of fleas.

With a shake of its body, those golden spears that filled the sky all dispersed from it.

Then, the Ancient Era’s War Sword started to sweep across the sky and rush toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Seeing the incoming Ancient Era’s War Sword, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to increase the power of his martial skill.

At that moment, more and more golden martial power was pouring out from his sleeves. Its power was also growing stronger and stronger.

However, even though the golden spears that filled the entire sky continued to bombard the Ancient Era's War Sword, they were unable to shake the Ancient Era's War Sword in the slightest.

In fact, they were unable to even slow it down.

"Seems like I have underestimated you."

"That said, I refuse to believe that your mere secret skill will be able to contend against me."

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shouted. Then, his hands layered over one another and he began to form hand seals.

After he finished forming his hand seals, surging Immortal level martial power exploded from his body like a volcanic eruption.

Even the surrounding space started to violently tremble. In fact, both heaven and earth were trembling. Everyone present was able to clearly feel this intimidating power.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2644 - The Confident Chu Feng

"I shall see what other tricks you might have."

Chu Feng knew very well that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was preparing some sort of ability.

However, Chu Feng was filled with confidence. He was confident that he would be able to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Thus... even though Chu Feng knew very well that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was preparing some sort of ability, he did not stop him. Instead, Chu Feng actually stayed the Ancient Era's War Sword's attack.

Just like that, he quietly waited. He wanted to know exactly what the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster would do.

Chu Feng planned to utterly defeat the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Chu Feng wanted to make him realize that he would still be able to take his cur life even without utilizing the power of the Evil God Sword.

He wanted to get justice for his friends using his own strength.

"Buzz~~~"

Actually, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster finished preparing his trick very quickly.

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster clasped his palms together. The Immortal-level martial power that covered the sky above him started to gather together, and formed an enormous sword.

That sword was also golden in color. Not only was it emitting golden light, but it also appeared to be very life-like. It did not resemble something created with martial power. Instead, it resembled an enormous sword forged with gold.

Enormous sword, it was indeed an enormous sword. That enormous sword was over two thousand meters long. Even when looking at the sword from afar, it was still an actual colossus.

Before that enormous sword, the Ancient Era's War Sword's several hundred meter-length appeared to be extremely small.

Most importantly, the aura emitted by the enormous sword was also extremely fierce.

It was an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was no ordinary Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Instead, it was an extremely powerful Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

However, after the martial skill was formed, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not rush to immediately attack Chu Feng with it.

Instead, dark black gaseous flames started to emit from his body. Those dark black gaseous flames were assimilated into the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

In the blink of an eye, the enormous golden sword turned dark black.

Most importantly, the cries of infants were sounding nonstop from that enormous dark black sword. It was truly extremely horrifying.

At that moment, the power of that Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill increased by an entire level.

“This is bad. The martial skill the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is unleashing right now has fused with his demonic technique.”

“That demonic technique is simply too strange. Although Chu Feng’s Ancient Era’s War Sword is very powerful, it remains that Chu Feng’s cultivation is actually a level below that of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.”

At that moment, Zi Xunyi revealed a worried expression. She was able to sense that the aura of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s enormous dark black sword had completely surpassed Chu Feng’s Ancient Era’s War Sword.

If the two of them were to fight, it would likely be very unfavorable for Chu Feng.

“W-With how c-confident my b-brother is acting, h-he m-most definitely possesses c-certainty in v-victory. The I-Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster w-will n-not be a m-match f-for my brother,” Compared to Zi Xunyi, Wang Qiang was filled with confidence in Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, I will let you have a taste of the power of my Infant Soul Demon Sword.”

“I will have you know exactly whether it is your Ancient Era’s War Sword or my Infant Soul Demon Sword that is stronger.”

As the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, he began to form hand seals with one hand. Then, he pointed at Chu Feng with his other hand.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, that so-called Infant Soul Demon Sword carried with it countless infant cries, a frightening aura and majestic oppressive might as it was shot toward the Ancient Era’s War Sword.

That’s right, the Infant Soul Demon Sword was aimed at the Ancient Era’s War Sword, and not Chu Feng.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's intention was clear. He wanted to destroy Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword so as to manifest his strength.

"Precisely what I wanted."

Chu Feng was not to be outdone. He too urged the Ancient Era's War Sword to attack the Infant Soul Demon Sword.

At that moment, how could Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and the others have the heart to continue healing their injuries?

All of them were staring at the battle ahead. All of them wanted to know exactly who would win the battle.

After all, this was not only a battle that concerned victory and defeat, it was also a battle that concerned one's honor and disgrace.

Finally, the two enormous swords reached one another.

One was an enormous dark black sword reaching two thousand meters in length.

The other was an enormous golden sword reaching three hundred meters in length.

One was called the Infant Soul Demon Sword and emitted an overwhelming demonic aura.

The other was called the Ancient Era's War Sword, and was filled with extraordinary battle intent.

"Rumble~~~"

Finally, the two enormous swords collided.

At that moment, dark black gaseous flames started to surge about.

The Infant Soul Demon Sword that reached two thousand meters in length was actually shattered.

As for the Ancient Era's War Sword, it was completely unscathed.

Seeing this scene, Ying Mingchao was unable to contain himself from shouting "Great job!" He was so excited that he was even tightly clenching his fists.

It was not only him, all the people in the allied army were overjoyed.

At the same time, they also started to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword.

Originally, they all felt that the Ancient Era's War Sword would be inferior to the Infant Soul Demonic Sword judging by their auras.

However, when they collided, they realized that there was actually such an enormous disparity in power between the two swords.

The Ancient Era's War Sword was the actual victor. At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword was floating over ten thousand meters high in the sky. No matter how the dark black gaseous flames tried to attack it, it was unmoved in the slightest. The aura of a sovereign was completely revealed by it.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword started to move. It was moving straight toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Furthermore, the attack this time around was different from all of its previous attacks. Not only was the Ancient Era's War Sword extremely fast, but the aura that it emitted was also extremely frightening.

This time around, Chu Feng was no longer holding back. Instead, he had unleashed the true power of the Ancient Era's War Sword. He was really planning to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Damn it!"

Sensing that the situation was amiss, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster placed his hand toward his Cosmos Sack.

The next moment, his Incomplete Immortal Armament Dragonscale Dagger appeared in his hand.

Once he held the Incomplete Immortal Armament in hand, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's battle power immediately and greatly increased.

This was the power of an Incomplete Immortal Armament. With it in hand, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was like an existence on a completely different power level. He was simply unable to be discussed alongside his previous self.

"Heeaahh!!!"

Once he held the Dragonscale Dagger in hand, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster immediately slashed with it, and sent forth an enormous golden blade ray that swept across the sky.

"Clank!" The Ancient Era's War Sword collided with the golden blade ray.

Merely, this time around, the Ancient Era's War Sword was unable to advance like it did before. It was actually beaten back. It was beaten back by that golden blade ray.

Not only was it beaten back, but a huge chip also appeared on the body of the Ancient Era's War Sword. That chip was precisely the location where the golden blade ray struck earlier.

"This..." Seeing this scene, the expressions of Ying Mingchao and the others changed enormously.

Deep worry emerged in their eyes. Judging from the situation at hand, it would appear that even Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword was unable to defeat the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster when he held an Incomplete Immortal Armament in hand.

"T-Truly despicable! D-Didn't you say that y-you wouldn't be using your I-Incomplete Immortal Armament? Y-Your a-actions are those of a s-sore loser!"

"Y-You damned t-trash, d-damned c-coward!!!"

Wang Qiang was unable to continue watching, and started to loudly curse at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“That’s right! So much for declaring how confident you were earlier, and stating that you would not use your Incomplete Immortal Armament! Turns out, you immediately used your Incomplete Immortal Armament the moment you started losing! You are despicable and shameless to the extreme!”

After Wang Qiang spoke, many others from the allied army also started to curse at the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster refused to accept those curses.

Proudly, he declared, “This Incomplete Immortal Armament is this Sectmaster’s possession. If I don’t want to use it, I won’t use it. When I want to use it, I’ll use it. What can you all possibly do about it?”

“So what if I went back on my words today? What can you all possibly do about it?”

“This world is one where might is right. All the rest are merely farts.”

“As for you all, regardless of how unjust you feel this is, regardless of how angry you might be, there’s nothing that you can do to me.”

“You all... can only wait to be slaughtered by me.”

“You!!!” Hearing those words, the crowd from the allied army all started to gnash their teeth in fury.

They were truly unable to tolerate how openly despicable and shameless the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was.

“Are you certain that you will be able to defeat me today?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded.

Compared to the crowd from the allied army, Chu Feng did not reveal any anger. Instead, he was extremely calm.

Furthermore, he spoke with a very confident tone.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2645 - Mutual Destruction

“Humph.”

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster snorted coldly. Then, he looked to Chu Feng, seemingly as if he wanted to continue to insult him.

“That is?”

However, at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed an enormous change in expression.

The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that an item had appeared in Chu Feng’s previously-empty hands.

It was a piece of four-sided scrap metal.

However, it was precisely that scrap metal that made him feel enormous threat.

“Isn’t that thing Chu Feng holding the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler from Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnant?”

At that moment, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang’s eyes started to shine. They had all seen the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler before.

However, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler from back then could not even be considered to be an Ancestral Armament. Yet now... it was emitting an aura far superior to an Ancestral Armament.

Only the Dragonscale Dagger that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster held in his hand was comparable to Chu Feng’s Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

“Incomplete Immortal Armament. Brother Chu Feng actually managed to obtain an Incomplete Immortal Armament?” At that moment, Ying Mingchao and the others were all overjoyed.

They finally realized why Chu Feng was this confident. It turned out that not only did he grasp the powerful secret skill, the Ancient Era’s War Sword, but he also possessed an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

At that moment when the people from the allied army were overjoyed, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a worried frown.

Actually, there were two more people secretly watching everything.

They were the Chu Heavenly Clan's Chu Huai and Chu Yue.

Chu Huai was holding an umbrella.

That umbrella was very large. Most importantly, that umbrella was sparkling with a faint light the entire time. As the light sprinkled down on them, it turned the two of them transparent like the umbrella.

It was a treasure, a treasure that could conceal the two of them.

At the very least, no one could detect the two of them as they watched Chu Feng and the others from afar.

Seeing the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler in Chu Feng's hand, Chu Huai said, "No wonder that Chu Feng was able to reach a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm this quickly. Seems like he ran into some sort of chance encounter."

He felt that Chu Feng's Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler should be something that he obtained from a certain remnant, and that Chu Feng's breakthrough in cultivation must be related to that remnant too.

"Isn't his Incomplete Immortal Armament a bit too ugly? Why does it resemble a counterfeit?" Chu Yue said with a look of disgust.

"That is indeed an Incomplete Immortal Armament. Merely, its appearance is simply too lacking," Chu Huai shook his head. He also did not understand why an Incomplete Immortal Armament would have such an appearance.

"Regardless, with Chu Feng having that Incomplete Immortal Armament, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster will be in imminent peril."

"Let's get a bit closer," As Chu Huai spoke, he pulled Chu Yue and began to move toward Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Hey! Don't get closer. I think senior is most definitely in the vicinity and observing everything. If he is to discover that the two of us haven't left yet, he will definitely scold us," Chu Yue said.

"Didn't I say that with this umbrella here, unless one is a Heavenly Immortal-level expert or above, no one will be able to see the two of us?"

“Even though senior is powerful, he is only a peak True Immortal. It is impossible for him to detect the two of us,” Chu Huai said.

“Really?” Chu Yue asked.

“Really,” Chu Huai nodded with certainty.

“Okay then,” Chu Yue was unable to change Chu Huai’s mind, and thus decided to agree with his decision.

However, an excited expression soon appeared in her eyes. It could be seen that she actually also wanted to approach the battle.

“Die!”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng unleashed his attack. That said, he did not directly rush to attack the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Instead, he controlled the Ancient Era’s War Sword and moved it toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to attack him.

Since Chu Feng had declared that he would kill the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster with his Ancient Era’s War Sword, he planned to use the Ancient Era’s War Sword to kill him. n/-0V eL B In

“Damn it! Where did this little bastard obtain an Incomplete Immortal Armament?”

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster turned around and started to flee. He actually did not dare to face Chu Feng.

This action by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was understandable. After Chu Feng revealed his Incomplete Immortal Armament, the chipped Ancient Era’s War Sword was immediately restored to how it was, and even grew much larger. Furthermore, the aura that it currently emitted brought fear to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s heart.

“Buzz~~~”

While escaping from Chu Feng, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster suddenly felt that some things had appeared in his palm again.

Looking down toward his palm, he discovered that they were forbidden medicines. It was the same golden forbidden medicine. The amount this time around was even greater than last time.

“Break them apart and their effect will be activated,” Right at that moment, that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man’s voice sounded again.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew nervous. The forbidden medicines he had taken earlier had already overburdened his body. He was already playing with his life. When the backlash from those forbidden medicines arrived, he might only have a slight chance of survival.

And if he were to take those forbidden medicines too, it was likely not even the heavens would be able to save him.

“Rest assured, those forbidden medicines will not take your life. They are extremely precious forbidden medicines. Their backlash is not as strong as you imagine them to be.”

“Break them apart, and I guarantee that you will live.”

Knowing that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was worried, that old man started to urge him.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster still didn’t believe that old man. He continued to hesitate on using the forbidden medicines.

“Use them immediately. Else, you will die by Chu Feng’s sword. Are you really willing to be defeated by a brat like him?” The old man said.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster suddenly realized that the enormous aura was growing closer to him. He turned around and discovered that the Ancient Era’s War Sword was already on him and approaching. He was unable to escape.

“Chu Feng, even if it ends in mutual destruction, I will still make you die first.”

As the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke, he smashed apart all of the forbidden medicines in his palm.

“Rumble~~~”

The next moment, surging golden gaseous flames erupted from his body. The gaseous flames were so powerful that they managed to knock the Ancient Era's War Sword away.

Like a loose leaf, the Ancient Era's War Sword that was over three hundred meters long started to roll in the sky as it was knocked several miles away in an instant.

"That is?" Witnessing that scene, the expressions of Ying Mingchao and the others all changed.

The reason for that was because none of them noticed that golden forbidden medicines appeared in the hand of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Thus, none of them knew what had happened.

At that moment, they could only tell that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was enveloped by enormously powerful golden gaseous flames. His silhouette simply could not even be seen clearly within the golden gaseous flames.

That said, an extremely powerful aura was being emitted from within the golden gaseous flames.

That sort of sensation caused the crowd to feel unease.

"Big brother Chu Huai, exactly what did he use?" Even Chu Yue from the Upper Realm was unable to contain her curiosity.

"It's a forbidden medicine. An extremely precious forbidden medicine. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm shouldn't possess this sort of forbidden medicine. It must be from the Upper Realms. How did this Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster obtain those forbidden medicines?" Chu Huai started to ponder.

"This is bad. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's aura is rapidly rising. Heavens... it's already infinitely close to that of a rank three True Immortal."

"Those forbidden medicines are simply too powerful. With his strength, even though he has not truly reached rank three True Immortal, it is likely no one with a cultivation of rank two True Immortal or below will be a match for him," Chu Yue said nervously.

As someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, she also deeply detested the Infant Soul Sect. Thus, neither she nor Chu Huai wanted the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to defeat Chu Feng.

On the contrary, they both wanted Chu Feng to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, another loud explosion sounded. The golden gaseous flames that had surrounded the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to rapidly scatter about in all directions. At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster reappeared before the crowd.

“This guy?!”

Seeing the current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, Ying Mingchao and the others started to panic even more.

The current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was no longer a skeleton. He had regained his former appearance.

Merely, it was not an actual corporeal body. Rather, he was in a spirit body form.

Merely, his spirit body form was different from ordinary spirit bodies.

Ordinary spirit bodies were generally either transparent, light blue or dark blue.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's spirit body was golden in color.

Furthermore, he was currently emitting an extremely powerful aura.

It was so powerful....

...that Ying Mingchao and the others felt despair.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2646 - Chu Feng's Trump Card

“Chu Feng, this is bad! You must escape! Do not worry about us!” Zi Xunyi shouted.

“B-Brother, g-get away from here!” Even Wang Qiang started to urge Chu Feng to leave.

In fact, the great majority of the people in the allied army were urging Chu Feng to escape.

The only difference between them was that some were shouting at Chu Feng, whereas others were sending him voice transmissions.

It was not that they looked down on Chu Feng.

Actually, it was already an extremely extraordinary accomplishment for Chu Feng to be able to suppress the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to such a state with his cultivation of rank one True Immortal.

They felt that Chu Feng’s reputation as a genius was fully justified, that he was already the strongest among them.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had used some sort of unknown method that actually evolved him to such a state.

The current Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was simply too powerful. They felt that Chu Feng would not be able to defeat him no matter what.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, with a thought, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster sent forth his overwhelming oppressive might to cover the entire region. At that moment, not a single person in that region was able to move.

“Escape? All of you will die here today. All of you will die by my hands. Not a single one of you will be able to escape,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng slowly said, “Who told you that I’m going to escape?”

Not only was his tone calm, but there was not even the slightest change in Chu Feng’s expression. Instead, Chu Feng was looking at the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster with a gaze filled with mockery.

“That Chu Feng, how could he be this confident? Could it be... he still possesses a method to contend against the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster?” Chu Yue asked.

“I’m not sure. Merely, this Chu Feng’s origin is no small matter. He might be a genius from a certain Upper Realm that was sent here to train. If that’s the case, he should have some sort of method capable of contending against the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.”

“No, it’s not should. Instead, this Chu Feng most definitely possesses trump card or cards that he has yet to use,” Chu Huai said with certainty.

“But, his cultivation is only a rank one True Immortal. He has also utilized his Incomplete Immortal Armament. What other method could he possibly have? Could it be that he’s planning to take forbidden medicines too?” Chu Yue asked.

Chu Yue felt that apart from taking forbidden medicines, there was nothing more that Chu Feng could do that would allow him to contend against the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“That’s not necessarily the case. If he is really from a certain Upper Realm’s Heavenly Clan, he most definitely possesses some sort of powerful treasure to dare to come here to train alone.”

“With that treasure, not to mention the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, likely, even those more powerful than him will be killed,” Chu Huai said.

“I have heard of that sort of treasure before. However, only geniuses from the Upper Realms would possess that sort of treasure to protect themselves,” Chu Yue said.

“That Chu Feng is still so young. Yet he has already managed to possess that sort of cultivation. Could he not be considered a genius still?” Chu Huai asked.

“This...” Chu Yue hesitated for a while. She seemed to be unable to find grounds to refute Chu Huai. However, she didn’t really approve of Chu Huai saying that Chu Feng was a genius. Thus, she could only nod and say, “I guess he could reluctantly be considered one...”

“Look, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster has unleashed his attack,” Chu Huai said.

Hearing that, Chu Yue also cast her gaze to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. It was only at that moment that she discovered that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had formed an enormous sword using his martial power.

That enormous sword was a thousand meters long. It was not a martial skill. Rather, it was formed purely with martial power.

However, the aura emitted by that enormous sword was much stronger than the Infant Soul Demon Sword that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster unleashed earlier.

The reason for that was because the current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was simply too powerful.

Although he had not really become a rank three True Immortal, his aura was infinitely close to that of a rank three True Immortal.

In short, the current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster could not be considered an ordinary rank two True Immortal.

"Chu Feng, I'll admit that you're a rarely-seen genius. If you are to continue to mature, your future accomplishments will be unlimited. This Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will not be able to contain you."

"But, why is it that you insist on making an enemy out of me today?"

"You've made the wrong decision. You should not have made an enemy out of me. However, you are already unable to go back on your decision."

"The reason for that is because you've completely enraged me. I am determined to kill you."

"I will personally end the future of a genius like you," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke with rage fuming between his gritted teeth.

It could be seen that he was truly filled with hatred toward Chu Feng.

That was understandable too. He had been forced to take all those forbidden medicines by Chu Feng. Even his life was about to disappear. How could he not feel hatred for Chu Feng?

“This should be your final trump card, no?”

“You’ve taken a great amount of forbidden medicines to acquire your current power. After the effect of the forbidden medicine has passed, your soul will immediately dissipate.”

“For the sake of killing me, you have truly gone all-out without a concern for anything. However, there is still one thing that I must tell you,” Chu Feng said.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to frown. He asked impatiently, “What is it?”

“Even with that being the case, you will still not be able to injure me in the slightest,” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogance!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was enraged upon hearing those words.

Then, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster pointed his palm at Chu Feng in a commanding manner. Then, that enormous sword formed with martial power measuring over a thousand meters long began to fly straight toward Chu Feng to attack him.

Once the enormous martial power sword started to move, a buzzing noise began to be heard. The space around it started to tremble violently. Ying Mingchao and the others, even though they were in the grand healing formation, started to sway left and right. It was as if they could fall out of the grand healing formation at any time.

However, even though the enormous martial power sword was rapidly approaching Chu Feng, Chu Feng remained motionless with a confident expression on his face.

“Why is Chu Feng still not acting? Could it be that he has given up?” Chu Yue grew anxious.

“No, with how confident he is, he most definitely possesses a method to turn the situation around. He must still have a trump card,” compared to Chu Yue, Chu Huai was confident in Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded from the sky.

It was an enormous lightning strike. Like a giant dragon, it appeared in the sky and was seemingly tearing it apart.

“How could this be?”

When that lightning strike appeared, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed an enormous change in expression. He was astonished to discover that the enormous martial power sword that he had sent straight at Chu Feng grew completely motionless the moment that lightning strike’s thunder was heard.

No matter how he tried to urge it to move, his enormous martial power sword was unable to proceed forward in the slightest.

At that moment, Chu Huai had an enormous change in expression. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “Look! Chu Feng, he...!”

“Heavens, that is?!”

Upon looking, even Chu Yue revealed an enormous change in expression; disbelief filled her eyes.

“How could this be?!”

In fact, even that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man who was hidden somewhere deep in the sky revealed an enormous change in expression.

That old man had been observing the battle below the entire time. Like a god, he was controlling the entire situation.

He felt that since he was helping the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, it would be impossible for Chu Feng to be able to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

However, at that moment, a frenetic expression emerged in his eyes.

That’s right, he had started to panic. He was unable to keep his calm after seeing the current Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~~”

Another loud explosion was heard. Following that, countless nine-colored bolts of lightning appeared in the sky that was covered by the dark black gaseous flames.

The nine-colored lightnings were like countless enormous dragons galloping about in the sky. They extended continuously for miles on end. It was a spectacular sight.

“Impossible! Impossible! This is impossible!!!” Shouted the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster in a completely unwilling manner as he stared at the current Chu Feng.

Actually, at that moment, everyone was staring at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was still standing where he was. However, compared to before, he was like a completely different person.

The reason for that was because the lightning, the nine-colored lightning, was flickering in his eyes.

Most importantly, nine-colored lightning was also moving about on his forehead. Faintly, they formed a single character.

“Lightning Mark, Chu Feng was actually able to condense a Lightning Mark. He... just reached True Immortal realm and is already able to liberate the Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark’s power?” Chu Yue was unable to remain calm.

After reaching the True Immortal realm, both Heavenly Bloodlines and Divine Powers would be sealed. Only those with exceptional talent would be able to liberate those powers.

Furthermore, that was also something that required the accumulation of time to accomplish.

As for Chu Yue, although she had been a True Immortal for some time now, it remained that she was still unable to liberate the power of her Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark.

Yet, this Chu Feng, who had just stepped into the True Immortal realm, was able to liberate the power of his Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark. With this, how could she not be astonished?

One should know that even in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan, very few people were capable of liberating the power of their Heavenly Bloodline's Lightning Mark in True Immortal realm.

As for those who were capable of liberating the power of their Heavenly Bloodline's Lightning Mark right after becoming True Immortals, only those demon-level geniuses from their Chu Heavenly Clan were capable of accomplishing that.

"Big brother Chu Huai, you were right, this Chu Feng is truly a genius," Chu Yue said to Chu Huai. If she did not acknowledge Chu Feng earlier, she fully acknowledged him now.

"No, he's not merely a genius," Chu Huai said.

"Ah?" Chu Yue was confused.

"Chu Yue, carefully look at the character on his forehead. That is no ordinary Lightning Mark. Instead, it's the legendary Divine level Lightning Mark," Chu Huai said.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2647 - Silencing

The nine-colored lightnings in the sky grew more and more numerous. They soon covered the entire sky and stretched continuously for several miles.

With the nine-colored lightnings in the sky, the might of the Infant Soul Grand Formation was completely suppressed.

All of it was because of Chu Feng.

However, if that was all there were to it, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster would not panic like he did.

The reason why he was panicking so much was because after Chu Feng used his Divine level Lightning Mark, his cultivation had increased from rank one True Immortal to rank two True Immortal.

Chu Feng had managed to increase his cultivation by an entire level. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was unable to accept this fact.

There were many Heavenly Clans in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and countless Heavenly Bloodline possessors. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had witnessed these so-called Lightning Marks many times before.

However, those Lightning Marks were only able to increase one's battle power.

Although Lightning Marks were an ability that Heavenly Bloodline possessors would only obtain after their Nine Lightnings Fusion, and was the final ability that Heavenly Bloodline possessors would awaken, the Lightning Mark was relatively weak compared to the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, abilities that could increase one's cultivation.

However, Chu Feng's Lightning Mark was not at all weaker than his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. After all... his Lightning Mark had increased his cultivation by an entire level.

"That seems to be the character Divine?"

"I've heard that only Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques can allow one to condense a Divine level Lightning Mark."

"As for this Chu Feng, he actually managed to even increase his cultivation by an entire level. He has most definitely trained in that legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique."

"Heavens! Exactly what is his origin? He actually managed to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, something that no one in our Chu Heavenly Clan possesses right now."

After Chu Yue further observed Chu Feng, she grew even more astonished.

Actually, Chu Yue and Chu Huai had both heard rumors that Chu Feng's Lightning Mark displayed the character Divine.

However, as they knew very well that only those who had trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique were able to condense a Divine level Lightning Mark, they did not trust the rumors.

The reason for that was because they did not feel that Chu Feng would be capable of training in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was a legend even for the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Not only was the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique extremely rare, even if one could learn it, very few people dared to train in it. The reason for that was because each and every tribulation from the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique could take one's life. One must either succeed or die trying, with no other option.

The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan knew that very well. The reason for that was because there had been people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Even now, there were many people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that had witnessed the might of the Divine Tribulation's lightning.

"Exactly what is the origin of this Chu Feng?" A trace of admiration appeared in the gaze with which Chu Huai looked to Chu Feng.

Asking himself truthfully, he knew that he would not be able to handle the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. However, Chu Feng had successfully managed to handle it. As such, he naturally felt admiration for Chu Feng.

After all, both of them were Heavenly Bloodline possessors.

Suddenly, Chu Yue asked, "Chu Huai, say, could this Chu Feng possibly be Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child?"

"That's impossible. Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child has already died," Chu Huai said.

"But his name..." Chu Yue said.

"With how vast the world is, there are countless people with the same name and surname. You can't assume that just because it's a Heavenly Bloodline possessor with the name Chu Feng that he would definitely be Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child," Chu Huai said.

"The key aspect is his Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique," Chu Yue said.

Hearing those words, Chu Huai started to hesitate. However, he soon shook his head again, "No, Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child has already died. Furthermore, this Chu Feng must be using a pseudonym. His actual name couldn't possibly be Chu Feng. Rather, he simply cannot be surnamed Chu."

Chu Huai spoke with great certainty.

"Boom~~~"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword suddenly started moving. In merely the blink of an eye, it arrived before the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

That brightly shining Ancient Era's War Sword was less than a meter away from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

At such a short distance, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had simply lost all opportunity to escape. Only death by the Ancient Era's War Sword awaited him.

However, Chu Feng did not kill him immediately. Rather, he stood there and looked at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

At the beginning, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had a panicky expression. He was filled with a fear of death. Soon, that fear grew stronger and stronger. Perhaps it was because he didn't want to die, but his body started to shiver and tremble violently. His trembling was so strong that anyone could see it.

However, after a short period of time passed, the fear on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's face actually eased somewhat. Then, he started to laugh bitterly.

"My master once said to me that the most unreasonable people in this world are the geniuses."

"Today, I finally believe his esteemed self's words."

"Geniuses are truly the most unreasonable people in this world," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said with a wry smile.

Earlier, he felt extremely unreconciled to be suppressed by Chu Feng. However, he now no longer possessed the feeling of irreconciliation.

As matters stood, he had no choice but to accept that he was inferior to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng possessed heaven-defying powers.

It was something that ordinary people did not possess.

“Tell me, exactly what sort of seal are you trying to undo with this grand formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“What? Seal?” Hearing those words, the people from the allied army and even Chu Yue and Chu Huai were all surprised.

They all knew that the grand formation that Chu Feng was talking about was that Infant Soul Grand Formation. However, none of them were able to tell that it was an unsealing formation.

“Amazing, you actually managed to see through it,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster laughed bitterly. Then, he said, “However, I am someone who is definitely going to die. Why should I tell you?”

“If I were you, I would state the reason,” Chu Feng said.

“Is that so? Give me a reason why,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“I know that all of this is not something that you planned to do. Your Infant Soul Sect... does not have the ability to set up such a grand formation.”

“Someone taught you this formation. Furthermore, you are being helped from the shadows.”

“You’ve done everything for the sake of another. You are but a tool, a puppet manipulated by another.”

“Being exploited for so long, what sort of benefits have you obtained? Is the benefit just continued exploitation? Is the benefit those forbidden medicines that you’ve taken that will cause you to lose your life?”

“The person exploiting you simply does not care about your life, the lives of everyone from your Infant Soul Sect or the lives of everyone in the Hundred

Refinements Ordinary Realm. All that person cares about is accomplishing their goal,” Chu Feng said.

As he spoke, his voice grew louder and louder, more and more intimidating.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew silent.

At that moment, Chu Huai, Chu Yue, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others all revealed marvelous expressions. They truly had no idea that everything the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did was under someone else’s dictation.

Most importantly, judging from the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s current appearance, it seemed that he had admitted to it.

“If I were you, I would say everything even if I was to die.”

“It wouldn’t be considered betrayal. After all, it is simply unworthy to shield someone like that,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster closed his eyes. When he opened his eyes again, there was a trace of relief in his gaze.

“Indeed, this is an unsealing formation. It is a grand formation that can only be operated using living souls.”

“Due to the fact that I possessed limited capabilities, I was unable to set up a grand formation that could forcibly deprive another of their soul.”

As such, I needed the cooperation of others. I needed those whose souls are going to be extracted to willingly fuse with the grand formation.”

“That is why... I created the lie stating that this grand formation was capable of helping others increase their cultivation.”

“It was all so that I could obtain their cooperation.”

“As for the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s cultivation breakthrough, he had actually already broken through to rank one True Immortal. We merely hid his cultivation using special medicines. That is why others were unable to detect his actual cultivation, and thought that this grand formation actually helped him increase his cultivation,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“In that case, what is it that this grand formation is trying to unseal?” Chu Feng asked with a serious expression.

A grand formation that was operated using countless souls, the thing that it would unseal was most definitely not something good.

“I have no idea,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster shook his head.

“Then who is the person instructing you from the shadows?” Chu Feng asked.

“He is Chu...”

“Bang~~~~”

Before he could finish his words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster exploded.

At that moment, everyone’s expression changed enormously. The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not act to kill the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Thus, it meant that someone else had killed the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Someone had silenced him!!!

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2648 - Mastermind

“Sure enough!”

At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown.

At the same time, the expressions of worry and astonishment on Ying Mingchao and the others’ faces also grew stronger.

The scene earlier had allowed them to know that there was indeed a mastermind behind the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

As for the mastermind, he was most definitely an extremely powerful individual, so powerful that they simply could not contend against him.

Furthermore, that person was present. It was very likely that that person would attack Chu Feng and the others.

That said, as matters stood, there was already no choice left for Chu Feng.

He was making a gamble. He was gambling on that individual not daring to show himself and attacking them.

The reason why Chu Feng dared to make such a gamble was because he felt that if that individual was capable of doing things himself, he would definitely not have gone through the effort to have the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster help him.

Thus, he most definitely possessed some sort of reason that made it so that he was unable to handle things personally.

“Quickly, run away! Run away!”

At that moment, the people from the Infant Soul Sect started to flee in disarray.

When even their strongest Sectmaster was killed, if they were to continue stay there, they would only be waiting for death.

As Chu Feng saw the escaping members of the Infant Soul Sect, coldness gleamed in his eyes.

Chu Feng started to recall the infants that had died miserably. Those people that were currently fleeing were the culprits that had slaughtered infants.

With a thought, Chu Feng's oppressive might began to move toward the fleeing members of the Infant Soul Sect in a manner capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

.....

At that moment, muffled explosions began to be heard nonstop in the air like firecrackers.

Following each muffled explosion, a person from the Infant Soul Sect's body and soul would be blown up.

In merely a split second, all the Infant Soul Sect's members were killed. Like rain, their blood began to sprinkle down from the sky.

It was a truly devastating scene. However, not a single person from the allied army felt any sympathy for them when they saw this. Even people like Grandmaster Pocket, people that possessed a kind and merciful heart, did not feel any sympathy.

They all knew very well that the people from the Infant Soul Sect had done countless evils, and that their deaths could not wipe away their sins.

"Chu Feng, that grand formation is still here," right at that moment, Her Lady Queen called Chu Feng's attention to the Infant Soul Sect's grand formation.

Actually, Chu Feng had noticed it even without Her Lady Queen telling him about it. That grand formation condensed by the crowd from the Infant Soul Sect was still present in the sky, and covering the entire region.

Logically, as the people who had set up that formation had already been killed, the grand formation should have dissipated. After all, it was a grand formation created by the special powers that the people from the Infant Soul Sect possessed, and not a spirit formation.

That said, it was precisely because that grand formation that should have dissipated had yet to dissipate that it was strange.

"This grand formation is too dangerous. We can't stay here."

"Woosh~~~"

After Chu Feng said those words, he swept the Ancient Era's War Sword across the sky with a single thought, and severed all the dark black gaseous flames that served as the connections that Infant Soul Grand Formation had with the hundreds of millions of lives below.

The next moment, the crowd that was originally covered by the dark black gaseous flames finally managed to escape.

However, it was only when they escaped from the black gaseous flames that the crowd discovered that over half of the people had already died.

All those with weak levels of cultivation were already dead. All those who were still alive possessed relatively decent levels of cultivation.

That said, even all those that were still alive were left in a completely shriveled state of skin and bones. Regardless of what their ages were, they were all filled with wrinkles, and all of their hair had fallen out. They were incomparably aged.

Every one of them resembled corpses that had walked out from their coffins. Their appearances were extremely frightening.

It could be seen that they had not just had their souls extracted. This time around, they had paid an enormous price for their ignorance and greed.

“Putt~~~”

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred. All the people who were still alive, regardless of their gender and status, all knelt on the ground and began to bow to Chu Feng with both hands held in front of them.

“Lord Chu Feng, we were foolish. Thank you for saving us.”

“Lord Chu Feng, we were wrong. We wrongly accused you all. We deserve to die ten thousand times for our crimes.”

At that moment, the people kneeling on the ground, regardless of their age and gender, were all wailing and crying tears of remorse.

Chu Feng noticed that even the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and the Headmaster of the Immortal Sword School were among them. Although they were not kowtowing with their hands before them like the others, their faces were also covered with tears of remorse.

From this, it could be seen that even though they were trapped, they had managed to hear everything that had happened earlier, hear the entire conversation between Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

They now all knew that they’d fallen for the Infant Soul Sect’s plot, and that Ying Mingchao and the others were right.

Upon thinking about what they’d done, they felt endlessly ashamed.

“There’s no need to thank me. I did not come here to save you all. Your lives and deaths are unrelated to me,” Chu Feng said coldly. He was completely unmoved by the thanks from the crowd.

In fact, Chu Feng did not even bother to take a look at them. Chu Feng’s eyes have been fixed onto the sky. He was staring at the surging Infant Soul Grand Formation.

That grand formation was much more complicated than Chu Feng had imagined it to be. Chu Feng felt that as long as the Infant Soul Grand Formation remained, they would still be in danger.

“Chu Feng, I have truly underestimated you.”

“That said, you are still unable to change anything.”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from above the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Oh no!”

Hearing that voice, the crowd present all grew nervous. Some people even started to involuntarily shiver in fear.

As matters stood, they all knew that someone was instructing the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster from behind. As for that person... since he was capable of manipulating the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, he was most definitely an exceptionally powerful existence.

As for that voice, it was very possible for it to be that individual’s voice.

Since that voice was heard, it meant that individual was most definitely planning to act.

If that individual were to act, who could possibly stop him? Even Chu Feng would likely not be a match for him.

With the situation being as it was, how could the crowd not be scared?

“Run away!”

Suddenly, someone shouted.

It was unknown who shouted the first cry to run away. However, immediately after that shout was heard, the crowd that was kneeling on the ground immediately stood up.

They began to soar into the sky, run on the ground and even dig into the earth. They were using all of their powers and all of their abilities to escape far away from that place.

“That bunch of craven and cowardly trash,” Seeing such a scene, Zhao Hong felt disgust from the bottom of her heart.

It was no wonder Chu Feng did not appreciate the thanks from those people. Those people were simply too selfish.

“That voice earlier?”

At the moment when that voice sounded, Chu Huai revealed an expression of disbelief.

He then looked to Chu Yue, and discovered that she too had the same sort of expression of disbelief in her eyes.

“Chu Huai, am I mistaking things? That voice earlier seemed to be Senior Chu Bore’s voice,” Chu Yue said to Chu Huai.

[1. Bore is the chinese translation of the sanskrit word prajña meaning wisdom.]

She was unwilling to believe this, for that voice was their senior’s voice.

However, if it really was their senior Chu Bore’s voice, it would mean that the mastermind manipulating the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was Chu Bore.

“I am also uncertain,” Chu Huai shook his head. Actually, it wasn’t that he was uncertain. Rather, he did not dare to make a judgment.

The reason for that was because this matter was of major significance.

Chu Bore was the person in charge of overseeing the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. His task was to determine whether they had accomplished their missions with their own power. Apart from that, he should not involve himself in anything in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, if Chu Bore was truly the mastermind behind the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, then he would truly have committed an enormous taboo.

His action was an extremely serious crime. Furthermore, he was ordering the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to murder hundreds of millions of people, something extremely inhumane.

This was simply committing a crime on top of his original crime. His crimes would absolutely not be forgiven.

"No, it's impossible. Senior Chu wouldn't do that sort of thing," Chu Yue said.

"Tsk, tsk, tsk..."

Right after Chu Yue finished saying those words, a cold and sinister laugh sounded from the sky above the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

Soon, a figure slowly descended from the sky. It was an old man. He was emitting an incomparably powerful aura. That old man was descending from the sky like a god.

"Huuu~~~"

That old man waved his sleeve. Immediately, a burst of power surrounded the entire region. The people that had escaped far away were all dragged back by the invisible power.

The escaped crowd started to roll and crawl on the ground as they were dragged like a bunch of fallen leaves. They were once again gathered below the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

With merely a flip of his hand, that old man had managed to recapture all of the escapees.

"This..."

After that old man revealed his power, Ying Mingchao and the others all revealed dejected expressions whilst despair filled their faces.

The aura of that old man was simply too powerful. He was so powerful that they started to feel despair from the bottoms of their hearts.

An existence like him was someone that they would never be able to contend against.

Before that old man, they were like ants. A single movement from that old man would be able to easily obliterate them.

“It really is senior?!”

At that moment, Chu Yue was incomparably shocked.

The reason for that was because that old man was precisely their senior, the old man by the name of Chu Bore.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2649 - Inescapable Predestined Fate

“Really!”

“Senior... what is he doing?!”

After her astonishment passed, Chu Yue grew furious.

As she spoke, she moved to exit the umbrella. She was planning to reveal herself.

She wanted to openly question Chu Bore as to why he was doing this sort of thing.

She wanted to know why he had gone against the rules established by their Chu Heavenly Clan.

She wanted to know why he wanted to slaughter everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was the Chu Heavenly Clan’s territory. The people living there could be considered to be the Chu Heavenly Clan’s citizens.

“Chu Yue, have you gone insane?!” Right at that moment, Chu Huai grabbed Chu Yue. He prevented her from walking out of the umbrella that was concealing them.

“Release me! I need to go and ask exactly why senior is doing this!” Chu Yue shouted.

Her voice was truly loud and clear. It was even more ear-piercing than thunder. If it wasn't for the umbrella, it was likely everyone present would've heard her voice.

Fortunately, they were under the umbrella. It had contained her shout so that only Chu Huai could hear it.

“Do you want to die going out there at a time like this?!” Chu Huai lashed out at Chu Yue.

Hearing those words, Chu Yue revealed a stunned expression. Her aggressiveness to leave immediately calmed down.

Cautiously, she asked, “That's senior out there. Are you saying that he will... kill me?”

“Look at the current Chu Bore. Is he the same Chu Bore that we knew? Is he still the senior that we knew?” Chu Huai asked.

Chu Yue looked to Chu Bore again. It was only at that moment that she discovered that Chu Bore had a sinister, gloomy and cold expression on his face. Compared to the genial Chu Bore that they knew, he was indeed a completely different person.

“One might know a person for a long time without knowing their true nature. The reason why he dared to reveal himself at such a time is precisely to unleash a massacre. As long as he kills everyone here, no one will know what he's done.”

“If the two of us are to reveal ourselves at such a time, do you think he will spare us?” Chu Huai asked.

“But why is he doing such a thing? Is there something even more important than our lives? Something that he will kill us to accomplish?” Chu Yue asked.

“There is,” Chu Huai looked to Chu Bore. Then, he said, “His own life is more important than our lives.”

Hearing those words, Chu Yue's expression changed. She seemed to be unable to find a way to refute Chu Huai.

Then, Chu Yue quietly pulled back the foot that she stepped forward with.

She also did not dare to take the risk of exiting the umbrella. She was also scared, scared that Chu Bore would really kill them should he find out that they were there.

She was scared that he would silence them!!!

"Never would I expect for someone of the Chu Heavenly Clan to be the one to do this sort of thing," Chu Feng said after sizing up Chu Bore.

The reason Chu Feng said that was because Chu Bore still had the Chu Heavenly Clan's title plate on his waist.

Actually, Chu Feng was very surprised too. He never imagined that someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan would do this sort of thing.

"Chu Heavenly Clan?"

Once Chu Feng mentioned it, Ying Mingchao and the others also noticed the title plate on Chu Bore's waist.

After verifying the identity of the old man, the people present started to panic even more. What was the Chu Heavenly Clan? They were not only the masters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, but they also ruled over the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

While they could disregard the people of the younger generation that the Chu Heavenly Clan sent to train, as those people would not receive protection from the Chu Heavenly Clan while training there, the true experts of the Chu Heavenly Clan were existences capable of obliterating them instantly. They were beings that the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm did not dare to disrespect.

As for the old man before them, he was evidently one such being.

Before people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, those people simply could not be described as martial cultivators.

That old man possessed the power to rule over the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Before them, he was akin to a god, and possessed the power to control everything.

To go against a god, how could they possibly win?

“Chu Feng, exactly what is your origin? You’ve actually trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?” Chu Bore asked Chu Feng.

“That is none of your concern,” Chu Feng said coldly.

“Heh...” Chu Bore laughed indifferently. Then, the corners of his mouth lifted into a cold and sinister smile. He said, “Actually, it doesn’t matter whether or not you tell me. After all, you will not be able to escape death today. Furthermore, no one will know that it was me that killed you.”

“Even if you have backing, there is nothing they can do.”

Although Chu Bore spoke with a very indifferent tone, he was actually worried that killing Chu Feng would offend the huge monster behind him.

While the Chu Heavenly Clan behind Chu Bore was a huge monster itself, it remained that Chu Feng was someone that trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. He felt that the power behind Chu Feng might not necessarily be weaker than the Chu Heavenly Clan.

With the abilities that Chu Feng had grasped and how talented he was, he would most definitely be considered a heavenly genius even in his power.

Chu Bore actually did not dare to offend a heavenly genius like Chu Feng. The reason for that was because if the power behind Chu Feng were to know that he had killed Chu Feng, then, with the status that he possessed, the Chu Heavenly Clan would definitely not protect him. For the sake of appeasing the power behind Chu Feng, they would send him to them to handle.

This was the greatest fear that Chu Bore possessed. However, he had no idea that Chu Feng actually did not have a huge monster behind him.

The person that he thought to be a heavenly genius was merely the Chu Heavenly Clan’s discarded trash child.

“You’re planning to kill us to silence us?”

“In that case, it would mean that this matter is not being conducted under orders from the Chu Heavenly Clan, but rather something that you decided on your own?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’ve guessed correctly,” Chu Bore said with a light chuckle.

“Milord, please spare us, please spare us!”

Right at that moment, voices begging for forgiveness sounded from the crowd below. More and more people began to beg for forgiveness.

Looking down, those people were all kneeling on the ground and kowtowing to Chu Bore nonstop.

Chu Bore took a glance at them. There was no trace of pity in his eyes. He said, “Don’t worry, I won’t kill you all immediately.”

After he finished saying those words, he looked to Chu Feng again, “Didn’t you want to know what it is that I’m trying to unseal with my formation?”

“Rest assured, before you die here, I will satisfy your curiosity and broaden everyone’s horizons.”

“This might be something that you all would not be able to witness in your entire lives otherwise.”

“Buzz~~~”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Bore began to form hand seals with one hand. The next moment, dark black gaseous flames began to emerge from his body, and started to assimilate into the grand formation.

The dark black gaseous flames that he emitted were different from those of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. They did not possess the miserable infant crying sounds, and did not seem that frightening and sinister. Naturally, they were not that sinister.

However, people like Chu Feng were able to clearly sense that the dark black gaseous flames emitted by the Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man before them was not something that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster could compare to. In fact, the dark black gaseous flames emitted by everyone from the Infant

Soul Sect combined was greatly inferior to those this old man was currently emitting.

This was true frightening power.

“Rumble~~~~”

Rumbles began to sound from the grand formation. They were deafening.

Chu Feng and the others raised their heads and looked toward the sky and unease filled their eyes.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Grand Formation was no longer completely black. Rays of blue light began to appear in that dark black grand formation. Those should be the extracted souls from the Hundred Refinement Ordinary Realm’s hundreds of millions of lives. **noε/lb(1n**

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, the blue lights started to gather together. They started to mix with the dark black gaseous flames, forming a gaseous pillar of flames that shot straight into the depths of the earth.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, golden lines began to appear on the surface of the earth. Those lines started to interweave with one another and continued to spread, like a vast sea of boundless golden lines.

At the very least, from where Chu Feng could see, the surface below was completely covered with golden lines.

It was a grand formation so enormous that even Chu Feng started feeling fearful.

“That’s a sealing formation?”

Soon, Chu Feng determined that the formation that had appeared on the surface of the earth was a sealing formation. It was an extremely vast sealing formation.

Merely, what could such a vast sealing formation be sealing?

“Chu Feng, this feeling, this is bad,” even Her Lady Queen revealed an expression of unease.

Such an enormous sealing formation could only mean one thing: it was sealing something extremely grand.

“Eggy, you’ve also noticed it?” Chu Feng asked.

“What?” Her Lady Queen was confused. Evidently... she did not notice what Chu Feng had noticed.

“Seems like you didn’t notice it. That’s understandable, you can only see what I see and hear what I hear, but not completely sense what I am sensing,” Chu Feng said.

“Exactly what did you manage to sense?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I sensed that old cat’s aura from the grand sealing formation below,” Chu Feng said.

“Old cat, you’re talking about that Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s old cat?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Yes, that cat is precisely what I’m talking about,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, wouldn’t it mean that this grand formation is...?” Her Lady Queen grew even more astonished.

“There’s no mistake. What this Chu Heavenly Clansman is trying to unseal is the thing sealed by that old cat,” Chu Feng said.

“This is truly bad,” Her Lady Queen revealed an even more astonished and uneasy expression.

She still remembered how Grandmaster Pocket described the item sealed by that old cat.

‘That item was not something from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It was from the Outer World, and possessed an extremely bloodthirsty and cruel nature.’

'If that item were to break free from its seal, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would fall into a calamity, and everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be killed.'

'It would be an inescapable fate for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.'

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2650 - The Only Thing To Rely On - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2650 - The Only Thing To Rely On

Chapter 2650 - The Only Thing To Rely On

"Although I do not know why he is planning to unseal that item, he absolutely cannot be allowed to succeed."

After Chu Feng said those words, he began to send voice transmissions to Ying Mingchao and the others.

Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and everyone else from the allied army received Chu Feng's voice transmission.

Chu Feng told them via voice transmission to immediately escape and leave this place with their fastest speed in the following moment.

The crowd were slightly confused by Chu Feng's sudden voice transmission.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, an extremely powerful aura started to emit from where Chu Feng stood. That aura soon engulfed the entire sky.

Looking up, the crowd noticed that crimson gaseous flames had emerged in the sky above Chu Feng.

As for that, it was not caused by Chu Feng himself. Rather, it was caused by the sword Chu Feng held in his hand, the Demon Armament Evil God Sword.

Chu Feng had already instilled his power into the Evil God Sword. Thus, the Evil God Sword's powers were activated.

The crimson clouds soon covered the entire sky. It actually covered the entire Infant Soul Grand Formation.

If one must describe it, then the crimson clouds that filled the sky were even stranger than the dark black gaseous flames from before. Seeing it, the crowd felt even greater unease.

“Is that Chu Feng's Demon Armament that's capable of killing True Immortals?”

“What a frightening aura. I have never experienced such stifling power before.”

This was the first time for many people down below to witness the power of Chu Feng's Evil God Sword. One by one, they revealed frightened expressions.

In fact, even Ying Mingchao and the others had expressions of unease on their faces.

This was no longer the first time they had witnessed the power of the Evil God Sword. However, they were astonished by the fact that the Evil God Sword seemed to be capable of unleashing an unparalleled power regardless of who it was facing.

They all knew that that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan possessed god-like power, and was an opponent that none of them could contend against.

Although they had no idea what that old man's cultivation was, they were certain that the disparity of strength between them was enormous.

However, when the Evil God Sword was revealed by Chu Feng, they started to feel that perhaps Chu Feng would be able to take on that god-like old man.

The reason for that was because the power of that Evil God Sword was not at all weaker than that old man. In fact, the unparalleled grandeur from that Evil God Sword was many times more valiant than that old man's.

“Hahahaha...”

At the moment when the people were astonished by the power of the Evil God Sword, that Chu Bore burst into loud laughter. Not only was his laughter loud, but it was also extremely mocking.

“Chu Feng, it is one thing for you to use that Evil God Sword to take care of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, you actually want to use it to handle this old man?”

“You are simply looking down on this old man too much, no? You actually want to treat me the same way as those useless trash?”

“I can only say, you are truly ignorant,” Chu Bore said mockingly.

Even though he had also witnessed the power of the Evil God Sword, he evidently did not place the Evil God Sword in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly raised the Evil God Sword in his hand and pointed it at Chu Bore.

“This...”

The next moment, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously. Disbelief filled their eyes.

Even Chu Bore was stunned. Then, he slowly lowered his head and looked at his chest.

At that moment, a hole had appeared on his chest and Blood was flowing out from it. His chest had been pierced!

Not only that, but crimson gaseous flames had emerged on his chest. The crimson gaseous flames were spreading rapidly. They were devouring his body.

This sort of wound had also appeared on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster before. It was the Evil God Sword. It was the power of the Evil God Sword.

“It’s you????”

Chu Bore still had a stunned and disbelieving expression on his face. He didn’t dare believe that someone of his cultivation would actually be injured by

the Evil God Sword. Furthermore... he was caught off-guard by the state of his wound.

“How could this be?”

In fact, even Chu Feng himself was filled with astonishment.

Even he did not anticipate that the Evil God Sword would be able to injure that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan so easily.

One must know that that old man’s aura was truly powerful.

He was so powerful that Chu Feng felt that he was incomparably small by comparison.

It was as if the old man standing before him was not a person at all. Rather, he was a giant insurmountable mountain.

“Chu Feng, the power of the Evil God Sword...” Her Lady Queen exclaimed in astonishment.

“Eggy, so you’ve also realized it,” Chu Feng said.

Both Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen had felt the power of the Evil God Sword since the first time Chu Feng had used it.

At that moment, Chu Feng had discovered an astonishing problem. As he used the Evil God Sword more frequently, the power of the Evil God Sword would increase every time. Every time he used it, it would be much more frightening than before.

Right at that moment, Chu Bore suddenly shouted, “Die!!!”

The next moment, everyone, even including Chu Feng, felt the aura of death.

It was his oppressive might. Chu Bore did not use a martial skill, or even any martial power. He had only unleashed his oppressive might.

He was simply too powerful. With a single thought, his oppressive might filled the entire region. He simply didn’t give Chu Feng and the others the time to ponder.

Furthermore, his oppressive might was sufficient to completely obliterate Chu Feng and everyone else.

The disparity in strength between Chu Feng and Chu Bore was simply too enormous.

“Ah?”

However, at the moment when everyone felt that they were going to die, they were suddenly stunned.

They were astonished to discover that the fatal oppressive might from earlier had actually disappeared.

“It’s you again?!”

Chu Bore looked to Chu Feng. The reason for that was because only he knew that the power that blocked his oppressive might originated from Chu Feng.

It was Chu Feng who had blocked his oppressive might and saved the crowd.

“What is going on?” Chu Feng looked to the Evil God Sword in his hand.

The reason for that was because the things earlier had happened too fast. Thus, he simply did not have the time to react and operate the Evil God Sword.

Thus, it was the Evil God Sword that automatically released its power and saved everyone.

In other words, without Chu Feng urging it, the Evil God Sword unleashed its oppressive might and blocked Chu Bore’s oppressive might.

“Boy, do you understand now that this God is not one of great evil?”

[1. Although both the evil in the Evil God Sword and the evil in ‘great evil’ means evil, they are two different terms. The former is something evil/nefarious/demonic, whereas the latter is the act of doing evil/bad deeds. Basically, it’s like a voodoo doll is evil (former) whereas the person using it to harm someone would be evil (latter.)]

“With the situation at hand, you are simply unable to defeat your opponent. Thus, rest assured, and hand your body over to this God.”

“This God will stop everything and give you a satisfying result.”

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword’s voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

“I will not fall for your trick. Only you will be used by me. Do not think about using me,” Chu Feng said resolutely.

Even though the Evil God Sword had indeed saved everyone using its power earlier, Chu Feng would still not hand his body over to the Evil God Sword.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew very well how sly and evil the Evil God Sword was. The Evil God Sword was an existence much more frightening than that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man. In fact, it was much more frightening than even that sealed item.

As such, Chu Feng did not believe anything it said.

“Tsk, tsk. Boy, do you still not understand the situation at hand?”

“In this sort of situation, if you and your bunch of friends want to survive, you must rely on this Evil God’s power. This Evil God is the only thing that you can rely on.”

“If you want to obtain my power, you must hand your body over to me.”

“Consider your actions properly,” The Evil God Sword said with a laugh.

Suddenly, Chu Bore asked, “How did you obtain your Demon Armament?”

“You don’t need to know that. However, if you are to give up now, I can consider letting you live,” Chu Feng said.

Actually, Chu Feng did not want to let Chu Bore get away. However, the Evil God Sword was already not listening to him anymore.

That’s right, right after the Evil God Sword told Chu Feng to make his decision, Chu Feng discovered that the power of the Evil God Sword was no longer under his control.

Even though Chu Feng was still holding the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng was unable to attack with it again.

Having lost the power of the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng was basically unable to contend against the Chu Heavenly Clan's old man. Thus, he could only take advantage of the fact that this old man still didn't know that he no longer had control of the Evil God Sword to threaten him to leave.

He hoped that the old man would fear the power of the Evil God Sword and retreat.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2651 - No Other Choice

"Although I do not know where you obtained that Demon Armament, don't you think that you can scare this old man away with merely that Demon Armament," Chu Bore said coldly.

Not only did he not show any sign of wanting to retreat, but he instead had a mocking expression on his face.

It was as if he had seen through Chu Feng's intention.

In the beginning, Chu Feng thought that Chu Bore was merely bluffing. Thus, his expression remained unchanged, and he even smiled coldly. He was planning to continue to speak and scare Chu Bore.

However, right at that moment, Chu Bore suddenly stopped operating the unsealing formation. He flipped his hand, and an item appeared in his hand.

It was a Cosmos Sack.

"That is?"

Chu Feng's expression changed upon seeing that Cosmos Sack. He recognized that Cosmos Sack. It was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's Cosmos Sack.

When he fought against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster earlier, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had that Cosmos Sack the entire time. Chu Feng had no idea when that Cosmos Sack had entered that old man's hand.

That said, it was not surprising for the old man to possess that Cosmos Sack. After all, he possessed unfathomable strength. It would naturally be extremely easy for him to secretly take something like that away.

Merely, Chu Feng did not understand why the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan would take out the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's Cosmos Sack.

In terms of treasures, the treasures inside the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's Cosmos Sack would definitely not be able to compare to the treasures he possessed. After all, he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Right at that moment, the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan took out an item from the Cosmos Sack.

"Chu Feng, do you still recognize this?" Chu Bore asked Chu Feng while holding an item.

It was a jade pendant. The jade pendant was gold in color, and had a circular shape. Once it appeared, it immediately emitted a very strong Ancient Era's aura.

Most importantly, there were two large characters written in ancient calligraphy on the center of the circular jade pendant. They were 'Demon Suppression!!!'

How could Chu Feng not recognize that jade pendant? It was the treasure that was capable of suppressing even his Evil God Sword, the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

"How did you obtain that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman?"

"Could it be...?"

Chu Feng's heart tightened. That Demon Armament Suppression Talisman should be with the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Chu Feng did not see the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief among the crowd present. Even his corpse was not among the dead.

This meant that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had gone and obtained the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman for the sake of handling him. As for

the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, he might already have been killed by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

However, that was not what Chu Feng was worried about. After all, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was not a good person anyways. Even if he were to die, his death would not wipe away his crimes.

Chu Feng merely regretted not being able to kill him himself.

That said, Chu Feng was very worried. He was anxious because of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. After all, that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was indeed capable of suppressing the power of the Evil God Sword.

"Chu Feng, so even you know fear?"

Seemingly seeing through the worry in Chu Feng's heart, a proud smile emerged on Chu Bore's face.

"Chu Feng is afraid? Why would he be afraid? Could it be because of that jade pendant?"

Hearing what Chu Bore said, the crowd cast their eyes to the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Apart from Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi, this was the first time that all the others had seen that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. They did not know what the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman could do.

Although the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman appeared extraordinary, they were still unable to understand why Chu Feng would fear a mere jade pendant.

After all, Chu Feng's current aura surpassed that of Chu Bore. Furthermore, he had even managed to injure Chu Bore.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Chu Bore gently raised his hand and tossed out the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Once the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman entered the sky, it reacted as if it had been liberated.

Immediately after, it started to emit dazzling golden light. Not only did that golden light grow more and more dazzling, but many characters also began to appear.

Those characters were flowing out from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. Following the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, they began to scatter and fill its surroundings.

It was as if the golden light was the sea, and those characters were fishes.

Just like that, those characters started to gallop in the sea, covering all the places the golden light reached.

Those characters were very ancient. They were most likely characters from the Ancient Era. Furthermore, one could not interpret them.

However, when those characters appeared, the power of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman started to increase.

Chu Feng and the others were even able to hear an ancient voice sounding from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

They were simply unable to understand that voice. However, they felt a very sacred sensation from it.

At that moment, the crimson clouds that filled the sky started to wane. The Infant Soul Grand Formation once again appeared before the crowd's field of view.

At the same time, the Evil God Sword Chu Feng held in his hand started to tremble violently. It was as if it were feeling extremely unreconciled with what was happening.

"Heavens, exactly what is that jade pendant?! It was actually able to curb Chu Feng's Demon Armament?!"

At that moment, the crowd came to a sudden realization. They finally understood why Chu Feng would show fear toward that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

After knowing the truth, the crowd started to panic.

Although the power of Chu Feng's Evil God Sword brought them great unease, it remained that Chu Feng was their only hope right now. If Chu Feng's Evil God Sword was curbed, they would not be able to escape the imminent calamity, and would definitely be killed.

"Chu Feng, now... what can you possibly contend against this old man with?" The expression of complacency grew more and more concentrated on Chu Bore's face.

"Boy, hand your body to this Evil God. This Evil God will help you eliminate this trash," right at that moment, the Evil God Sword's voice sounded again.

"If I am to hand my body over to you, will you be able to break through the restriction of that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman?" Chu Feng asked.

"Did you really think that thing would be able to suppress this Evil God's power? You are merely too weak, and unable to unleash this Evil God's powers."

"If this Evil God is to take control, I will immediately have them know who the true ruler is," the Evil God Sword said.

"If I am to hand my body over to you, can you not willfully slaughter the innocent?" Chu Feng asked.

"This Evil God promises you that I will only kill those you want to kill," the Evil God Sword said.

"Chu Feng, the Evil God Sword is simply untrustworthy. You absolutely must not hand your body over to it," Her Lady Queen hurriedly spoke against it.

She had managed to understand Chu Feng's intention from his words. Chu Feng was planning to hand his body over to the Evil God Sword.

However, the intention of the Evil God Sword was extremely obvious. It wanted to take control of Chu Feng's body. If Chu Feng were to hand his body over to it, it would be no different from death.

"Eggy, I'm sorry. There's really no other choice for me right now."

“Allow me to take this gamble,” Chu Feng said to Eggy with a wry smile on his face.

How could Chu Feng not know how dangerous the Evil God Sword was?

However, it was as Chu Feng said. There was no other option for him.

If he were to hand his body to the Evil God Sword and release the true power of the Evil God Sword, he would be able to kill that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan and prevent a catastrophe.

As long as the Evil God Sword honored its promise, his friends would be able to continue living.

As for his body, even though it would be occupied by the Evil God Sword, it did not mean that there would be no chance for him to take it back. At the very least... this option was a path to survival.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2652 - The Sealed Item

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was planning to hand his body to the Evil God Sword, Chu Bore suddenly began to form hand seals. He once again started to operate that grand formation.

The next moment, that pillar of light shot into the surface once again. Shining golden light from the many miles-long grand sealing formation appeared once again.

“I will hand my body to you. Kill that man right away.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he no longer resisted the power of the Evil God Sword. He was really planning to hand his body to the Evil God Sword.

The reason Chu Feng was so anxious was because he did not wish for that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man to successfully release that sealed item.

Chu Feng felt that whatever was sealed would be much more frightening than that old man.

Although he had no idea why that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan wanted to unseal it, Chu Feng firmly believed that that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had no idea how terrifying that sealed item might be. He felt that that old man would not be able to control it at all.

If the seal was lifted, it would mean that a true catastrophe would befall them. Thus, Chu Feng wanted to stop him.

However, surprisingly, after Chu Feng said those words, he discovered that there was no reaction from the Evil God Sword. His body was still his. It had not been controlled by the Evil God Sword. Furthermore, he was still unable to use the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Hey, what is this?! Say something!” Chu Feng loudly asked.

Although he was speaking in his mind and others were unable to hear it, he knew that the Evil God Sword would be able to hear him.

However, there was no reaction from the Evil God Sword at all. It was as if it had disappeared.

[1. By it, it refers to the awareness of the Evil God Sword... the one speaking to him. The physical Evil God Sword is still being held by Chu Feng.]

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the earth below started to cave in. It spread continuously for many miles. All the earth visible to Chu Feng’s field of view had sunk into the ground.

Ear-piercing rumbles were rising and falling in succession.

Surging thick smoke started to rise. At a glance, it looked like that thick smoke had covered the entire earth. It was as if the entire world was about to collapse.

Most importantly, Chu Feng noticed that the light emitted by the golden-bright and dazzling sealing formation started to grow dimmer and dimmer.

That sealing formation was about to disappear. One could very well imagine what would happen once that sealing formation disappears.

“What a grand disposition. Exactly how enormous is that sealed item?”

Her Lady Queen was following Chu Feng's vision, and staring at the situation that was unfolding before Chu Feng. That scene was truly too stunning. This was the first time since the many years she had followed Chu Feng that she had witnessed a scene as spectacular as this.

This was truly the arrival of doomsday. Although the sky was still there, the earth had been completely shattered.

As for that, it was actually all caused by the unsealing of a sealed item.

"Quickly, hand your power to me!"

Chu Feng was unable to contain himself. Once again, he urged the Evil God Sword. He felt that he must prevent the unsealing before the seal was lifted.

"What's there to be so anxious about?" Finally, the Evil God Sword responded. Merely, compared to Chu Feng's anxiousness, the Evil God Sword's voice was extremely calm. It said, "That little old man is simply insufficient for this Evil God to kill. As for this thing that's soon to appear, although it is still insufficient for this Evil God to kill, it will still be somewhat satisfying to kill it."

"You..." Hearing those words, Chu Feng was dumbfounded.

It turned out that the Evil God Sword was purposely acting as is. It was deliberately allowing that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan to lift the seal.

"You're certain that you'll be able to win against it?" Chu Feng asked. He was worried.

After all, that old cat was unfathomably powerful. As such, the item it sealed should be extremely powerful too.

And now, before the seal was even lifted, that item had already created such a spectacular scene of destruction. Chu Feng was worried that whatever might be sealed would be too powerful, so powerful that even the Evil God Sword would be no match for it.

"Humph. Boy, you being weak is your problem. However, do not think that this Evil God is as weak and small as you."

“Soon, I will have you know exactly how powerful this Evil God is,” the Evil God Sword said.

Arrogance. The words spoken by the Evil God Sword were filled with arrogance.

If it were someone else that said those words, Chu Feng would most definitely think them to be boasting.

However, when those words were spoken by the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng believed them. At the same time he believed those words, he also started to feel a sense of dependence.

Even though he knew very well that the Evil God Sword was very dangerous, the Evil God Sword was indeed the only thing that he could rely on in the situation at hand.

If the Evil God Sword was sufficiently powerful, Chu Feng would have gained greater assurance in being able to protect his friends.

“Why would an existence like you be trapped in this sword? Furthermore, why would you have been in the Holy Land of Martialism?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that the Evil God Sword was very likely not a sword. Rather, it was a very powerful demon that was trapped in the sword.

It was precisely because it was trapped that it was unable to unleash its powers, and could only unleash its power through using Chu Feng as the medium.

Something as powerful as the Evil God Sword should not exist in the Holy Land of Martialism. Chu Feng felt that the Evil God Sword must be from elsewhere.

That said, the Evil God Sword did not answer Chu Feng’s questions.

Chu Feng was a tactful person. He knew very well that this should be the Evil God Sword’s secret. Furthermore, it seemed that the Evil God Sword was not planning to share his secret with him.

Thus, Chu Feng turned his gaze down below. The ground where countless people were kneeling before had completely caved in. All those people who were kneeling before had soared into the sky.

At that moment, silhouettes filled the entire sky. They were not all humans, as many monstrous beasts were present too.

This was the first time that Chu Feng saw so many people standing in the sky at the same time.

It must be said that such a scene was truly spectacular.

There were so many people standing in the sky without relying on anything. Regardless of their cultivations, it remained an astonishing scene.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to recall the time when he was young.

At that time, he was still a child adopted by the Chu Family.

Back then, he had had a dream. He wanted to become an outstanding martial cultivator.

The reason why he wanted to become stronger was because he wanted his adoptive father to be respected by others. He wanted everyone from the Chu Family to know that he, Chu Feng, was not trash.

At that time, he had a dream. He wanted to see a sky filled with martial cultivators.

Chu Feng had even mentioned his dream to his adoptive father. His adoptive father had smiled upon hearing Chu Feng's dream. He told Chu Feng that as long as he focused on martial cultivation, he would one day see a sky filled with martial cultivators.

At that time, even Chu Feng himself did not believe in his adoptive father's words.

After all, in the Nine Provinces Continent, Heavenly Realm martial cultivators that were capable of flying in the sky were already peak experts. Their numbers were extremely few.

Thus, to the Chu Feng from back then, he felt that it was impossible to see a sky filled with flying martial cultivators. He felt that it was a scene that he could only witness in his dreams.

However, he never expected that he... would really see such a scene before him at that moment. Furthermore, his strength even surpassed those people flying in the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, another loud explosion was heard. The explosion at that time was much more ear-piercing than all the other explosions before.

After that explosion sounded, all the explosions and rumbles from the earth caving in disappeared.

The only sound that could still be heard was the sound of sliding soil.

Apart from that, there was absolute silence, and a strange calm.

“Is it going to come out?”

Chu Feng noticed that the grand sealing formation down below had disappeared completely.

Likely, the sealed item had been completely unsealed too.

Chu Feng fixed his eyes down below. At that moment, he was actually a bit excited. He wanted to know exactly what that sealed item was, and exactly how powerful it was. n-)OvelBIn

Merely, the earth was too deep. Even though Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes were able to see very far, he was still unable to see that far into the depths of the earth.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that that sealed item should have been sealed very deep underground.

It was also possible that the sealed item was concealed. That might be the reason why Chu Feng was unable to detect it.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

Right at that moment, laughter suddenly sounded from beneath the ground.

That voice was extremely strange. Hearing it, one would start to tremble with fear. That... simply did not resemble a human's voice.

At that moment, the people standing in the sky all started to panic. On by one, they scattered about the entire sky, and tried their best to escape from that place.

They were all extremely scared. If it wasn't for the fact that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had sealed off the area they would not have bothered to stay at all. Instead, they would've already escaped without a trace.

At that moment when the crowd was panicking, Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

Although that laughter was indeed very frightening, Chu Feng was able to tell that that laughter was that of a child.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2653 - Ginseng King Of Evil

"Tsk, tsk, tsk..."

That strange laughter sounded from deep underground and echoed nonstop in the vast sky.

Strange and frightening. Hearing that laughter, one would feel one's blood run cold, and feel ill at ease.

At that moment, the people in the sky were panicking like ants on a hot plate.

They were all afraid that they would be killed by the sealed item, and began to try all means to search for a secret place to hide. There were actually even those who were bold and fearless that directly ran toward the Chu Heavenly Clan's old man.

Regardless, the great majority of the people present were losing their heads out of fear.

Only Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and the others continued to stare at the ground below.

No, it was not only Chu Feng and the others. That old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Bore, was also doing the same.

Chu Bore was looking down with a very serious expression on his face. He even ignored those people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm who flew towards him to hide behind him.

However, compared to the unease that covered Chu Feng and the others' faces, Chu Bore had an excited expression.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a golden ray shot out from deep underground.

Following that, a figure flew out from deep underground and landed on the surface.

Through the surging thick smoke, the crowd was able to clearly see its appearance.

At the beginning, the crowd was fearful. After all, they felt that whatever it was that flew out from underground was the sealed item.

However, after they saw what it was, the crowd was confused. The reason for that was because the sealed item was completely different from what they had imagined.

They had imagined that sealed item to be some incomparably fierce and extremely frightening huge monster.

However, what appeared before them was a little three-foot-tall child.

That's right, it's appearance was more or less the same as a human child. However, it was clear that it was not a human.

The reason for that was because its body was golden, and it was emitting a faint golden light.

Even though it possessed a head, a neck and a body, it did not possess any arms or legs.

Growing out from its body were tentacles. Those tentacles resembled vines. Yet, they were not vines. The reason for that was because they were clearly comprised of flesh.

There were over a dozen such tentacles growing out where its legs should be. They were supporting its body.

As for its arms, they were both replaced with a tentacle each. While they resembled arms, there were no hands attached to them.

As for its face, it possessed six eyes. However, those eyes were very small. Each eye was roughly the size of half an ordinary human eye.

It possessed ordinary-looking ears. Merely, those ears were a little bit pointy. There was no nose to be seen. However, there was an extremely large mouth on its face. Its mouth resembled a hippo's mouth.

The insides of its mouth were filled with sharp teeth.

The reason why Chu Feng was able to see those teeth was because that child-like thing had its mouth open.

It was laughing loudly. It seemed to be laughing because it had managed to escape from being sealed. However, its laughter was very strange.

That said, compared to its strange appearance, Chu Feng was sensing its aura. Merely... he was unable to sense anything.

Not to mention being unable to sense its cultivation, if it wasn't for the fact that it was standing right before him, Chu Feng would not even be able to feel its existence.

The reason for that was because it simply did not emit any aura at all.

"It is it! It really is it! I've succeeded, I've succeeded! Hahaha!!!"

Right at that moment, Chu Bore suddenly burst into extremely excited laughter.

Hearing that, Chu Feng looked over, and discovered that Chu Bore was holding a scroll in his hand. It was an extremely ancient scroll.

"That is?"

Using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng saw the contents on the scroll. On the scroll was a drawing.

What was drawn on the scroll was precisely that thing down below.

Apart from the drawing, there were also accompanying words.

'Ginseng King of Evil. Sealed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Upon releasing it and allowing it to mature, one will be able to prolong one's lifespan for ten thousand years by eating its flesh.'

Following those words, the scroll also listed the precise location where the Ginseng King of Evil was sealed, as well as what sort of formation was required to lift the seal.

"So he unsealed this item to prolong his lifespan?"

At that moment, Chu Feng not only found out that the name of that frightening existence was the Ginseng King of Evil, but he also found out the intention of that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze down toward the thing below again.

It was only then that he discovered that apart from a human-like head, that thing did resemble ginseng.

Merely, its body was much more plump, and its color was much more lustrous than ordinary ginseng.

"That thing is simply too strange. I don't think it's something that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan can control," Her Lady Queen said.

"Eggy, why do you say that?" Chu Feng asked.

"Look carefully at its eyes. That gaze is so astute and circumspect. It is most definitely not as simple as it appears to be," Her Lady Queen said.

After hearing what Her Lady Queen said, Chu Feng also noticed that even though the Ginseng King of Evil appeared to be very small and weak, it possessed a very frightening, shrewd and ruthless gaze.

It was a terrifying existence that had lived for countless years. Likely, it was already over several tens of thousands of years old.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, that Ginseng King of Evil suddenly moved. It disappeared.

“Woosh~~~”

Right after the Ginseng King of Evil disappeared, Chu Feng suddenly moved too.

At that moment, Chu Feng was greatly startled. He discovered that it was not only him that was rapidly moving in midair; everyone else was also rapidly moving in midair just like him.

It was that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan. That old man had used his power to move all the people that were present and still alive. He was bringing Chu Feng and the others together with him using his power.

“Is he chasing that thing?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng looked down. He seemed to understand why that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was doing this.

Due to the fact that the speed at which they were traveling was too fast, Chu Feng found it very difficult to see the surrounding scenery.

However, when he looked down, he was able to see a figure. It was the Ginseng King of Evil.

That thing’s dozen-plus tentacles were moving about on the ground nonstop. It was running rapidly. Its speed was extremely fast.

It turned out that it had not disappeared into thin air. Rather, it had fled by running. It was merely because its speed was too fast that Chu Feng thought it had disappeared. n)-0vel**ln**

If it wasn’t for the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan bringing them along while chasing after the Ginseng King of Evil, then Chu Feng would definitely not be able to chase after the Ginseng King of Evil with his current speed.

In fact, he wouldn't even know where the Ginseng King of Evil had run off to.

At that moment, Chu Feng gasped in admiration at the difference in strength between him and that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan, as well as that Ginseng King of Evil.

As matters stood, the enemies Chu Feng was facing had already greatly surpassed his own capabilities.

They were beings that he could not possibly contend against.

"Interesting."

Right at that moment, the voice of the Evil God Sword entered Chu Feng's ears again.

Merely, there was no trace of surprise in its voice. Instead... there was actually a trace of joy.

"Did you discover something?" Chu Feng asked.

"Can't you see it?" The Evil God Sword asked.

"See what?" Chu Feng asked.

"That's understandable. With your strength, it would be impossible for you to see it."

"Well, that doesn't matter. This Evil God can help you."

"Buzz~~~"

Right after the Evil God Sword said those words, Chu Feng felt a slight burning sensation in his eyes. Involuntarily, he closed them.

"That is?"

When Chu Feng opened his eyes again, he was startled.

At that moment, what Chu Feng could see had changed.

Originally, due to the fact that they were traveling too quickly, Chu Feng was unable to see anything apart from the running Ginseng King of Evil.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was able to clearly see everything. He was able to see what was happening while they were rapidly moving,

“This guy!”

After clearly seeing what was happening, the unease in Chu Feng’s heart grew even stronger.

At that moment, he realized for the first time how frightening that Ginseng King of Evil was.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2654 - You Are Merely Trash

That Ginseng King of Evil was currently running with an unimaginably fast speed.

Chu Feng was able to now see that all of the plants in the areas it passed as it ran would instantly wither and die.

In fact, it was not only the flowers, grass, and trees; even the rivers disappeared and the earth dried up. The earth that was originally full of life was instantly filled with cracks from being completely dried up. This was true for even mountain rocks.

After that Ginseng King of Evil passed by, the earth that was originally covered in vast greenness instantly turned into one of desolation, and was without the slightest trace of life.

All of that was currently being witnessed by Chu Feng.

“That thing is devouring all forms of life?”

Chu Feng was astonished. Although he had no idea how the Ginseng King of Evil managed to accomplish that, he firmly believed it to be something that Ginseng King of Evil did.

“It is starting to change,” Her Lady Queen suddenly called out to Chu Feng while he was observing the unceasing destruction of the surrounding landscape.

Chu Feng looked to the Ginseng King of Evil again, and discovered that the body of the Ginseng King of Evil was expanding in size. Even the tentacles on its body were increasing in number.

Furthermore, as the Ginseng King of Evil increased in size, countless feeler-like smaller tentacles would grow out from its original tentacles.

Seemingly noticing the change in the Ginseng King of Evil, the expression of joy on Chu Bore's face grew even stronger..

“Heavens! Everyone, look! That monster is increasing in size!”

Suddenly, a shout sounded from the crowd. Following that, everyone revealed fear on their faces. Some were so scared that their complexions turned ashen and their bodies started shivering.

Due to the fact that the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had brought them along as he chased after the Ginseng King of Evil, the people present were all able to witness the changes happening to the Ginseng King of Evil.

It was growing larger and larger. It had transformed from a three meter tall child-like appearance into an enormous creature over a dozen meters tall. Furthermore, the transformation was still ongoing. The speed at which it grew was simply too fast. In merely a short moment, it had grown from over a dozen meters to tens of meters tall.

A while after that, the Ginseng King of Evil grew to over a hundred meters tall.

Soon after, it grew to become a huge monster over a thousand meters tall.

It had been less than an hour since that Ginseng King of Evil was unsealed from the bottom of the earth.

From this, it could be seen how fast the Ginseng King of Evil was growing.

As the Ginseng King of Evil increased in size, its appearance also changed. The tentacles and feelers on its body had grown by so much that they were simply uncountable now.

Its appearance also grew more and more malevolent.

Its eyes were also incomparably large. Those eyes were emitting a crimson light. Its laughter had also become much more deafening. Even space itself was trembling from its laughter.

“It’s meaningless to refine only those things. These people here have all been prepared for you. Go ahead and refine them.”

Suddenly, that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan spoke. His words... were clearly meant for the Ginseng King of Evil.

Hearing those words, the Ginseng King of Evil suddenly stopped. It swept its six enormous eyes across the crowd present.

Its gaze was exceptionally ice-cold. Being glared at, one would feel as if one’s body had been hollowed out. One would feel as if one had died.

At that moment, the crowd grew even more scared. Some people even fell from midair. They had lost the ability to fly.

Those people had all lost consciousness due to fear.

They finally realized why that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had trapped them.

It turned out that he had considered everyone present as food. He was planning to feed them to that Ginseng King of Evil.

However, after sweeping its gaze over the crowd, the Ginseng King of Evil actually fixed its gaze onto that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Devouring them would not do much for me.”

“However, you, on the other hand, should benefit me slightly.”

After it finished saying those words, the Ginseng King of Evil extended an enormous tongue from its mouth filled with sharp teeth and licked its lips.

That tongue was covered with hook-like thorns. It was very disgusting and terrifying to look at.

That said, judging from the appearance of the Ginseng King of Evil, it seemed to be extremely excited.

“Humph. You want to refine me?”

Hearing those words, the expression on Chu Bore’s face changed.

Then, he shouted, “Away!”

Then he opened his palm, and a layer of golden light started to gently scatter downward like a waterfall. The golden light turned into an enormous golden-bright and dazzling net.

That net was extremely vast. It was as if it could cover the entire region. Furthermore, the speed of that net was extremely fast. In an instant, it had covered the Ginseng King of Evil and tightly restricted it.

“Roar~~~”

The next moment, ear-piercing roars began to resonate through heaven and earth. The Ginseng King of Evil began to struggle. Its enormous powers caused the earth to tremble violently. Dust swirled in the air, and shattered rocks started to fly into the sky.

However, no matter how it struggled, the net only grew tighter and tighter.

“Since you refuse to be obedient, I have no choice but to collect you now,” that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan said.

“It’s too late,” Right at that moment, the voice of the Evil God Sword also sounded.

Of course, only Chu Feng could hear its voice.

“What’s too late?” Chu Feng asked.

“If that fool were to capture that little thing right when it emerged from underground, then perhaps he could take advantage of the fact that it was still weak after being sealed for so long, and might have had a slight chance at being able to subdue it.”

“However, it is already too late now. Although that little thing has only managed to recover a bit of its strength, it is sufficient to slaughter that old codger,” the Evil God Sword said.

“Really?” Chu Feng was skeptical toward what the Evil God Sword said. After all, that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan clearly held the upper hand at that moment. Furthermore, the shouts from that Ginseng King of Evil had already changed in tone.

It was no longer shouting in anger. Instead, they resembled screams of pain.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. The next moment, Chu Feng’s eyes pulled back as his expression changed enormously.

Everything happened too fast. Chu Feng was simply unable to clearly see what had happened.

By the time he managed to react, he saw that the golden net that had captured the Ginseng King of Evil earlier had shattered.

At that moment, a tentacle from the Ginseng King of Evil shot straight into the sky and wrapped around that Chu Bore.

At that moment, Chu Bore had a painful expression on his face. He was struggling to break free. However... his struggles were useless. He simply did not possess the strength to contend against that tentacle.

Witnessing that scene, Chu Feng grew even more astonished. The reason for that was because things were happening exactly as the Evil God Sword had said.

This meant that the Evil God Sword was indeed extremely powerful. At least... it had managed to see through all of this.

“Boy, if you do not want your friends to die, then hand your body over to this Evil God right away,” the Evil God Sword said.

As the Evil God Sword said those words, Chu Feng was able to sense that the Evil God Sword’s power was starting to invade his body.

Chu Feng did not resist it. Instead, he allowed the power of the Evil God Sword to invade and occupy his body.

Soon, Chu Feng lost total control over his body. Although he had lost control over his body, Chu Feng felt as if his body was currently being burned by a raging inferno. It was a bit painful.

However, Chu Feng was able to tolerate that sort of pain.

At the moment when Chu Feng's body was occupied by the Evil God Sword, the crimson gaseous flames started to devour his body.

At that moment, Chu Feng appeared as if he were covered by flames. Only the raging crimson flames could be seen. As for Chu Feng, he could not be seen through the flames.

“Run away!”

At the moment when that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was captured by the Ginseng King of Evil, the power that had sealed the crowd disappeared.

At that moment, the crowd immediately started fleeing like trapped birds that had just been released.

“Eeeeahhh~~~~”

However, immediately after the crowd began to flee, screams started being heard.

Those people who tried to escape were all captured by the Ginseng King of Evil's tentacle-feelers. One by one, they revealed expressions of pain.

Soon, their appearances started to change. They began to wither like trees. Their vitality sucked dry.

They all died. In merely the blink of an eye, those people were all killed. They all died after having their life force sucked dry by the Ginseng King of Evil.

Seeing this, the others simply did not dare to attempt to escape again. They were all deeply afraid that they would suffer the same fate as those people.

“You have unsealed me because you wanted to eat my flesh, right?”

“Fool, someone would actually have delusions about eating my flesh in a place like this?”

“You should know that I am akin to a God in this place. A god that rules over everything.”

The Ginseng King of Evil let out a deep and low, yet loud and clear voice.

It was very excited, and acting extremely arrogant. It was as if it were looking down on everyone.

It did not place anyone there in its eyes, including that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

In its eyes, perhaps that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was the same as Chu Feng and everyone else - nothing more than an ant.

“No, with this Evil God here, you... are merely trash.”

Right at that moment, another voice sounded. It originated from where Chu Feng stood.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2655 - Who Is The Monster?

The sudden voice shook the attention of everyone present.

Involuntarily, they turned their gazes toward the direction of the voice. However, the moment they did, astonishment filled their eyes.

“Who is that?”

“That couldn’t possibly be Chu Feng, right?”

As the crowd looked to the person that spoke, they all began to guess who it was.

The reason for that was because the current appearance of Chu Feng had changed.

His entire body was burning with crimson flames. At a glance, he appeared to be a humanoid crimson flame.

If it wasn't for the fact that he was holding the Evil God Sword, no one would think that he was Chu Feng.

That said, even though Chu Feng was still holding the Evil God Sword in his hand, the crowd was still unable to be certain as to whether or not he was Chu Feng.

Apart from the frightening and uneasy aura, Chu Feng's gaze was also very scary.

His eyes were crimson in color. They were even more crimson than the crimson flames that surrounded him. Furthermore, his eyes were shining. They were extremely scary-looking.

Those eyes were like the eyes of ferocious beasts at night. They were extremely bright. However, those eyes were not something that mere ferocious beasts' eyes could compare to.

That said, regardless of how one looked at it, those did not resemble human eyes. Rather, they resembled the eyes of some sort of bloodthirsty creature.

If one had to describe those eyes, then... they would not be something from the world of humans, but rather the eyes of some sort of existence from the depths of hell.

The Ginseng King of Evil ran its eyes over Chu Feng and asked in a very displeased manner, "Who the hell are you? You dare to vainly attempt to contend against me?"

Even though the current Chu Feng brought great unease and fear upon the people present, the Ginseng King of Evil simply did not place him in its eyes at all.

To the Ginseng King of Evil, Chu Feng was nothing more than trash.

It felt that Chu Feng was simply unqualified to even be placed on the same level as itself.

In fact, it felt that there was not a single person, a single existence, in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that could contend against it.

“Originally, I planned to give you a delightful death. Never did I expect you to actually have the nerve to speak this rudely toward this Evil God.”

“Since that’s the case, this Evil God shall have you experience the taste of misery that makes one wish they were dead,” Chu Feng said.

“You dare speak to me in such a manner?! You are the one courting death!”

“Woosh~~~”

Coldness flashed through the eyes of the Ginseng King of Evil. The next moment, a tentacle-feeler flew toward Chu Feng.

Everything happened too quickly. Logically, with the speed of that tentacle-feeler, Chu Feng should not have been able to see it. After all, it was simply too fast, so fast that he should not have been able to react.

If it were the Chu Feng from back then, he might not even know how he died.

However, after Chu Feng’s body was occupied by the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng was able to clearly see the movements of the Ginseng King of Evil. He was able to clearly see the Ginseng King of Evil sending out a tentacle-feeler to attack him.

“Snap~~~”

Chu Feng waved the Evil God Sword in his hand, and a crimson blade ray swept across the sky. He chopped off that tentacle-feeler easily.

To be exact, it was no longer Chu Feng. At that moment, the Evil God Sword was controlling Chu Feng’s body. Even the words spoken earlier were spoken by the Evil God Sword.

Although... it was still Chu Feng’s voice, it remained that it was the Evil God Sword who had spoken earlier.

The current Chu Feng was in a similar situation to Eggy. Although he was able to share the Evil God Sword’s vision and hearing, he had completely lost control of his body.

“Mn?”

Seeing that its attack was easily neutralized, astonishment appeared in the Ginseng King of Evil's six enormous eyes.

Evidently, it did not expect that there would be someone capable of blocking its attack and... even slicing off its tentacle-feeler.

In fact, it was not only the Ginseng King of Evil that was astonished. Chu Bore, who was being held captive by the Ginseng King of Evil, also revealed an enormous change in expression.

Chu Bore knew very well how powerful the Evil God Sword was. However, the power of the Evil God Sword was being suppressed by the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Since it was being suppressed, it should not have been able to unleash its powers.

At that moment, Chu Bore turned his gaze to the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

In the beginning, he thought that some sort of problem might have arisen from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

However, upon doing so, he discovered that the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was still in the sky. It was above Chu Feng and shining gloriously like the sun, covering Chu Feng with its golden radiance.

There was no problem with the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman at all. It was still suppressing the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng's hand with its special power.

However, the aura emitted by the Evil God Sword right now appeared to be much more powerful than before. It... had already broken free from the suppression of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

"Could it be that the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman is simply unable to curb it?" At that moment, Chu Bore started to ponder in his heart.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil once again unleashed an attack at Chu Feng.

This time around, it was no longer a mere tentacle-feeler. Instead, the Ginseng King of Evil sent forth many enormous tentacles, as well as countless tentacle-feelers, to attack Chu Feng at the same time.

The tentacles and feelers were so numerous that they completely covered the entire sky. They had sealed off Chu Feng's escape. Chu Feng was simply unable to dodge them all.

Perhaps it might be because the body was his, but Chu Feng was not only able to share the Evil God Sword's sight and hearing, but he was also able to clearly feel the sensations the Evil God Sword was feeling.

Thus, he was able to clearly sense how enormously powerful the attack unleashed by the Ginseng King of Evil was.

It was a fatal attack. It was an attack that Chu Feng would never have been able to withstand before.

The attack this time around could be said to be over a hundred times more powerful than the attack of that single tentacle-feeler from earlier.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng once again waved the Evil God Sword in his hand. Another enormous crimson blade ray was sent forth.

Then, the countless tentacles and tentacle-feelers, regardless of how thick they were, were all sliced apart.

The tentacles that appeared to be incomparably tough and exceptionally powerful were akin to tofu before the Evil God Sword. They were unable to withstand a single blow from the Evil God Sword.

“Exactly who are you?”

At that moment, the gaze with which the Ginseng King of Evil looked to Chu Feng had changed.

It had already realized that the existence before it was not as simple as it had originally anticipated. It was very possible that this person before it was not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“I am someone that you cannot afford to offend,” The Evil God Sword said.

“What arrogance!”

The Ginseng King of Evil was enraged by the aggressive and egotistical tone of the Evil God Sword.

As it spoke, its body started to emit light. At the same time, its aura started to increase.

The next moment, those tentacles and tentacle-feelers that were sliced off by the Evil God Sword started to regrow. Then, they started attacking Chu Feng again.

“Woosh~~~”

However, faced with the incoming attacks, Chu Feng merely waved his Evil God Sword. Once again, he effortlessly sliced off all of the tentacles and tentacle-feelers with a single slash.

“It’s useless. It will be the same regardless of how many times you attempt this,” The Evil God Sword said.

The Evil God Sword said those words very calmly. However, it was precisely because of how tranquil and indifferent Chu Feng’s tone was that it appeared to be exceptionally domineering.

Since the very beginning, the Evil God Sword had never placed the Ginseng King of Evil in its eyes.

Even though the Ginseng King of Evil possessed the power to bring utter destruction to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Evil God Sword never considered it to be its opponent.

At that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil revealed a serious expression.

It stopped attacking the Evil God Sword rashly. Instead, it started to carefully size up the Evil God Sword.

After a short moment, the Ginseng King of Evil spoke.

It said, “It was not my intention to make an enemy out of you. Can you spare my life?”

“This...”

The crowd present were all astonished upon hearing those words. They never expected that the Ginseng King of Evil that possessed the capability to destroy the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and was able to easily defeat that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan would beg Chu Feng for its life.

This dramatic change was simply too shocking.

This did not resemble something that a monster capable of utter destruction would do.

However, upon carefully thinking about it, it was also understandable. Evidently... compared to this monster, Chu Feng who held the Evil God Sword in hand was more of a monster.

No matter how fierce a hungry wolf might be, its fierceness was something that only displayed before sheep and hares. If it were to encounter a tiger, it would also feel fear.

At that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil was like a hungry wolf. Before the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it was a monster capable of utter destruction.

However, in the eyes of the Ginseng King of Evil, Chu Feng who held the Evil God Sword in his hand was a monster too.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2656 - The Might Of The Evil God

“What is the meaning of this?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“There doesn’t seem to have been any conflict between us before. As for what happened today, I did not have the intention to offend you. Thus, is it possible for you to let me go?” The Ginseng King of Evil asked.

This time around, its voice was somewhat timid. Compared to the arrogance from before, it was much more polite now.

It could be seen that it was truly afraid when facing the Evil God Sword. At the very least... it did not wish to continue fighting the Evil God Sword.

As the saying goes, evildoers fear other evildoers. Perhaps this was what was happening.

“What do you think?”

The Evil God Sword started to chuckle. It was a ridiculing laughter.

“Exactly what do you want?”

At that moment, the fear in the Ginseng King of Evil’s eyes grew stronger. It sensed that the situation was bad from the answer the Evil God Sword gave it.

“I never planned to let you go to begin with,” The Evil God Sword said.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Ginseng King of Evil moved. This time around, it did not unleash an attack at Chu Feng. Instead, it turned around and started fleeing.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at the same time the Ginseng King of Evil moved, the crimson gaseous flames in the sky started to spread out, covering several miles.

Soon, the entire sky that the crowd could see was covered by the crimson gaseous flames. At the same time, crimson gaseous flames began to shoot down from the sky like enormous crimson pillars. Then, those pillars pierced deep into the earth.

Those crimson pillars were present in all directions. They had completely sealed off that region. Like a cage, those pillars trapped everyone inside it.

That Ginseng King of Evil no longer had a way out.

Seemingly unwilling to accept that fact, the Ginseng King of Evil extended its tentacles and began to attack the crimson pillars.

It wanted to use its tentacles to break the crimson pillars.

However, although those crimson pillars appeared to be very fragile, they were actually sharp like blades.

At the moment when the Ginseng King of Evil's tentacles collided with the crimson pillars, they were instantly cut off.

Furthermore, this time around... crimson gaseous flames appeared on the wounds where the tentacles were cut off.

Not only did the crimson gaseous flames make it so that the Ginseng King of Evil was unable to regrow its lost tentacles, but it also started to gradually eat away at the Ginseng King of Evil.

"You, exactly what are you?"

At that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil revealed an extremely alarmed expression. It was not as simple as being only scared.

It was only at that moment that it fully realized how frightening this crimson humanoid fellow before him was.

Even it was powerless to fight back before that crimson humanoid fellow.

"I've said it already. With this Evil God here, you are nothing more than trash," The Evil God Sword said.

"If you continue to force me, you can forget about living too," The Ginseng King of Evil said ruthlessly.

"You're trying to say that you plan to take down this Evil God in mutual destruction?" The Evil God Sword asked.

"No, I'm going to have all of you here accompany me in death!"

The Ginseng King of Evil shouted furiously. The next moment, its body was no longer dazzling with a golden shine. Instead, it turned dark black.

Most importantly, a dark black light began to shine from its enormous body. The light was extremely bright. Furthermore... the Ginseng King of Evil's body was also rapidly expanding in size.

It was an enormous monster to begin with. After it expanded in size, it became a colossus over ten thousand meters tall. Even the clouds were now floating beneath its head.

"This is truly bad!"

Perhaps the Ginseng King of Evil decided to deliberately let the crowd sense its aura. Thus, the people present were all able to sense the aura currently emitted by the Ginseng King of Evil.

Because of that, everyone started to panic. The reason for that was because the aura emitted by the Ginseng King of Evil right now was truly devastating.

An enormously powerful energy was surging about in its body. If that energy were to explode, not to mention the people present, over half of the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be destroyed.

“Is this all you’ve got?”

“You are truly a disappointment,” The Evil God Sword said.

“You dare look down on me?! Very well, I shall have you experience what I’ve got! I shall see whether or not you will be able to withstand it!”

The words spoken by the Evil God Sword had completely enraged the Ginseng King of Evil. After saying those words, a characteristic change occurred to the power within the Ginseng King of Evil. It was planning to unleash this power. It was planning to take down the Evil God Sword as well as everyone else present with that power. It was planning mutual destruction.

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword using Chu Feng’s body opened his mouth. Then, an enormous suction power was emitted from Chu Feng’s mouth. In an instant, it completely enveloped the Ginseng King of Evil.

“Ahhh~~~”

“No, what have you done to me?!!!”

The next moment, the Ginseng King of Evil let out a roar of enormous pain.

The reason for that was because the suction power emitted from Chu Feng’s mouth was extremely strange. It was absorbing the Ginseng King of Evil’s body.

That’s right, the Ginseng King of Evil’s enormous physical body was currently being broken down and ripped apart by that enormous suction power. The ripped apart pieces turned into dark black gaseous flames before steadily flowing into Chu Feng’s mouth.

“Stop! You damned bastard! Stop immediately!”

The Ginseng King of Evil shouted furiously. However, its shouts were of no use. The Evil God Sword completely ignored it.

“Bastard! You damned bastard! You dare treat me like this?! I’ll kill you!!!”

The shouts from the Ginseng King of Evil grew more and more furious. It once again started to urge the power within itself. It was planning to unleash that power to end in mutual destruction with the Evil God Sword.

However, upon attempting to do so, it soon discovered that its body was actually no longer under its control. It was no longer capable of unleashing that power.

All it could do was look on helplessly as its body was refined and devoured by its opponent. It... was unable to do anything.

It could only endure the pain, the pain of its body decomposing and being refined.

“You... you... just kill me. I cannot tolerate this anymore. You... please... just kill me.”

The Ginseng King of Evil’s voice grew weak. It seemed to be unable to endure the suffering and pain from its body being decomposed.

Seeing that it would undoubtedly be killed today, it actually started to ask the Evil God Sword to give it a quick death.

It did not want to continue to endure this sort of pain anymore.

“This Evil God has said it already. Since you were rude to me earlier, I will have you experience a taste of misery that will make you wish you were dead,” The Evil God Sword said.

Chu Feng’s mouth was open the entire time. That attractive power did not stop in the slightest. However, Chu Feng was still capable of speaking.

“You damned bastard! You shall suffer a miserable death!”

Upon hearing what the Evil God Sword said, the Ginseng King of Evil started to curse loudly at it.

A monster that was capable of destroying the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was actually forced to such a state by someone. This scene was actually a bit comedic.

“You dare continue to insult me? It would appear that the pain this Evil God is bestowing upon you is still insufficient.”

“Ahhhh~~~”

After the Evil God Sword said those words, the Ginseng King of Evil started to emit even more painful screams.

Merely by hearing those screams, one would feel one’s blood run cold. The crowd were unable to imagine what sort of pain the Ginseng King of Evil was enduring at that moment.

However, they were certain that that sort of pain was most definitely not something that they would be able to endure.

At that moment, someone from the allied army asked, “That... is that really still Chu Feng?”

“Why do I feel that something’s amiss?”

“I’m not certain either,” Ying Mingchao said.

After saying those words, he took a deliberate glance at Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang.

However, even Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, these two people with a very good relationship with Chu Feng, shook their heads.

The reason for that was because even they were unable to determine whether or not it was still Chu Feng.

Even though that voice was indeed Chu Feng’s voice, they felt that... that the person in front of them was not Chu Feng.

In actuality, that was indeed not Chu Feng. At this moment, the person controlling the situation was the Evil God Sword.

As for Chu Feng, he could only watch as things unfolded before him. He was unable to do anything.

The reason for that was because his body was currently under the control of the Evil God Sword. His every movement and his every word were all controlled by the Evil God Sword.

That said, Chu Feng still could not help but gasp in admiration at how powerful the Evil God Sword was.

He truly did not dare to believe that such a frightening Evil God Sword had actually... allowed itself to be used by him before.

Logically, with how powerful the Evil God Sword was, it would be extremely easy for it to devour his body.

However, the Evil God Sword didn't do that.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2657 - Hidden Secret

"Seems like the Evil God Sword most definitely has some sort of secret that no one knew about," Chu Feng thought in his heart.

Chu Feng felt that it was not that the Evil God Sword did not want to occupy his body. Rather, it was unable to do so.

As for the most likely reason why, it would be as he had guessed before, that the Evil God Sword was sealed in the weapon. Although the Evil God Sword possessed enormous power, it was unable to unleash it. In order to unleash its powers, it would need a medium. As for Chu Feng... he was that medium.

Time slowly passed. The screams from the Ginseng King of Evil grew softer and softer. In the end, its voice completely disappeared.

As for its enormous body that towered above the clouds, it too grew smaller and smaller, and also disappeared in the end.

The Ginseng King of Evil was completely devoured and refined by Chu Feng.

If they didn't witness it with their very eyes, the crowd would not believe that a human's body would be able to devour a colossus that reached over ten thousand meters tall and towered above the clouds.

At this moment, although the crowd was no longer screaming in panic like before, and everybody was standing in the sky in a strangely quiet manner, they were looking at Chu Feng with the same sort of fear-filled eyes that they looked at the Ginseng King of Evil with earlier.

In fact, the fear in their eyes was even a bit stronger.

“Boy, after devouring that thing, not only are you able to prolong your lifespan, but you are also able to be forever young now. For the rest of your life, your physical appearance will remain this young. You will not become an old man,” Finally, the Evil God Sword’s voice sounded again.

Merely, this voice from the Evil God Sword was spoken by the Evil God Sword, and not through Chu Feng’s mouth. It was a voice that only Chu Feng could hear.

“Oh, I nearly forgot. I shouldn’t have said you, but rather me. After all, this body is already no longer yours. Instead, it belongs to this Evil God now.”

The Evil God Sword’s voice sounded again. After hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s heart shivered.

The reason for that was because what the Evil God Sword said had revealed his scheme. Sure enough, it was not planning to return Chu Feng’s body.

However, as matters stood, there was nothing Chu Feng could do. He had already lost the power to contend for his body. At the very least, he could not contend for his body right now. He could only think of a way to do so in the future.

“I hope that you will honor your promise and not harm my friends,” Chu Feng said.

“Rest assured, this Evil God will definitely do as I’ve said. Since I’ve already promised you, I will definitely not harm them,” The Evil God Sword said.

“I have another request. Might you be able to go and ask that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man where he obtained that scroll?” Chu Feng asked.

He wanted to know exactly where that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan found out that the Ginseng King of Evil was sealed here.

Logically, he should not know about this matter.

After all, not even the people from the Buddha's Heavenly Temple knew exactly what it was that was sealed by the old cat, much less where it was sealed.

That should have been a secret. Thus, how did that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan obtain that information? In fact, he even knew the method to undo the seal, as well as what was sealed.

Chu Feng felt that there was most definitely a hidden secret to all this.

"This Evil God is able to satisfy that request of yours," The Evil God Sword said.

"Woosh~~~"

After it finished saying those words, Chu Feng's body moved, and he landed on the ground.

At that moment, a person was lying on the crater-filled surface. That person was none other than that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Merely, that Chu Heavenly Clan's old man was now incomparably weak. He did not even possess the strength to fly.

That was why he crashed directly from the sky after the Ginseng King of Evil was refined by the Evil God Sword.

This existence that was high and above like a god looking down on all living things was only able to lie on the ground like a dying dog.

"How could this be?"

Chu Bore slowly raised his head. He took a glance at Chu Feng and then took a glance at the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman that had been following Chu Feng the entire time.

The Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was emitting that golden radiance the entire time. That golden radiance had been enveloping the Evil God Sword the entire time. However, it seemed that it was ineffective.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword extended Chu Feng's left hand and grabbed at the air before it.

The next moment, that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman that was still emitting bright golden light landed on its hand.

He clenched his hand, and a 'snap' was heard. The Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was crushed to pieces.

At the same time that happened, the golden-bright and dazzling light started to dissipate.

"I understand now. So that thing was simply unable to suppress you to begin with," Chu Bore laughed wryly.

"Where did you obtain that scroll?" The Evil God Sword asked.

"If I am to tell you the truth, will you spare my life?" Chu Bore asked.

The Evil God Sword did not answer Chu Bore. Instead, it said to Chu Feng, "Boy, you decide something like this."

Chu Feng pondered for a moment. Then, he said, "Tell him to speak the truth."

Compared to taking Chu Bore's life, Chu Feng wanted to know where Chu Bore obtained that scroll more. noVe(LB-In

After receiving Chu Feng's decision, the Evil God Sword said to Chu Bore, "Speak."

"This old man has already reached the end of his allocated lifespan. I was only able to continue living till this day by using methods to extend my life. However, ordinary methods to extend one's life have long since been unable to extend my life. Thus... I could only exhaust all means to find other methods of extending one's life."

"Finally, I discovered a person. I paid an enormous price, and bought that scroll from that person."

"Merely, I do not know that person," Chu Bore said.

"He's not lying," The Evil God Sword said to Chu Feng.

The Evil God Sword's power of observation greatly surpassed Chu Feng's. When it said that Chu Bore wasn't lying, Chu Feng felt that Chu Bore most likely wasn't lying.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had also paid attention to the reaction of that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan as he answered the question. With Chu Feng's own perception, he too felt that the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had not lied.

After all, when faced with death, one's heart would become extremely weak. If one were to attempt to lie at that time... it would be very easily discovered.

"Ask him where he found that person, as well as the characteristics that person possessed," Chu Feng said.

"Where did you find that person? What are that person's characteristics?" The Evil God Sword asked as Chu Feng requested.

"In the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm's Ghost Sect Hall. As for characteristics..." After saying those words, the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan extended his hand with great difficulty. Then, he took out a picture scroll from his Cosmos Sack.

Upon opening the picture scroll, the image of a person could be seen.

That person was roughly three meters tall. However, they were very skinny, and wore a hood and a black gown.

However, that hood was not on that person's head. Thus, one could see that person's face.

That person had a very frightening appearance. To be exact, that person did not resemble a human. Rather, their appearance resembled that of a monstrous beast.

That person had a very thin face. Yet, it was also very fierce. The left half of the face was normal. However, there was an enormous scar on the right half of the face. That scar was somewhat scary-looking.

That scar resembled a giant centipede on his face. Passing over their right eye. It looked truly disgusting.

That person's right eye was green. Thus, it was most likely not his eye. Rather, it resembled a monstrous beast's eye.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2658 - New Lease Of Life

"I was afraid he would scam me. Thus, after I met him, I drew a portrait of him so that I could search for him should he have scammed me."

"Never did I expect for all of this to be true. Never did I expect for there to actually be a Ginseng King of Evil sealed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"Even in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, Ginseng Kings of Evil are only legends," Chu Bore said.

"Ginseng Kings of Evil are also legends in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?"

Chu Feng was astonished. From merely those words, Chu Bore revealed how precious the Ginseng King of Evil was.

"I have told you everything that I know. I truly did not lie to you. Please spare me," Chu Bore said.

"You can scam," The Evil God Sword said.

Hearing those words, Chu Bore unleashed all of his body's strength and stood up with great difficulty. Staggeringly, he ran away.

His running speed was very slow. It was roughly the same speed as that of ordinary people.

From this, it could be seen that his injuries were truly serious, and that the Ginseng King of Evil was truly powerful.

Without a doubt, the Ginseng King of Evil truly possessed the power to completely destroy the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

At the very least, it could turn the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm into a lifeless place of desolation.

Unfortunately, it had encountered an even stronger opponent.

The Evil God Sword!!!

The Evil God Sword turned around and swept its gaze across the crowd.

When the Evil God Sword's gaze moved toward them, practically everyone, with the exception of Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and a few others, did not dare to face the Evil God Sword's eyes. They were all very afraid of that crimson figure.

While that person was not enormous in size, it was even more frightening than the Ginseng King of Evil.

"You all need to thank Chu Feng for being able to live today," the Evil God Sword said.

"Thank Chu Feng?"

"He... he isn't Chu Feng?"

The crowd immediately burst into an uproar upon hearing those words from the Evil God Sword.

With merely one sentence, the Evil God Sword had revealed to the crowd that it wasn't Chu Feng.

After all, if it were Chu Feng, Chu Feng would definitely not tell the crowd to express thanks to him.

"Who are you? Where is my brother?" Wang Qiang asked anxiously.

As he spoke, he rushed toward the Evil God Sword.

"Haha..."

The Evil God Sword chuckled. It watched as Wang Qiang approached.

"Woosh~~~"

However, by the time Wang Qiang managed to reach the Evil God Sword, the Evil God Sword had disappeared.

Following that, the crimson clouds that filled the sky also started to dissipate.

Both the dark black gaseous flames and the crimson gaseous flames disappeared from the sky.

The blue sky and white clouds once again appeared over the crowd.

At that moment, the crowd present realized that this most commonly seen sight was actually very beautiful.

After all, to them, this was equivalent to obtaining a new lease on life.

The things that they'd experienced earlier were simply akin to entering hell itself.

In fact, the crowd was unable to be certain even now as to whether or not their calamity was truly over or not.

After a short period of time, someone said, "We... survived?"

The tone of those words was filled with skepticism.

Even they themselves were uncertain as to whether they would be able to survive.

Suddenly, someone shouted, "Run away!"

Then, a figure started to fly into the distance with an extremely fast speed. In the blink of an eye, it disappeared.

"Run!!!"

Immediately afterward, many others also began to flee in disarray.

This time around, there was no longer any power restricting them. As such, the crowd all managed to successfully escape.

Seeing that they could now escape, some people started to laugh loudly, whereas others started to cry bitterly.

All of those were reactions from obtaining a new lease on life after a great calamity.

One thing that was somewhat comedic was the fact that the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan, that old man who once stood high and above all the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's cultivators, was currently running away with a speed less than one ten thousandth of those cultivators.

That said, even though that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was already so very weak, not a single person dared to attack him.

After all, he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Who would dare to kill him?

That said, there were two individuals who were not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm witnessing all of this.

Although the two of them were hidden, they were brought over when Chu Bore completely enveloped everyone in the surrounding region with his power and proceeded to chase after the Ginseng King of Evil.

Thus, the two of them witnessed everything that happened.

"Chu Huai, let's go help senior. Let's bring him back to the clan," Chu Yue said.

"If you want to die, then go do that," Chu Huai said.

"Are you saying that senior will still try to kill us in his current state?" Chu Yue asked.

"You have already seen his true appearance. What do you think he will do?" Chu Huai said.

Chu Yue grew quiet. After a while, she asked, "Do you really think that Chu Feng has been devoured by his Demon Armament?"

"That's most likely the case," Chu Huai said.

"Then, will he be able to survive?" Chu Yue asked.

"Most definitely not," Chu Huai said in a very determined manner.

"Why is that? Didn't you say that a genius like him most definitely possesses some sort of treasure to protect his life?" Chu Yue asked.

“Can’t you tell how powerful that Demon Armament was? No matter how powerful of a treasure he might have, it would not be able to contend against that Demon Armament.”

“To use that sort of Demon Armament is simply equivalent to playing with fire. Since he has lost control of the Demon Armament, it means that only death awaits Chu Feng.”

After saying those words, Chu Huai sighed. He was feeling pity for Chu Feng’s death.

“Then what should we do now?” Chu Yue asked.

“We must immediately return to the clan. We must report all of this before Chu Bore returns to the clan,” Chu Huai said.

“Okay,” Chu Yue nodded.

Chu Huai and Chu Yue left. The people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were still immersed in a state of being overjoyed.

After all... they had managed to survive a great catastrophe.

That said, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others were not among those cheerful people.

They all knew that Chu Feng might’ve met with an accident, and that the person holding the Evil God Sword might not be Chu Feng.

“Damn it! D-Damn it!”

Wang Qiang knelt on the ground and started to roar hysterically. He was pounding the ground with his fists, creating many large craters and countless cracks on the surface of the ground.

He was feeling extremely unreconciled.

It also seemed that he was regretting the fact that he was unable to catch that Evil God Sword.

“Husband, don’t act like this. What you’re doing right now is meaningless. This is not what Chu Feng would want to see,” Zhao Hong landed beside Wang Qiang and started to urge him to stop.

“T-Then what do y-you want me to do? W-Where did my b-brother go? W-Who e-exactly is that g-guy? Where d-did he t-take my b-brother?” Wang Qiang was extremely emotional and irritable.

“The way I see it, little friend Chu Feng should’ve been devoured by his Demon Armament. That body is still his. Merely, it is now controlled by the Demon Armament. Or perhaps... he is now being controlled by the Demon Armament.”

“That said, it might not necessarily be true that little friend Chu Feng has suffered some sort of mishap. After all... it is not the first time that little friend Chu Feng has used that Demon Armament. He should be able to handle it,” Zi Xunyi said.

“That’s right. What Xunyi says is very reasonable. Don’t worry too much. Perhaps Brother Chu Feng did not encounter any mishap,” Ying Mingchao said.

Even though both Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao were saying things like that, they were feeling very unwell in their hearts.

They had all witnessed the power of that Demon Armament. If it wanted to devour Chu Feng, who could possibly stop it?

.....

The Evil God Sword was flying in the sky. Its speed was extremely fast. Simply no one from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was able to catch sight of it.

“Where are you going?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am waiting for someone,” the Evil God Sword said.

“Waiting for someone? Who are you waiting for?” Chu Feng asked.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. Boy, you do not possess the qualifications to know these things.”

“After all, this Evil God has already done all that should be done. Your friends are also safe and sound now. Thus, it is now your turn to help this Evil God do some things,” the Evil God Sword said.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2659 - Protecting From The Shadows

“What do you want me to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“It will do for you to completely hand over your body to this Evil God.”

“Ahhh~~~~”

After the Evil God Sword said those words, Chu Feng felt an unbearable pain.

That pain was from the raging flames. However, it was much more unbearable than the ordinary pain of one’s body being burned.

Even Chu Feng found it to be intolerable. Perhaps it might be because it was simply too painful, or perhaps it might be because Chu Feng was going to die, Chu Feng started to gradually lose consciousness.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong with you? Say something. C’mon, say something.”

“Say something! Damn it! What did they guy did to you?!”

Chu Feng was able to hear Her Lady Queen’s voice resonating beside his ears nonstop. Her voice was filled with worry.

Gradually, that voice grew weaker and weaker.

Finally, Chu Feng lost consciousness.

“I have already taken control of him. Are you still not going to reveal yourself?”

The Evil God Sword roared loudly as it flew rapidly in the sky.

It was most definitely waiting for someone. However, in a place like this, who could possibly match the Evil God Sword’s speed?

There was. There really was someone capable of matching the Evil God Sword’s speed.

It was a deer and a yellow-gowned old man.

They were the creators of the Unknown Burial Ground.

The old man was not riding on the deer. Rather, they were traveling alongside each other like old friends.

The old man and the deer were walking very slowly in midair. However... they were able to keep up with the Evil God Sword's speed.

However, it seemed that not even the Evil God Sword was able to detect them.

"That brat by the name of Chu Feng is truly amazing. He actually possessed such a Demon Armament."

"If he were to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, enter the Starfields, he would likely really become a top genius."

"If that were to happen, I would truly have lost the gamble," the yellow-gowned old man had a slightly worried expression as he said those words.

It turned out that the two of them had been hidden the entire time, and witnessed everything that had happened before. n((OVelbIn

"That Chu Feng has already been devoured by the Demon Armament. He will likely not be able to survive this."

Right at that moment, the deer spoke. Its voice was actually that of a female's voice.

"No. Although that Demon Armament has devoured Chu Feng's body and is controlling him, it seems to be waiting for someone."

"The way I see it, that Demon Armament was merely threatening. It was using Chu Feng's body to threaten that person."

"That's understandable too. With how talented Chu Feng is, he most definitely possesses a robust background and a powerful backer."

"Thus, there is most definitely someone protecting him from the shadows. That Demon Armament is waiting for that person to appear," the old man said.

Hearing those words, that deer looked left and right. Then, it sniffed several times with its nose.

“I cannot sense the aura of anyone else. Could it be... it’s someone with strength surpassing us?” That deer said.

“That’s impossible. How could there be someone with strength surpassing us in a place like this?”

“Even if that boy has a backing, the power standing behind him is most definitely not a match for us,” the old man shook his head. Then, he said, “Most likely that person hasn’t arrived yet. However, that person will definitely come.”

“Even if Chu Feng is able to be saved and successfully enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, he might not necessarily be able to successfully enter the Starfields.”

“Even if he is to enter a Starfield, he might not necessarily be able to move about unhindered through that Starfield. Not to mention the geniuses in the Starfields, just the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm itself already contains many outstanding geniuses.”

“As for things like geniuses dying young and prematurely, that is simply too common.”

“We might not necessarily lose in this gamble,” that deer said.

“Indeed, it’s not necessarily a loss. However, I cannot afford to lose. I must make sure that we will definitely win,” the old man said.

“You plan to kill him?” That deer said with a slightly surprised tone.

“That is the only option left. After all, everything that is happening right now is going according to his prophecy.”

“If things are to continue like this, we will really end up losing,” the old man said.

“However, according to the rules of the gamble, neither side can interfere with him. As such, neither side, naturally cannot injure him either, much less kill him,” that deer said.

“Although we cannot kill him, it has never been said that we cannot find someone to kill him,” the old man said.

“But, that Chu Feng’s Demon Armament is not easy to deal with. If we are to find someone else to do the task, they might not necessarily be able to subdue him.”

“Furthermore, the person protecting Chu Feng from the shadows still hasn’t shown himself. We still do not know exactly how powerful that person is,” the deer said in a slightly worried manner.

“Rest assured, if they were to act, they would definitely be able to handle this matter,” After the old man said those words, he took out a paper talisman. It was a communication talisman.

“Buzz~~~”

The old man pinched the paper talisman apart. Then, a ray of blue light began to rapidly fly toward them from afar. Soon, it arrived before the old man and the deer.

It was a man. An extremely tall man. His height surpassed ten meters. He was simply a small giant.

Not only was he very tall, but he was also very robust. Muscles covered his body from head to toe. Even though he was wearing clothes, the outlines of his muscles could still be seen.

However, that man was not a human. The reason for that was because his skin was blue, and his eyes were crimson red. At a glance, that man’s appearance was truly frightening.

Furthermore, his blue skin was filled with scars. Those scars seemed to be carved into his body deliberately, as they seemed to follow some sort of pattern. Those scars seemed to take the shape of some sort of special symbol.

In short, those scars were somewhat strange.

“Murdergod Blue Demon,” seeing that person, the deer revealed a surprised expression.

“Exalted Sacred Deer, long time no see,” that ferocious-looking blue giant clasped his fist respectfully at the deer. He was actually very courteous.

That said, his voice was very vigorous and powerful. His voice sounded like the roars of ferocious beasts. It was extremely intimidating.

“Seems like you’ve planned this to begin with,” that so-called Exalted Sacred Deer said to the old man.

“I’ve said it already, I can’t afford to lose.”

“Who would’ve thought that there was really someone capable of breaking through that spirit formation of mine? Furthermore... he really decided to renounce the treasure that he should’ve obtained to save his friend.”

“This is exactly the same as he prophesied. This means that he really will enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm and then the Starfields to defeat various geniuses.”

“Should that day arrive, I will have truly lost,” the old man said.

Hearing those words, the Exalted Sacred Deer grew silent for a moment. Then, it said, “Since you’ve already decided, go ahead and do it.”

Right at that moment, that Murdergod Blue Demon said, “That brat’s gone.”

“What?” Both the yellow-gowned old man and the Exalted Sacred Deer were startled upon hearing those words.

When they looked to the direction of the Evil God Sword, they discovered... that Chu Feng had really disappeared.

“Chase after him,” at that moment, the old man wanted to give chase.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at that moment, an enormous lightning strike suddenly appeared before them.

That lightning strike was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, it struck down. A loud clap of thunder boomed. In the blink of an eye, the clear and boundless sky was filled with surging lightning and clouds.

Clouds covered the entire sky. Lightning flashed, and thunder filled the entire region. It was an extremely strange sight to behold.

“We’ve been discovered?” the Exalted Sacred Deer said.

This sort of weather was most definitely not caused by nature. It was most definitely created by a certain martial cultivator.

“This is a bit troublesome,” the old man started to frown. He was not afraid that he would not be a match for his opponent. Rather, he was afraid of being discovered.

At that moment, the old man, the Exalted Sacred Deer and the Murdergod Blue Demon all swept their serious gazes around their surroundings.

They were using their various methods to observe their surroundings. They were trying to find the person that was hidden.

They were unable to be certain as to whether the abnormal sign was caused by the Demon Armament or the person secretly protecting Chu Feng from the shadows.

However, they were unable to find anyone, nor were they able to sense anyone.

The clouds grew thicker and thicker, the thunder more and more ear-piercing.

“Splash, splash~~~”

Soon, a downpour started to sprinkle down from the clouds. The rain was very heavy. It was coming down from the sky like a massive waterfall.

No matter how heavy a normal downpour was, it would not be able to affect these three people’s vision.

However, the rain that was currently pouring down was actually able to obstruct their vision. At that moment, they were only able to see for less than a hundred meters.

“This is bad,” the Exalted Sacred Deer said. Deep unease appeared in its eyes.

Actually, both the Murdergod Blue Demon and the yellow-gowned old man had also noticed that their current situation was very bad.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2660 - Slight Punishment - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2660 - Slight Punishment

Chapter 2660 - Slight Punishment

“Since you’ve come, why not show yourself?” The yellow-gowned old man said.

Although he spoke with a mild tone, his voice was very loud and clear.

“There are some people who you all are not qualified to touch,” a voice sounded directly from in front of the three individuals.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, that Murdergod Blue Demon unleashed an attack. A punch was shot forth explosively. Boundless martial power started to wreak havoc. The punch formed a golden pillar of light that linked heaven and earth as it shot forward.

The earth was overturned by the impact. Countless cracks appeared in an instant. Even the magma hidden deep beneath the earth started to surge violently before erupting.

The space in the sky above was shattered by the violent trembling and all of a sudden, the entire region turned pitch-black.

However, the shattered space soon returned to normal.

That said, the earth below had been changed beyond recognition.

Deep cracks covered many miles of the surface.

Deep-red magma was flowing and erupting from the cracks, engulfing everything in its path.

The surface of the ground was akin to that of hell at that moment.

That said, those black clouds were still surging in the sky. The lightning was still flickering between the clouds. In fact, even the rain was still violently pouring and blocking the three individuals' vision.

“This?”

Seeing this scene, the Murdergod Blue Demon that had thrown that ferocious punch earlier had a change in expression. Then, he looked to that yellow-gowned old man.

At that moment, both that yellow-gowned old man and that Exalted Sacred Deer revealed incomparable shock on their faces.

Those three individuals who were supposed to be high and above were starting to panic.

That was understandable too. They all knew very well how powerful the Murdergod Blue Demon was. That punch he had unleashed earlier was no small matter either.

In fact, that punch had caused enormous destruction to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Yet, it was unable to affect the lightning, the clouds or the pouring rain in the sky.

This meant that the three of them would not be a match for their unknown opponent.

“Our apologies. We didn't know that Chu Feng would have a person like you supporting him.”

“If we had known, we wouldn't have dared to have wicked thoughts. Might you be willing to let us off by taking into consideration that we didn't know?”

The yellow-gowned old man actually directly clasped his fist and begged for forgiveness.

Although this appeared to be very humiliating, this was a wise and sensible decision.

Since they already knew that they would not be a match for their opponent, it would be the best to admit defeat early.

Moreover, the yellow-gowned old man did not lower himself when admitting defeat.

[1. While he was begging for forgiveness, he merely clasped his fist respectfully, but did not kneel down and kowtow.]

“If I wanted to kill, you three would’ve already been dead,” that voice sounded.

“Thank you, senior, for your kindness,” the yellow-gowned old man immediately expressed his thanks.

“Senior?”

“Haha, don’t address me like that, your age is much older than mine,” that voice said.

Hearing those words, the yellow-gowned old man, the Exalted Sacred Deer and the Murdergod Blue Demon looked to one another. The astonishment in their eyes grew even stronger.

Younger than them, yet stronger than them. This could only mean one thing... the person that they had provoked was no small matter. This person was most definitely an existence renowned through the Starfields.

This time around, they had truly provoked someone that they could not afford to provoke.

Although they already knew that a genius like Chu Feng most definitely possessed a backer, they had never expected his backer to be so powerful.

At that moment, regret filled their hearts.

“Our apologies. We are truly sorry. If we had known that Chu Feng had someone like you backing him, we would never have dared to think about killing him,” the old man started to apologize again.

He was telling the truth. With how powerful their opponent was, he most likely had already heard the conversation between them earlier.

At that time, it would be much better for him to tell the truth and apologize for his former actions than to attempt to lie.

However, after he apologized, there was no reaction from the unknown individual.

After a long while passed, there was still no reaction.

The old man and the two others did not immediately leave. Instead, they asked cautiously, "Are we allowed to leave now?"

The reason for that was because the lightning, the clouds and the pouring rain were still present. They knew very well that that individual was most definitely still here.

"Leave? Haha..."

That individual's voice sounded again. There was a trace of a sneer in the voice now.

Hearing that voice, the old man and the two others all grew nervous. They all knew... that they would not be able to escape unscathed this time around.

However, they still did not try to flee. Even though there was fear in their eyes, their expressions remained unchanged.

From this, it could be seen that the three of them were people accustomed to grand spectacles.

"Then, what do you want from us?" The old man asked cautiously. His tone was also very respectful.

"A slight punishment," that person said.

Even though they had anticipated this, the three of them were still frightened upon hearing those words.

"This is all my fault," the yellow-gowned old man smiled to the Exalted Sacred Deer. He had a guilt-ridden expression in his eyes.

"Don't blame yourself. I also approved of your decision. Since we've provoked a disaster, let us take on its trials and tribulations, take on this punishment, together. It's alright," the Exalted Sacred Deer said. It appeared to be very calm.

“My apologies,” the yellow-gowned old man looked to the Murdergod Blue Demon.

“It’s fine. As long as my life is not taken, anything else will be fine,” the Murdergod Blue Demon said with a smile. He looked very heroic.

“We were in the wrong. Please punish us accordingly,” even though they were going to be punished, the yellow-gowned old man still bowed respectfully as he said those words.

Following that, the Murdergod Blue Demon and the Exalted Sacred Deer also lowered their heads respectfully.

“Don’t think that I will be lenient toward you all because of your respectful actions. I have... encountered a lot of people like you,” that individual said.

Hearing those words, the yellow-gowned old man smiled. He seemed to want to say something more.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the lightning in the sky rushed out from the clouds and struck the yellow-gowned old man, the Exalted Sacred Deer and the Murdergod Blue Demon.

“Rumble~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. In an instant, the three individual’s bodies turned pitch-black. A burnt smell began to waft from their bodies.

“Eeeahhh~~~”

The next moment, those three individuals who were always calm and collected actually let out miserable screams at the same time.

It wasn’t that the three of them lacked tolerance for pain. Rather, being struck by tens of thousands of lightning strikes was simply too difficult to endure.

The three of them were in enormous pain. They were unable to speak due to the pain, and could only scream miserably.

However, the tens of thousands of lightning bolts were still striking nonstop in an unforgiving manner.

Far away, within the vast heavy rain, a pair of eyes was watching this scene attentively without the slightest sympathy.

.....

Nightfall. Specks of starlight filled the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's sky. It was a flowing river of stars.

On a plain that was not affected by the vast destruction wrought throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The plain was covered densely with grasses. The grass swayed back and forth as a gentle breeze blew past them.

Chu Feng was sitting cross-legged on the ground.

To be exact, this was the Evil God Sword.

The Evil God Sword's crimson gaseous flames that covered Chu Feng's body were emitting bright light. In the dark, they appeared extra dazzling.

It was as if those gaseous flames were truly crimson flames.

The Evil God Sword's crimson eyes were exceptionally sharp and ferocious. Seeing those eyes, even ferocious beasts would immediately withdraw. In such a dark night, those eyes looked exceptionally scary.

"Rustle~~~"

Suddenly, footsteps sounded from behind.

The Evil God Sword immediately stood up and looked back. A sinister yet joyous expression emerged in its crimson eyes.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2661 - The Evil God Sword's Purpose

"You're finally here," the Evil God Sword said.

At that moment, a person was standing in front of the Evil God Sword.

That person was a man. His height was not especially tall, and his build was not especially muscular. His face could not be said to be extremely handsome either. It could be said that he looked very mediocre. n)-Ovelbln

However, the sensation that he gave off was very extraordinary. In fact, it could even be said that the sensation one would feel upon seeing him was that he was not a human.

That's right, the sensation one would feel upon seeing him was that he was not human. Regardless of how ordinary his appearance was, regardless of how simple and unadorned his clothes might be, the sensation that he emitted from the core of his being was not something that ordinary people could compare to.

As for that person, he was Chu Feng's father, Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan looked at the Evil God Sword with a smile on his face. Then, he sat down cross-legged. He was completely calm and composed.

"You seem to not be worried about your son's life and death at all," the Evil God Sword said.

"That's because I know he's still alive," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Not bad. Your perception is very sharp. Even though your son has been sealed by me so thoroughly, you actually still managed to detect his vital signs," the Evil God Sword said.

The Evil God Sword did not feel any unease from Chu Xuanyuan's sharp perception. On the contrary, it was actually joyous at that fact.

"You're quite decent yourself," Chu Xuanyuan smiled again. Then, he said, "What say you about a chat?"

"What do you want to chat about?" The Evil God Sword asked.

"How about we chat about where you're from and why you appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism?" Chu Xuanyuan suggested.

"Even if you are to know about the origin of this Evil God, it will serve no purpose. In addition, this Evil God does not wish you to know."

“Furthermore, you do not possess the qualifications to chat with me,” the Evil God Sword said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s move onto the main subject then.”

“Tell me, exactly what is your purpose in seizing my son’s body?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Your son’s cultivation is too weak. He is unable to withstand this Evil God’s power. If I am to completely devour his body, his soul and body will soon be destroyed. That is not something I want.”

“However... you are different,” the Evil God Sword looked to Chu Xuanyuan with lust in its eyes.

“So you actually want to occupy my body. It seems that you’ve managed to see through my cultivation already?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“This Evil God saw through your cultivation the first time I met you on the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm’s Heavenly Road,” the Evil God Sword said.

“It seems that you’ve decided on me since that time?” Chu Xuanyuan had a slight smile on his face. In a seemingly joking manner, he asked, “Then what about now? Are you able to determine my cultivation now?”

“Your cultivation has increased again. This speed of increase is extremely fast. I am truly in admiration.”

“This Evil God has never witnessed someone with such astonishingly fast growth. You... will definitely become a greatly capable individual in the future.”

“If you are able to leave this Starfield, it will not take long for your name to resonate through the entire Outer World,” the Evil God Sword said.

“I thank you for your kind words,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Unfortunately for you, you will not have that chance,” the Evil God Sword said.

“How are you so certain?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“I am absolutely certain. Unless... you are willing to have your son die by my hands,” the Evil God Sword said.

“It seems that you are determined to get me,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That’s right,” the Evil God Sword said.

“You’re quite confident,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“This Evil God’s confidence originates from my unsurpassed strength.”

“In this place, everything will be dictated by this Evil God.”

“I am able to see through all of you people with merely one glance.”

“Those three tailing this Evil God are the same. You... are also the same.”

“All of you are inferior to this Evil God. Thus... this Evil God has you in his grasp completely.”

“How about this? Hand over your body to this Evil God, and this Evil God will help you take care of those three people that wanted to take care of Chu Feng. You can consider it that I have helped you and your son take revenge,” the Evil God Sword said.

It turned out that the Evil God Sword had known about the Exalted Sacred Deer and that yellow-gowned old man tailing him. It had even managed to detect the Murdergod Blue Demon.

Evidently, it has also heard the conversation between the yellow-gowned old man and the Exalted Sacred Deer.

“If you have the leisure to think about all that, you should look after yourself first,” Chu Xuanyuan slowly stood up.

“You wish to fight?” Killing intent emerged in the Evil God Sword’s eyes. It said, “This Evil God urges you to not be reckless. If you are to attack me, you will most definitely suffer a consequence that you do not want.”

“Heh...” Chu Xuanyuan chuckled. Then, coldness emerged in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan rapidly opened his palm. He extended his opened palm and pointed it at the Evil God Sword.

The moment that happened, the Evil God Sword's body trembled. Then, a surprised expression appeared in its eyes.

"You were concealing your cultivation?"

The Evil God Sword was shocked. It realized that the power Chu Xuanyuan revealed was stronger than he had detected.

At that moment, it was completely restricted by Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan did not answer the Evil God Sword's question. Instead, he chuckled lightly and shouted, "Scatter!!!"

"Eeaahhh~~~"

The next moment, the Evil God Sword started roaring in miserable pain.

It was enduring extreme pain. The crimson gaseous flames that surrounded Chu Feng were waning. They were moving away from Chu Feng's body and into the Evil God Sword itself.

The power that the Evil God Sword had devoured Chu Feng with was being forcibly dispersed.

As he had already occupied Chu Feng's body, being forcibly dispersed from Chu Feng's body was a pain akin to being skinned and having one's tendons pulled out from one's body alive. As such, it was naturally unbearable.

As for all that, it was caused by Chu Xuanyuan.

"Impossible! This is impossible! How could you possess the power to suppress this Evil God?!" The Evil God Sword was endlessly astonished.

The power emitted by Chu Xuanyuan at that moment was much more powerful than he had anticipated. It... was simply no match for Chu Xuanyuan.

Even when faced with Chu Xuanyuan forcibly removing it from Chu Feng's body, the Evil God Sword was unable to do anything.

"You are very powerful. You have indeed managed to see through a lot of things. However, you were unable to see through me."

“Thus, you are destined to be defeated here, destined to fall by my hands,”
Chu Xuanyuan said.

After Chu Xuanyuan said those words, his open palm trembled.

“Nooo!!!!”

A loud shout resonated through the night sky. The shout transmitted for many miles and echoed in the sky.

“Clank~~~”

A sharp sound was heard. It was the sound of the Evil God Sword falling to the ground.

Chu Xuanyuan was still standing there. Chu Feng was also still standing there.

Merely, the current Chu Feng was no longer the Evil God Sword. Rather, it was the actual Chu Feng.

The crimson gaseous flames that covered him were gone. Chu Feng had regained his former appearance.

However, his complexion was deathly pale, and his eyes were tightly closed. There was not the slightest trace of breath or aura from him. His appearance was akin to that of a dead man.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body swayed to the side, and he toppled toward the ground.

However, before he could reach the ground, a powerful arm caught him. It was Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan laid Chu Feng on the ground gently. Then, he extended his finger and gently pointed at Chu Feng’s forehead.

“Buzz~~~”

A light blue circle of light began to spread from Chu Feng’s forehead in a ripple-like manner. Which then spread throughout Chu Feng’s entire body.

The next moment, Chu Feng's deathly pale complexion started to turn rosy. His stopped heart started beating again. Even his aura returned.

Even though Chu Feng was still unconscious, he was completely cured of his injuries.

"It seems that Chu Feng's fine now."

Right at that moment, a figure descended from the sky and landed behind Chu Xuanyuan.

That person was not a human. Rather, he was an ape. He was the Old Ape that was with Chu Xuanyuan in the Chu Heavenly Clan's remnant inside the Heavenly Road.

"Have you finished?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"It's done," the Old Ape said.

"What's the result?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

"The three of them have all been driven insane. Unless they are discovered... they will likely not be able to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for some period of time," the Old Ape said.

"I'm asking why the Exalted Sacred Deer and Exalted Sacred Tiger have come here? Exactly who did they gamble with?"

"Furthermore, what sort of gambling stake caused them to want to attack my son?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2662 - Restricting The Sword

"The Exalted Sacred Tiger gambled with the Exalted Heavenly Fate."

"The gamble originated from a conversation between the Exalted Heavenly Fate and Exalted Sacred Tiger, where Exalted Sacred Tiger belittled the people from the various lower realms."

[1. Lower realms here includes Ordinary Realms. The reason for that is because both Lower Realms and Ordinary Realms are lower realms in the eyes of people from the Upper Realms.]

“He stated that he did not understand why those people from the lower realms refuse to properly stay in the lower realms, and instead think themselves to be extremely talented upon obtaining a mere True Immortal-level cultivation and insist on coming to make a name for themselves in the Upper Realms.”

“He declared that those people from the lower realms will all end up with the same fate. That is, they will abandon themselves to despair after being trampled upon and riddled with scars and bruises by the geniuses of the Upper Realms. He declared that they were truly foolish.”

“However, Exalted Heavenly Fate didn’t think that to be the case. He pointed out many examples of people that moved about unhindered in the Upper Realms who had come from the lower realms.”

“However, Exalted Sacred Tiger was unwilling to accept this. He stated that those examples were very rare cases. Even though such examples existed, those people were only capable of moving about unhindered through the Upper Realms. None of them were able to move about unhindered through Starfields. He declared that those who came from the lower realms were still unable to compare to the people from the Upper Realms.”

“The two of them were very serious in their respective arguments. Later on, they both grew angry at one another, and quarreled with each other. The two of them insisted on making things clear.”

“Finally, Exalted Heavenly Fate declared that a genius would appear in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm within three thousand years. He declared that that genius would not only sweep through the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, but he would even sweep through the entire Starfield. He declared that if Exalted Sacred Tiger did not believe him, then they could make a bet.”

“Naturally, Exalted Sacred Tiger did not believe him. This was how their gamble came to be.”

“Merely, as the two of them were both very furious, they ended up making an enormous bet. That is, the one to lose the bet would have to cripple their own cultivation.”

“Exalted Sacred Tiger arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and set up that grand formation over two thousand years ago. During that time, the person prophesied by Exalted Heavenly Fate never appeared. As such, he thought that he would most certainly win the gamble, and was immensely pleased. In fact, he would from time to time go and find Exalted Heavenly Fate to insult him.”

“Never had he ever anticipated that Chu Feng would appear at a time like this.”

“Exalted Sacred Tiger saw that Chu Feng was simply exactly as Exalted Heavenly Fate prophesied, and grew scared that he would lose the bet. Thus... he decided to kill Chu Feng. That is why he went to find Murdergod Blue Demon,” the Old Ape narrated.

“How accurate is it?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“This is something that I obtained through my interrogation while punishing them. He shouldn’t be lying to me. Merely, I don’t understand. The two of them were originally close friends, why would they decide to make one another cripple their own cultivation because of a mere argument over a topic?” Old Ape said.

“That’s because Exalted Heavenly Fate is from the lower realms. The fact that Exalted Sacred Tiger looks down on those from the lower realms is equivalent to him insulting Exalted Heavenly Fate,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“So that’s the case. But the two of them were originally good friends. Even if there is a reason for this, there shouldn’t be a need to go this far, no?” Old Ape was still unable to understand.

“Exalted Heavenly Fate obtained an enormous chance encounter in the past. As such, his prophecies are no small matter. Perhaps this is fate. If it wasn’t for Exalted Heavenly Fate’s gamble with Exalted Sacred Tiger, Exalted Sacred Tiger would not have come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to set up that grand formation, and Feng’er would have received one less chance encounter.”

“Furthermore, I think that even if Exalted Sacred Tiger is to lose the gamble, Exalted Heavenly Fate might still not necessarily make him cripple his own cultivation.”

“This gamble was only to make Exalted Sacred Tiger come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and stay here for three thousand years to guard his formation. The reason for that is because Exalted Heavenly Fate knew very well that Exalted Sacred Tiger held deep resentment towards him.”

“Thus, Exalted Sacred Tiger did not come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to stand guard over his spirit formation for over two thousand years with the goal of three thousand so that he could win the gamble. Mainly, it is because he wanted to make Exalted Heavenly Fate cripple his cultivation.”

“Between the two of them, it is Exalted Sacred Tiger that is heartless, and not Exalted Heavenly Fate,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“What makes the Exalted Sacred Tiger detest Exalted Heavenly Fate like this?” Old Ape asked.

Chu Xuanyuan smiled. It was a very profound smile. However, he did not answer Old Ape’s question.

“It seems that there’s a story between them unknown to the public,” Old Ape said. He revealed his curiosity.

However, Chu Xuanyuan still didn’t say anything.

The Old Ape did not try to further inquire about it. He knew Chu Xuanyuan very well, and knew that Chu Xuanyuan was someone that would never say what he didn’t want to, no matter how much he inquired about it.

It was not only limited to him. No one would be able to make Chu Xuanyuan speak.

“It was you who deliberately drove them insane, right?” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan asked Old Ape.

“No. They were driven insane because they were unable to endure my power, and received a mental breakdown from the punishment.”

“Speaking of it, it is all thanks to your Chu Heavenly Clan’s remnant that I was able to obtain my current level of cultivation.”

As the Old Ape said those words, he involuntarily clenched his fist. An expression of joy and pride emerged on his monkey face.

His current reaction was understandable. Before entering the Chu Heavenly Clan's remnants, those three people were all capable of easily obliterating him.

However, he was now able to easily obliterate the three of them.

This shift in power happened in merely thirty years. With such a great change in strength, how could he not rejoice?

At that moment, Chu Xuanyuan extended his hand and picked up the Evil God Sword that had fallen to the ground. He began to inspect it carefully.

Old Ape also walked over and began to inspect the Evil God Sword alongside Chu Xuanyuan. He was also extremely curious about the sword.

"This sword is extremely strange. Do you know where it comes from?" Old Ape asked.

"The way I see it, that thing is most definitely not the embodiment of the sword's soul. Rather, some sort of demonic being is sealed in this sword," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"How can one be sure?" The Old Ape asked.

"This sword itself is most definitely not an ordinary item. Its sealing power is extremely strong. I have never experienced anything this strong before," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"Really?" Old Ape inspected the sword carefully. However, he was confused. It would seem that even with Old Ape's powers, he was unable to sense the Evil God Sword's sealing power that Chu Xuanyuan mentioned.

"Place your hand on top of my hand and sense again," Chu Xuanyuan said.

The Old Ape did as Chu Xuanyuan said. Then, he revealed an enormous change in expression. Incomparable astonishment filled his eyes. He said, "Such an overwhelmingly powerful sealing power. In that case, wouldn't it mean that the thing sealed inside this sword is..."

The Old Ape was completely shaken. The sealing power of the sword was truly strong. It was precisely because of how powerful that sealing power was that he realized how frightening the monster sealed inside the sword was.

“If it wasn’t for the fact that the sword has restricted that thing, the current me would not be a match for it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Exactly what sort of purpose does that thing have?” Old Ape asked.

The power of the Evil God Sword had already surpassed Old Ape’s imagination. As such, he started to feel uneasy.

“It actually wanted to occupy my body.”

“As for it seizing Feng’er’s body, it did that only to use Feng’er’s body to threaten me,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Occupy your body? Could it be that it wanted to seize your power?” The Old Ape asked.

“No. Its own power surpasses my own. It is only because it is sealed by the sword that it was unable to unleash its true powers.”

“As for its intention to occupy my body, it merely wanted to use my body as a medium to release its true powers.”

“With that, it could find ways to break free from the seal of the sword and regain its freedom,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“We cannot leave such a dangerous thing with Chu Feng,” the Old Ape said.

“Keeping it will save Feng’er’s life during crucial moments,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But...” The Old Ape felt this was unwise.

“I understand your worry. It’s alright, I can restrict its power,” as Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he clasped the Evil God Sword between his palms.

Then, faint golden light began to shine from his palms. It took the form of a net, and began to spread. The golden net covered the body of the Evil God Sword and was then assimilated into it.

Following that, more net-shaped golden light appeared, entered and assimilated into the Evil God Sword.

“This is?” Seeing this scene, Old Ape revealed a complicated expression.

However, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression remained unchanged. He was wholly concentrated on his task. As he continued to operate, golden light continued to appear, take the form of a net, envelope the body of the Evil God Sword and then assimilate into it.

This continued on and on for an entire hour before Chu Xuanyuan finally placed the sword on the ground.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword that was placed onto the ground started to tremble violently.

Its trembling sound was extremely ear-piercing. It was as if a great demon was about to burst out of the sword.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2663 - Bloodline Protection Formation

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing this, Old Ape’s expression changed greatly.

He immediately picked Chu Feng up from the ground and moved behind Chu Xuanyuan. Then, he revealed an appearance as if preparing for a battle. With nervousness and unease in his eyes, he looked to the Evil God Sword.

However, compared to Old Ape who was trembling with fear, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression remained unchanged. Indifferently, he said, “Don’t panic. With my formation limiting it, even if Feng’er is to use it again, it will not be able to seize Feng’er’s body.”

“It is currently even weaker than before. As such, it will naturally not be able to do anything to us.”

After hearing those words, the Old Ape came to a sudden realization. He finally managed to ease his nervousness. Then, he placed Chu Feng, who he was holding, back onto the ground.

He knew very well that even though the sealing method Chu Xuanyuan had used earlier appeared to be ordinary, its power was no small matter.

It was a sealing method that originated from the Ancient Era. Its power surpassed one's imagination.

Back in the day, Chu Xuanyuan had used that exact sealing formation to seal an extremely savage Ancient Era's Organism.

As for the Evil God Sword, while it was very powerful, it remained that it had already been sealed within the sword. Thus, Chu Xuanyuan adding his sealing formation on top of the sword was most definitely going to be effective.

"Actually, you still care deeply about Chu Feng, no? After all, a sealing formation like that will consume your lifespan," Old Ape said to Chu Xuanyuan with a beaming smile on his face.

It was precisely because he knew that sealing formation very well that he not only knew that it was very difficult to handle, but that its user would also have to pay an enormous price should it be cast successfully. That sealing formation was a formation cast with one's own lifespan as the price.

Even though it only took Chu Xuanyuan an hour to finish setting up the sealing formation, this one hour would consume roughly a thousand years of his lifespan.

"This matter concerns Feng'er's safety. I do not wish for there to be any mistakes."

"As long as no mistake is made, this sealing formation will make it so that the Evil God Sword will not be able to devour Feng'er's body for at least a hundred years," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"What about after a hundred years have passed? Are you going to seal the Evil God Sword again?" Old Ape asked.

"After a hundred years have passed, Feng'er will be able to handle it himself," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“You’re this confident?” Old Ape asked with a smile.

“When it’s Feng’er, I am,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Old Ape smiled again. It was a smile of agreement. It could be seen that Old Ape also thought very highly of Chu Feng’s future accomplishments.

Then, Old Ape looked to the Evil God Sword. He discovered that the Evil God Sword was still trembling. Merely, its trembling was no longer as intense as before.

That’s right, the trembling of the Evil God Sword was growing weaker in intensity.

“It will not be able to break free, yet it still struggles like this, isn’t it just wasting its power?” Old Ape asked.

He knew very well that in addition to the Evil God Sword that was sealing the thing within, Chu Xuanyuan’s sealing formation had also taken effect. *n--d/-V//e--l/-B/-l-(n*

Thus, if there was no medium helping the Evil God Sword release its power, it would be useless for it to struggle. Thus... it would not be able to struggle for much longer.

“It wanted to tell me something,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“What did it want to say?” Old Ape asked.

“Meaningless words,” Chu Xuanyuan said. Then, he looked to the Old Ape. With a smile on his face, he said, “Seems like you want to hear it out?”

“It wouldn’t be able to do anything to us anyways. It wouldn’t hurt to listen, no?” Old Ape said with a smile.

“Then let’s hear it out,” Chu Xuanyuan lightly swiped his palm across the space before him while facing the Evil God Sword. Then, a faint light started to flicker from the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, the Evil God Sword let out an incomparably furious roar.

“While you can trap this Evil God for now, you will not be able to trap this Evil God forever!”

“Since you know how powerful this Evil God is, you should know what sort of consequence you will suffer when this Evil God breaks free!”

The Evil God Sword’s voice was deafening. Its voice resonated through heaven and earth. Standing on the ground, one could feel that the ground was trembling violently.

Furthermore, the voice was emitting a very terrifying killing intent. It was a voice that would make anyone feel fear from the bottom of their heart should they hear it.

Not to mention the others feeling fear upon hearing the voice, even Old Ape revealed a change in expression upon hearing the voice.

The reason for that change in expression was because he suddenly felt fear in his heart upon hearing that voice.

Old Ape was panicked. Even though he knew very well that the Evil God Sword did not pose a threat at that moment, he was still very afraid.

He did not understand why this was the case. This sort of fear was not something that he could conceal, nor was it something that he could suppress. He was truly at a complete loss as to what to do.

However, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression remained unchanged. He still did not possess the slightest bit of fear when faced with the Evil God Sword.

“I admit that I am currently inferior to you. However, never did I say that I would be inferior to you in the future.”

“Should you be able to break free from the sword one day in the future, you can very well come and find me.”

“At that time, I will make you completely disappear from this world,” Chu Xuanyuan said as he looked to the Evil God Sword.

“What arrogance!!!!” The Evil God Sword roared again. Compared to earlier, its roar was even more furious, even more frightening.

However, faced with that roar, Chu Xuanyuan revealed a faint smile. “Indeed, I am arrogant. However, I possess the ability to be arrogant.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Xuanyuan gently flicked his hand at the Evil God Sword from afar.

“Ding!” The Evil God Sword’s voice was gone. Even the trembling had stopped.

After the Evil God Sword grew quiet, Chu Xuanyuan walked to Chu Feng and took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.

It was a jade pendant. However, it was clearly not an ordinary jade pendant. Chu Xuanyuan opened the jade pendant. There was actually a separate space within the jade pendant.

There was a body of light within the jade pendant. This body of light was roughly the size of a fingernail and was emitting a faint glimmer.

It was a very weak glimmer. It was only because it was currently nighttime that the glimmer appeared to be slightly more intense and eye-catching.

If one didn’t pay careful attention to the body of light inside the jade pendant, one would not notice it at all.

However, if one were to look at it carefully, one would be astonished.

Nine different colored lightnings were present in the body of light. As they rushed around, they seemed to form an entire world.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the body of light composed of lightning drifted out from the jade pendant and landed on Chu Xuanyuan’s fingertip.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan pointed to Chu Feng. Then, the body of light composed of lightnings turned into a ray of light that entered Chu Feng’s body in a flash.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, a loud explosion sounded from Chu Feng’s body. With Chu Feng as the center, a myriad of lightnings took a spheroid shape and began to spread out from Chu Feng’s body.

The moment that power emerged, the vast amount of grass that covered this plain instantly turned to ash. Not a single blade of grass remained.

Countless deep cracks had appeared in the ground. Even space itself was shattered.

Wherever the light spread to, everything was destroyed.

An enormous and deep crater had appeared in the ground.

If that lightning continued to spread, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be destroyed.

This was truly a power capable of utter destruction.

“Halt!”

Before the lightning could expand, Chu Xuanyuan stretched forth his palm and shouted at the lightning.

The lightning that was expanding instantly came to a halt. Gradually, it began to move back. Soon, it had completely returned to Chu Feng’s body.

If it wasn’t for the fact that that enormous hemispherical crater was still present; the entire surrounding grassland had been burned to ashes and sinking noises were still being emitted by the cracks that filled the ground, no one would believe that such an enormous amount of lightning had appeared earlier and nearly destroyed the entire world.

“So the reason why you took great pains and effort to set up this Bloodline Protection Formation is because you wanted to protect Chu Feng,” Old Ape said with a smile on his face.

“We will be leaving this Starfield. He can only rely on himself now. I am indeed slightly worried about him,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Even your Bloodline Protection Formation will only be able to save him once. However, the dangers that he will experience will most definitely not be limited to a single instance,” Old Ape said.

Hearing those words, Chu Xuanyuan looked to Chu Feng. Emotions appeared for the first time in his serene eyes.

However, the emotions in Chu Xuanyuan's eyes soon disappeared, and were replaced with determination.

"It is his path. He must walk that path alone," Chu Xuanyuan said.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2664 - The Promise Between Father And Son

"If you're worried, you could directly bring him with you. There's no need to temper him through experience by himself, no?"

"If you are to help him, he will grow at least ten times faster than he is now," Old Ape said.

It could be seen that Old Ape was somewhat reluctant to part with Chu Feng. He did not wish for Chu Feng to face the challenges in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm by himself. After all, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was over a hundred times more dangerous than the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"If I am to help him, he will indeed be able to become an expert capable of traveling about unhindered through the Starfields in a short period of time."

"However, that will become his limit. He will not be able to become a character that can move about unhindered through the entire Outer World," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"But, didn't you help Zi Ling?" The Old Ape said.

"Feng'er is different from Zi Ling. Zi Ling's talent is limited. I must help her increase her talent. Only by doing so can she have a chance to chase after Feng'er."

"As for Feng'er, he is very talented. Even without my help, he will most definitely be able to steadily mature."

"Furthermore, it is only through being left to one's own devices without the assistance of others that he will be able to create his own martial cultivation path."

“Only through finding a martial cultivation path that belongs to him, and which is not just a duplicate of another will he be able to walk further,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In the end, it’s all because it’s you. If it were another father, they would most definitely not be willing to do something like this,” Old Ape grumbled.

“One day, Feng’er will understand that I am doing this for his own good,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, back then, you promised Chu Feng’s mother that you would properly protect Chu Feng.”

“If Chu Feng’s mother is to find out that you consider your protection of Chu Feng to be something like this, she might end up killing you.”

“No, if his mother were to find out that her son is actually enduring all sorts of hardships in a distant Starfield, she would likely massacre her way here and forcibly retrieve Chu Feng,” Old Ape said with a beaming smile.

“According to her temperament, that is indeed possible. However... she wouldn’t be able to do that. After all, she is confined by...” As he said those words, Chu Xuanyuan started to tightly clench his fists. The expression of his gaze had changed.

The surrounding temperature started to plummet. Layers of frost appeared on the ground whilst Snowflakes emerged in the sky.

At that moment, Chu Feng, who was lying on the ground started to shiver involuntarily. Even Old Ape felt a chill through his bones.

“Xuanyuan,” Old Ape immediately patted Chu Xuanyuan’s shoulder with his hand.

It was only at that moment that Chu Xuanyuan noticed the changes that had occurred to their surroundings. His expression started to ease, and he began to emit a gentle aura. The snowflakes that covered the sky started to disappear. The frost that covered the ground also started to disappear.

“Everyone possesses an Achilles’ heel. As for yours, it is her. Forget about it, I will not mention her again before you,” Old Ape said in a helpless manner.

He knew Chu Xuanyuan very well. Thus, he knew that he was a very calm and cool-headed individual.

However, whenever Chu Feng's mother was mentioned, Chu Xuanyuan would lose control of his emotions.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan said, "One day, I will definitely rescue her."

"Xuanyuan, don't be reckless. Her clan is not one to be trifled with," Old Ape advised him against it.

The place that confined Chu Feng's mother was actually her home. She was confined by her clan.

Merely, the clan that Chu Feng's mother belonged to was truly no small matter.

Her clan was not the ruler of an Upper Realm, nor was it the ruler of a Starfield.

Instead, they were a power renowned throughout the entire Outer World. Her clan was truly a huge monster. It was a monster that stood at the apex of the Outer World, and was revered by various Starfields and other powers.

Although the Chu Heavenly Clan was the ruler of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they were simply incomparable against Chu Feng's mother's clan.

Even the current Chu Xuanyuan would not be a match for them.

The disparity between them could even be said to be enormous.

"If I wanted to act recklessly, I would've done it back then. I wouldn't have waited till today."

"Actually, I know very well. With her talent and status, even if she is confined by her clan, they will not truly harm her."

"As long as she is in good health, I will have sufficient time to increase my cultivation. Regardless of how powerful her clan might be, I will definitely be able to confront them one day..."

"That said, the top priority right now is to find my father," Chu Xuanyuan said.

“You investigated your father before. However, the result you obtained was not optimistic at all. If you plan to continue with your investigation, you will have to confront unknown dangers. Are you certain that you want to do this?” Old Ape asked.

“I must do this,” Chu Xuanyuan replied in a very determined manner.

“Do you really think your father is still alive?” Old Ape asked.

“I cannot be certain,” as Chu Xuanyuan said those words, a trace of sadness appeared in his eyes. Then, he said, “However, if he is alive, I must see him. If he is dead, I must see his corpse.”

“Then, even though we’re not going to bring Chu Feng with us, are we not going to bring Zi Ling with us?”

“Chu Feng’s talent is obvious to the eyes. Through the many years of trials he has experienced, he has indeed matured greatly. He possesses the ability to experience and endure trials and tribulations by himself.”

“However, Zi Ling is inferior to Chu Feng. Yet, you want her to go train by herself too. What if some sort of accident is to happen to her? How are you to explain that to Chu Feng?” The Old Ape asked.

“Zi Ling is, after all, my disciple. If she is unable to endure this bit of difficulty, I will have taught her in vain.”

“Moreover, it is Zi Ling herself who chose to go and train there. Even if an accident is to happen, I cannot be blamed for it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I have never met a master as ruthless and cold-hearted as you,” Old Ape shook his head helplessly.

“Wuuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng let out a light groan. His tightly closed eyes trembled slightly.

“Chu Feng is about to awaken. It is time for us to go,” Old Ape said.

However, not only did Chu Xuanyuan not leave, but he instead walked over to Chu Feng’s side.

Then, he waved his sleeve and the surrounding scenery instantly changed.

The surrounding scenery changed to that of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's Heavenly Road. It was the Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area.

Then, Chu Xuanyuan gently stroked Chu Feng's hair. Chu Feng's tightly closed eyes trembled slightly. Then, they slowly opened.

Chu Feng had awakened.

"Father, is it really you?"

Seeing Chu Xuanyuan, Chu Feng was overjoyed. He did not dare believe what he saw. He began to rub his eyes repeatedly.

"Feng'er, do you still remember the promise between you and father?" Chu Xuanyuan asked.

[1. Chu Xuanyuan is referring to himself in the third person. In Chinese, it's an intimate sort of speaking mannerism in this context. It's kinda like how I address myself as daddy to my sons.]

"Promise?" Chu Feng was confused.

"Although this place is unable to confine father, father still wishes for the Chu Heavenly Clan to personally release me."

"Only you are able to help father. You must obtain the acknowledgement of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Only by obtaining their acknowledgement will they release father."

"At that time, father will tell you everything about your mother," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"I will. I will accomplish it," Chu Feng nodded his head repeatedly.

Chu Feng was not only anxious to know about his mother, but he also did not wish for his father to continue to be imprisoned in a forbidden area.

"Father will wait for that day," with a smile on his face, Chu Xuanyuan stroked Chu Feng's head again.

At that moment, Chu Feng, whose eyes were originally shining brightly, immediately felt sleepy all of a sudden. Soon, his eyes closed, and he fell asleep.

After Chu Feng fell asleep, Chu Xuanyuan stood up. With a wave of his sleeve, the surrounding illusion was dissipated. The surrounding scenery returned to how it was before.

“If you’re reluctant to part with him, you can actually bring him with you,” Old Ape urged again.

He was able to tell from Chu Xuanyuan’s behavior that he was worried about Chu Feng.

“Let’s go.” However, Chu Xuanyuan was determined. After he finished saying those words, he walked into the sky. Although he walked with a slow pace, he disappeared into the sky in the blink of an eye.

Old Ape sighed and shook his head. Then, he took a profound glance at Chu Feng before following after Chu Xuanyuan.

After Chu Xuanyuan and Old Ape left, that region became particularly desolate.

Chu Feng continued to lay on the ground for a very long time before he opened his eyes again.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2665 - The Awakened Chu Feng

After Chu Feng opened his eyes, he rubbed his still-hurting head. Then, he ran his eyes over his surroundings.

The surrounding scenery was a bit frightening. Cracks filled the ground, and a decently large and somewhat strange-looking semi-circular crater was beneath him.

Evidently, this place had undergone some sort of destruction that was caused by martial cultivators. Otherwise, it would not be possible for the destruction to be so enormous.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng, with his current level of cultivation, possessed an extremely sharp vision. He was able to see a very far distance.

However, the scenery that he could see was all like that. This meant that the range of destruction was extremely vast.

Most strangely, there was a sort of indescribable chilliness there.

That chilliness was not bone-piercingly cold. However, it was clearly not something that should be present there.

“I’m still alive?”

Chu Feng was astonished. Although that place was very strange, when he saw the white clouds and blue sky above his head and heard the sharp birdcries, Chu Feng knew that he should still be in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, it was currently daytime. He was able to clearly see everything.

“Eggy, are you alright?” Chu Feng asked.

Although he was safe, Chu Feng was very worried for Her Lady Queen’s safety.

After all, the Evil God Sword had caused Chu Feng to feel an intolerable pain earlier. In fact, Chu Feng was simply unable to resist the pain.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether or not Her Lady Queen was affected or not.

“Chu Feng, I’m fine. What about you?” Eggy’s concerned voice was heard.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng realized that Her Lady Queen was indeed fine. Merely, her voice contained deep worry.

“I’m also fine. Speaking of it, it’s quite strange. My body feels very relaxed. There is no trace of pain at all. It doesn’t appear that I have received a backlash at all,” Chu Feng said.

He had received the backlash from the Evil God Sword multiple times. Thus, he would still receive residual pain even after enduring the backlash. Time was required to gradually and completely eradicate the pain.

Never had he ever experienced such an uncomplicated and relaxed sensation, as if he were completely fine.

“Regardless, it’s good that you’re fine,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng stood up and carefully inspected his surroundings. After careful inspection, a nervous expression emerged in his eyes. He said, “What did that Evil God Sword do using my body?”

Chu Feng started to ponder as he looked at his surroundings. The scenery surrounding him was simply too desolate. Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that the range of destruction was most likely much greater than what he could see.

This sort of destruction caused Chu Feng to feel fearful and uneasy.

Chu Feng felt that this was most likely caused by the Evil God Sword.

All of this indicated that the Evil God Sword had caused unrestrained destruction after occupying Chu Feng’s body.

Likely, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would’ve met with a calamity. After all, the Evil God Sword possessed that sort of power.

“Chu Feng, I think that the Evil God Sword will not violate the promise it made with you. Since even you are safe, it would mean that your friends should be safe too,” Her Lady Queen said.

She knew very well what Chu Feng was worried about. Naturally, what Chu Feng was most worried about were his friends.

“I hope that’s the case,” Chu Feng still had doubt in his heart.

Firstly, he could not be certain if his friends were still alive. After all... he did not believe in the Evil God Sword much.

Back then, he had decided to hand his body to the Evil God Sword because he had no other option.

That said, what Chu Feng was more confused about was why his body had returned to his possession.

The Evil God Sword had tried all means to seize his body, and had at last managed to occupy his body. The Evil God Sword should not have returned his body to him so quickly.

The situation at hand was somewhat unnatural.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng cast his gaze to the Evil God Sword nearby.

Chu Feng felt a bit scared upon seeing that sword again. He actually didn't dare to pick it up.

In fact, Chu Feng was uncertain as to whether or not the Evil God Sword would continue to occupy his body should he pick it up again.

It was only when the Evil God Sword fully released its power that Chu Feng realized exactly how frightening the Demon Armament that he carried along with him the entire time was.

However, after some time passed, Chu Feng still extended his hand and picked up the Evil God Sword.

"There's nothing peculiar. It's just like how it was before. This is simply too strange."

Chu Feng grew even more puzzled. The Evil God Sword was exactly the same as how it was before the whole event. It was still within the range of Chu Feng's control.

However, logically, it shouldn't be so easy to control.

Suddenly, a trace of determination flashed through Chu Feng's eyes. The hand that Chu Feng grabbed the Evil God Sword with started to grow even tighter.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing? Do not act recklessly," Her Lady Queen shouted anxiously.

She sensed that Chu Feng might be planning to do something very dangerous.

“I will know what exactly happened after asking it,” Chu Feng said.

“Buzz~~~”

After saying those words, Chu Feng actually started to instill his power into the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, crimson gaseous flames began to emerge from the Evil God Sword. Thick layers of crimson gaseous flames started to fill the sky.

The crimson gaseous flames were like crimson clouds as they extend continuously for several miles. It covered Chu Feng’s entire field of view.

It was eerie and frightening. It was like the arrival of doomsday. Seeing it, one would feel very uneasy.

Chu Feng had truly activated the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Tell me, exactly what did you do?”

“Why would you go through great effort to seize my body only to return my body to me?”

“Did you harm my friends? Why did you create such destruction?”

Chu Feng asked successive questions.

However, the Evil God Sword did not answer him. It was deathly silent.

“Say something!” Chu Feng shouted.

However, there was still no answer from the Evil God Sword.

Just like that, Chu Feng continued to repeat his questions tens of times. Yet, the Evil God Sword still didn’t answer.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng ended up retrieving his power. Following that, the Evil God Sword’s power also started to gradually vanish.

Chu Feng started to frown. He felt even more uneasy.

He knew that as long as he unleashed the power of the Evil God Sword, that so-called Evil God would appear, and he would be able to communicate with it.

Yet, there was no response from the Evil God Sword. This meant that so-called Evil God did not wish to answer him.

If possible, Chu Feng really wanted to continue questioning the Evil God Sword until he received an answer.

However, he could not do so. After all, he would receive a backlash from using the Evil God Sword and releasing its power. As for the intensity of the backlash, it would depend on how long he used the Evil God Sword. Thus... Chu Feng did not dare to activate the Evil God Sword and unleash its power for an extended period of time.

“Wuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt a pain in his chest. Immediately afterward, that pain extended to his entire body. It was the backlash from using the Evil God Sword.

It was just like how it was before. It was the same sort of familiar pain, the same unbearable pain.

This made Chu Feng even more certain that the Evil God Sword had not changed. The reason for that was because that painful sensation was exactly the same as before.

Even though Chu Feng had only used the Evil God Sword for a very short period of time, the backlash he received was still extremely difficult to bare. Chu Feng had to sit down and adjust his condition.

When Chu Feng finished adjusting his condition, he discovered that the sun had already set, and the sky was nearly fully dark.

“Chu Feng, what do you plan to do now?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Since it refused to give me an answer, I will have to find the answers to my questions myself,” As Chu Feng spoke, he soared into the sky. He began to proceed toward the direction of Hero City.

He felt that if Wang Qiang and the others were fine, they should be at Hero City right now.

However, the further Chu Feng flew, the more uneasy he became. As he was very anxious, his flying speed was extremely fast.

That said, even though he was flying this fast, the scenery below him... remained practically identical.

It was completely barren, without a single blade of grass. Not only was there no trace of life on the ground, but the ground was also covered with cracks.

That sort of scenery differed to some extent compared to the destruction caused by the Ginseng King of Evil.

The Ginseng King of Evil had refined all the lives around it using its own powers.

However, the scenery below him appeared to be destruction caused by some sort of power.

Although the destruction had not reached an extremely frightening level, such a vast range went to show how strong that power was.

Chu Feng firmly believed that no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possessed that sort of power.

Thus, he grew even more certain that it should be caused by the Evil God Sword.

As such, Chu Feng grew even more worried about the safety of his friends.

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen said, "Chu Feng, there is one thing that I think I should tell you."

"What is it?" Chu Feng asked.

"Not long after you lost consciousness, I also lost consciousness."

"However, strangely, I had a dream. You should know that I never have dreams," Her Lady Queen said.

“What sort of dream?” Chu Feng asked. He felt that since Her Lady Queen had deliberately mentioned this matter to him, her dream must be special.

Hearing that, Her Lady Queen began to tell Chu Feng the dream that she had in full detail.

“This dream?”

Chu Feng’s heart tensed up upon hearing the narration of Her Lady Queen’s dream. He felt great disbelief.

The reason for that was because the dream that Her Lady Queen had was Chu Feng returning to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, to the Heavenly Road and the Chu Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area.

At that place, Chu Feng saw his father. His father mentioned the promise between them again.

As for that dream, Chu Feng had also dreamed it.

Originally, Chu Feng felt that it was merely an ordinary dream.

However, judging from the situation now, it was definitely not an ordinary dream.

Otherwise, how could he and Her Lady Queen have the same dream?

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2666 - The Great Law Enforcement Hall

Could it be that it was not a dream at all?

However, upon carefully recalling it, Chu Feng was determined that it was a dream.

The reason for that was because the sensations he felt and everything that occurred when he saw his father were so very unrealistic. It was truly like a dream, and most definitely not real.

That was a dream. That was most definitely a dream. Chu Feng was determined that it was a dream.

“Eggy, I also dreamed that dream of yours,” Chu Feng said.

“You also dreamed it? You’re saying that you had the same dream as me?” Her Lady Queen was very shocked.

“That’s right, it was the same dream,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re kidding. That’s simply too miraculous,” Her Lady Queen grew even more astonished.

Miraculous. Sure enough, this matter was very miraculous. That was the reason why Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were so astonished and feeling such disbelief.

Had it been before, Chu Feng would definitely ponder something like this deeply.

Merely, Chu Feng did not have the heart to do so right just then. The reason being, he was very worried. He was worried that the Evil God Sword had done some sort of irreversible thing during the time when his body was occupied by the Evil God Sword.

However, to Chu Feng’s joy, after he continued to travel for some time, the ground below was no longer filled with cracks. Instead, living things could be seen.

He was able to see emerald-green grass and dark green mountains, as well as waterfalls and streams. Upon seeing those, the unease in Chu Feng’s heart immediately lessened greatly.

This meant that even though the Evil God Sword had unleashed massive destruction, the range of the destruction was limited. The entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had not experienced heavy destruction.

This increased the possibility that his friends would be alive.

Afterward, Chu Feng discovered an Ancient Era’s Teleportation Formation. Using that teleportation formation, Chu Feng was teleported to the vicinity of Hero City.

A sea of people were gathered outside Hero City. Many of them were kneeling on the ground.

Those people were practically all people that had experienced the calamity that day. n/.OvEIBIn

To those people, the gates of Hero City remained shut.

That was understandable too. After all, Hero City had witnessed the true appearances of these people.

Likely, the people from Hero City would never show any consideration for those people in the future. Furthermore, they would most definitely not allow them to join Hero City.

That said, although the fact that many people were still alive indicated that the Evil God Sword had not unleashed a massacre, Chu Feng's worry was still not completely eliminated.

The reason for that was because he did not sense Ying Mingchao and the others' auras upon entering Hero City. He only managed to sense Grandmaster Pocket's aura.

For the sake of finding out what had happened, Chu Feng decided to go and find Grandmaster Pocket.

"Almsgiver Chu Feng, is it really you?"

Grandmaster Pocket was extremely emotional upon seeing Chu Feng. He, who had always been a calm individual, actually moved toward Chu Feng and started to touch him all over. It was as if he did not dare to believe that it really was Chu Feng who stood before him.

"Grandmaster, it's me. I'm alright now."

Chu Feng smiled faintly. He was emotionally moved.

He could tell that Grandmaster Pocket was truly worried for him. Otherwise, he would not have reacted in such a manner.

Then, Chu Feng came to find out what had happened afterwards from Grandmaster Pocket.

That day, after Chu Feng had been devoured by the Evil God Sword, the calamity came to an end.

However, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others were all extremely worried for Chu Feng's safety. Thus, they did not return to Hero City. Instead, they separated with one another and began to search for Chu Feng separately.

Fortunately, they had all left methods to communicate with one another.

Thus, through those methods, Grandmaster Pocket conveyed the news of Chu Feng's return to Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others.

After some days passed, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others that had received news of Chu Feng's return, all returned to Hero City in succession.

Without any exception, they were all shocked and pleasantly surprised upon seeing that Chu Feng was truly safe and sound. The person that reacted in the most exaggerated manner was Wang Qiang. Not only was Wang Qiang so emotional that his speech grew unintelligible, but he even started to weep bitter tears, and rubbed his snot and tears all over Chu Feng's clothes.

However, Chu Feng did not blame Wang Qiang for his reaction. Instead, he was speechlessly moved by him. It could be seen from Wang Qiang's reaction that Wang Qiang truly cared about him.

After verifying that Chu Feng was safe and sound, the crowd began to ask Chu Feng about where he went, and what happened after his body was devoured by the Evil God Sword.

As for Chu Feng, he answered that he was not sure.

Chu Feng was not lying. He was truly unsure.

Regardless, the crowd was feeling very happy, overjoyed even. After all, Chu Feng, the person that they were worried about the most, had safely returned.

After what happened, Chu Feng's status in their hearts had changed completely. Chu Feng was no longer an ordinary genius. Instead, he was a hero now. He was a great hero who had saved them from a demon's clutches.

Chu Feng was also feeling very happy. It was not because the crowd viewed him as a hero. Rather, it was because the people that he cared about were all safe and sound.

.....

Right when Chu Feng was having a reunion with his friends, another scene was happening in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

This was a vast palace hall. It was not extremely extravagant in appearance. However, it appeared very imposing. A solemn and dignified sensation filled the entire palace hall.

It made it so that people did not dare to have the slightest blasphemous intention there.

That palace hall was called the Great Law Enforcement Hall. It was a place under the administration of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall.

At that moment, Chu Huai and Chu Yue were kneeling in the Great Law Enforcement Hall. There were tens of people standing on either side of them.

Those people were all standing there in an orderly fashion. Each and every one of them possessed strength above Chu Huai and Chu Yue.

They had stern and imposing expressions and there was no trace of emotion on their faces. They gave off an invisible sort of oppressive pressure.

That said, even though those people all possessed powerful strength, and there was a seat behind every one of them, not a single person dared to sit down.

They seemed to be waiting for someone.

No, not all of them were standing. There was a single exception. It was a girl.

That girl had a head of pink hair tied into a long ponytail. Her hair was so long that it reached down to her heels. Perhaps it was because she took great care of her hair, but her hair was emitting a faint shine under the sunshine. It was quite eye-catching.

One could not determine what the true exact age of that pink-haired ponytailed girl was. However, her appearance was truly that of a young girl. Her skin was very young and tender.

Furthermore, she was not only limited to having a youthful and tender skin, but her appearance was also very stunning.

Her skin was fair like jade; Her facial features charmingly refined. This was especially true for her eyes; they were quick-witted and spirited.

Even Chu Yue, a beauty in her own right, was eclipsed by her beauty when appearing in the palace hall alongside her.

That said, although that woman possessed excellent beauty, she gave off a prideful air. She sat there with a proud attitude, and gave off a sensation of looking down on everyone.

Even though she was facing all the seniors present, she did not reveal the slightest bit of humility. On the contrary, she simply did not place the crowd present in her eyes at all.

However, faced with a girl acting like her, none of the people present actually dared to voice any complaint.

It seemed that they had already grown accustomed to the girl's prideful attitude. Furthermore, they had already accepted it.

"My apologies. I was delayed by some matter. I have made everyone wait."

Suddenly, an apologetic voice sounded. At the same time, a figure appeared in the palace hall.

That person was a middle-aged man. He was over two meters tall, and had a very robust build. There were two scars visible on his face. They seemed to be scars caused by a bladed weapon. Those scars looked very fierce, and made the man look somewhat scary.

However, if one were to remove those two scars, that man would actually have a very good-natured face. This was especially true just then, as that man had an apologetic smile on his face. That smile made him even more amiable and approachable.

That said, all the people present started to feel deep veneration for the middle-aged man once he appeared. They immediately half kneeled onto the ground and bowed respectfully, "We pay our respect to Lord Vice Hall Master."

That's right, that amiable looking middle-aged man was no small matter.

Even in the Chu Heavenly Clan, he was someone with a very high status. His name was Chu Xuanzhengfa. He was the Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master.

[1. His name is Chu Xuanzhengfa. It means Chu Xuan(carry out the law). The Xuan is the same Xuan as Chu Feng's father's Chu Xuanyuan's Xuan. This most likely signifies that they're from the same generation (Chinese people oftentimes name their children the same first character in their name according to the generation they're in.)]

This Chu Xuanzhengfa was a truly grand character. Not only was he revered in the Chu Heavenly Clan, but he was also renowned throughout the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

However, even though he was a grand character, that girl did not place him in her eyes at all.

Not only did she not stand up to respectfully greet him, but she did not even bother to lift her head. She did not even bother to look at the Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not reveal any trace of displeasure at the girl's attitude. Instead, he walked over to the girl's side and gently poked her forehead.

He said, "Lingxi, are you not going to greet your father?"

It turned out that the girl by the name of Chu Lingxi was actually the daughter of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master.

However, everyone knew that that was not the sole reason why Chu Lingxi dared to act so arrogantly and rude in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

In addition to having her father behind her, she was also one of the Chu Heavenly Clan's current five strongest members of the younger generation.

Due to the fact that she possessed extraordinary talent, she was deemed to be a demon-level genius.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2667 - Important Matter To Report n(Ov&ℓb1n

“Humph.”

Faced with Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Lingxi pouted her lips and raised her face.

With a haughty attitude, she said, “Dear Lord Father, I came to find you right after returning.”

“Merely, Lord Father, you are simply too arrogant, no? Your daughter, I, have traveled far and hard to return and, out of filial piety, came to find you immediately. Yet you...”

“You actually refused to see me. If it wasn’t for those two’s appearance, I would likely not have been able to get to see you, no?”

After saying those words, Chu Lingxi cast a glance at the kneeling Chu Huai and Chu Yue. A displeased expression was present in her eyes.

“Foolish girl, your father had things to care of,” Chu Xuanzhengfa smiled. Then, he looked to Chu Huai and Chu Yue, “Chu Huai, Chu Yue, you can get up.”

After he said those words, he waved his sleeve, and a gentle power brought Chu Huai and Chu Yue to their feet.

After that, Chu Xuanzhengfa arrived at the Law Enforcement Hall’s Master Seat.

“The two of you have stated that you have something important to report that must be conveyed to me directly. What is it?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

However, before the two of them could speak, Chu Xuanzhengfa looked over to Chu Lingxi. He said, “You’ve finally gotten to see your father, why are you leaving already?”

It turned out that Chu Lingxi had gotten up, and was walking toward the exit of the Law Enforcement Hall.

“I am in no mood to listen to your troublesome things. I will return home first. If you want to see your daughter, you can find me at home later.”

“Oh, that’s right. There’s a limit of one hour. If you do not return in an hour, you will not be able to see me,” Chu Lingxi said haughtily.

Chu Xuanzhengfa shook his head with a smile. Then, he looked to Chu Huai and Chu Yue, “Go ahead and tell me exactly what the important matter is.”

“Milord, we have come mainly to report two things to you.”

“Firstly, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Infant Soul Sect has been exterminated,” Chu Huai said.

“What? The Infant Soul Sect has been exterminated?”

Hearing those words, not only was the crowd inside the Law Enforcement Hall shocked, but even Chu Lingxi, who had arrived by the exit, stopped in her tracks. Then, she pulled back her raised foot and looked to Chu Huai and Chu Yue with quick-witted eyes.

“Are you certain?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“Absolutely certain,” Chu Huai said.

“Who did it? Have you managed to discover that?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“It was done by a member of the younger generation by the name of Chu Feng,” Chu Huai said.

“Chu Feng?”

“Younger generation?”

Hearing those words, the gazes of the crowd all changed. Although they appeared to be undisturbed, they were all sending voice transmissions to one another and discussing the matter.

If it were some other power from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that was eliminated, the people present would not even blink an eye.

However, the Infant Soul Sect was different. The Infant Soul Sect was a power that the Chu Heavenly Clan had not been able to eliminate for all these years.

In fact, many of the people present had challenged the Infant Soul Sect in their youth. However, it went without saying that all of them had returned in failure.

And now, someone had actually managed to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. How could they not be shocked by the news?

Furthermore, it was a member of the younger generation.

“Is this Chu Feng a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“He shouldn’t be a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Huai said.

“Then, he shouldn’t be someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, no?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“No, he should be from some other Upper Realm. However, he is most definitely not from our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” Chu Huai said.

“You said that he’s a member of the younger generation, do you know his actual age?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“I am uncertain of his actual age. However, from my observation, he should have only just passed thirty years of age, and be no older than thirty-three,” Chu Huai said.

“Sssss~~~~” Hearing those words, many people present were unable to stop themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Even Chu Xuanzhengfa’s expression changed. In fact, even the Chu Heavenly Clan’s demon-level genius, Chu Lingxi, revealed interest in her eyes.

She had already returned to the Law Enforcement Hall from the exit. Furthermore, she had found a seat and sat down.

Logically, it was rare for something to make people of their status react in such a manner.

Thus, it indirectly illustrated how enormous of a thing it was to them for Chu Feng to have eliminated the Infant Soul Sect.

Actually, there were quite a few from the various Upper Realms' younger generations who were capable of eliminating the Infant Soul Sect. However, those capable of eliminating the Infant Soul Sect in their early thirties were extremely few.

At the very least, no one in the Chu Heavenly Clan was capable of accomplishing such a feat. This included the current five most talented demon-level geniuses. Even they were unable to accomplish that sort of thing at that age.

"Chu Huai, tell me all that you know about this Chu Feng," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Chu Huai began to narrate all that he knew about Chu Feng to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

This included Chu Fang having obtained the inheritance of the Ancient Era's War Clan.

He also mentioned that Chu Feng was not only a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline, but also someone that trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, as well as having a heaven-defying Demon Armament.

Hearing those things, many of the people present were unable to remain calm anymore. Merely the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was already able to sway their composure.

The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was something that no one in the current Chu Heavenly Clan had grasped.

Then, Chu Huai began to narrate what Chu Feng had experienced in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

He let the crowd know that Chu Feng's cultivation was originally not strong. However, in a mere few years, his cultivation increased by leaps and bounds.

From a mere nobody at the beginning, he became someone who managed to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, someone who managed to kill the Ginseng King of Evil and save the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After hearing about all the things regarding Chu Feng, the crowd actually grew excited. Although those things had happened in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they were sufficient to become known as a legend.

“In other words, you two do not know exactly which Heavenly Clan that Chu Feng is from?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“We are incompetent. We were unable to obtain that information from our investigations,” Chu Huai and Chu Yue said with ashamed expressions.

Although their mission in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was to monitor the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation, they felt that their actual duty was to monitor everything that happened in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, they possessed strength much superior to the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“You must immediately return to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to investigate. You must thoroughly investigate what that Chu Feng’s origin is. It is very possible for that Chu Feng to be our Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation’s strongest rival in the future,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Yes, Milord,” everyone from the Law Enforcement Hall spoke in unison.

“Milord, there is no need for that. That Chu Feng is already dead,” Chu Huai said.

“Dead? How did he die?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

Then, Chu Huai began to narrate to Chu Xuanzhengfa what he had witnessed.

After finding out that Chu Feng had been killed after being devoured by his Demon Armament, many of the people present started to feel a bit of joy.

It was as Chu Xuanzhengfa had said. A member of the younger generation like Chu Feng could very well become the strongest rival to their Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations in the future.

If a mishap were to happen to him, it would mean that there was one less opponent for their Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. To the Chu Heavenly Clan, this was a good thing.

However, compared to the great majority of the people in the Law Enforcement Hall, Chu Xuanzhengfa had a stern expression on his face. There was actually a trace of regret in his eyes.

"You said that you had two things to report. Apart from this, what else do you have to report?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"The person that made use of the Infant Soul Sect to undo the seal of the Ginseng King of Evil was a member of our clan, Chu Bore," Chu Huai said.

"Bang~~~~"

Hearing those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa stood up abruptly. An ice-cold chilliness filled the entire palace hall.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2668 - Incomparably Astonished

"Putt~~~"

Seeing that Chu Xuanzhengfa was furious, Chu Yue and Chu Huai immediately kneeled back onto the ground and did not dare to even raise their heads.

It could be seen that they were very afraid of Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"Vice Hall Master, please quell your anger," the crowd in the Law Enforcement Hall said in unison.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa's anger did not diminish. He turned to Chu Huai and asked, "Do you possess proof of your accusation?"

"Milord, this matter is absolutely true. The two of us have personally witnessed it."

"Furthermore, it is not only the two of us that have witnessed this."

“Due to the fact that Chu Bore wanted to silence everyone by killing them, he revealed himself and acted openly.”

“Thus, many people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm also witnessed Chu Bore’s true identity.”

“They all know that the mastermind behind the calamity was him,” Chu Huai said.

“I already knew that he has done some despicable things for the sake of extending his lifespan.”

“However, never would I have imagined that he would do this sort of inhumane thing for the sake of living longer. His actions are simply a disgrace to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s reputation.”

“If the evidence is conclusive, Chu Bore will not be spared.”

Chu Xuanzhengfa’s state of mind eased slightly. However, the anger in his eyes did not decrease.

“Men! Immediately go to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and arrest Chu Bore,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Yes, Milord.” Ten individuals from the Law Enforcement Hall stood forth of their own accord. After bowing respectfully, they began to walk toward the exit of the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Chu Huai, Chu Yue, I will investigate this matter. If it is really as you two have said, not only will I punish Chu Bore for his crimes, but I will also reward the two of you,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Thank you Milord,” Chu Huai and Chu Yue both revealed joyous expressions.

The two of them believed in Chu Xuanzhengfa’s investigative abilities. Since he got involved, they believed that Chu Bore would definitely admit to his crimes.

If that wasn’t the case, the two of them would not have come to report this matter to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Thus, when Chu Xuanzhengfa had decided to personally order an investigation into the matter, they did not fear that Chu Bore would refuse to

admit to it. They were only waiting for Chu Bore to be convicted of his crimes and then obtain their rewards.

“All of you can leave now,” Chu Xuanzhengfa waved his hand.

Then, Chu Huai, Chu Yue and everyone else from the Law Enforcement Hall left.

At that moment, only Chu Xuanzhengfa and his daughter Chu Lingxi remained in the Great Law Enforcement Hall.

“Chu Feng...” Chu Xuanzhengfa had a pensive appearance on his face as he muttered that name.

“Father, it seems that you’re quite interested in that Chu Feng?” Chu Lingxi walked toward Chu Xuanzhengfa with graceful steps and hands behind her back.

“Aren’t you yourself also very interested? If you weren’t interested, you wouldn’t have returned after leaving, no?” Chu Xuanzhengfa said with a smile on his face.

“Humph, I have no interest in him at all. I was merely interested in the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.”

“If it wasn’t for you refusing to allow me to challenge that mission, how could that Chu Feng possibly be able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect?” Chu Lingxi said with a pout.

“Lingxi, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Infant Soul Sect was not as easy to handle as you imagined. Else... I would not have prevented you from taking the mission like I did,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“You do not trust me. Back then, if you had allowed me to go, I would definitely have been able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.”

“I have already made inquiries about them. The strongest among the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm are only rank two True Immortals.”

“As for me, I reached rank three True Immortal when I was thirty-nine years old. At that time, I was still within the age limit for the mission. As such, how

could I be unable to eliminate a mere Infant Soul Sect?” Chu Lingxi said in a very annoyed manner.

“Okay okay, father was wrong, okay?” Chu Xuanzhengfa said with a smile on his face.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not truly believe that he was wrong. Merely, he did not wish to continue to quarrel with Chu Lingxi.

“Humph,” Chu Lingxi raised her head. She did not appreciate her father giving in at all.

“Lingxi, do you wish to know what father is thinking about?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“What are you thinking about?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“I’m thinking that this Chu Feng might not be as simple as Chu Huai and Chu Yue have found out,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Why do you say that?” Chu Lingxi asked curiously.

“I’m thinking that Chu Feng might be Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Wasn’t it said that that trash already died? Even if he’s still alive, he is still trash. Thus, it shouldn’t be possible for this Chu Feng to be that trash, no?” Chu Lingxi said.

“There’s an exception to everything. Furthermore... you all simply do not know Chu Xuanyuan. He is an unfathomable individual,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Assuming he is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, what more could it signify?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“If he really is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, then this Chu Feng would be a truly serious matter,” Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke with deep emotions.

“Why’s that?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Merely because he is Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Father, is that Chu Xuanyuan really that amazing? You’re exaggerating things, no?” Chu Lingxi narrowed her long, shapely eyebrows in a disbelieving manner.

“Haha...” Chu Xuanzhengfa burst into faint laughter. He said, “After what happened back then, Chu Xuanyuan became a taboo in the clan. Very few people dared to mention his name, and even fewer people dared to mention things concerning him.”

“Furthermore, many people in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm were afraid of offending our Chu Heavenly Clan, and thus didn’t dare to mention Chu Xuanyuan either. This has led to you all knowing very little about Chu Xuanyuan.”

“Because of that, it is normal for you all to doubt Chu Xuanyuan’s strength.”

“However, if anyone from my generation dared to doubt Chu Xuanyuan’s strength, we would be laughed at by others.”

“Then, between him and father, who is stronger?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Haha,” Chu Xuanzhengfa laughed. This time around, he laughed very loudly. It was as if he had heard a funny joke.

Then, he turned to Chu Lingxi and asked, “Lingxi, how old are you now?”

“Forty-five. Why do you ask me that when you already know?” Chu Lingxi curled her lips.

“Lingxi, you possess excellent talent. Compared to when father was forty-five, you are stronger,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Of course,” Chu Lingxi curled her lips proudly.

“When father was forty-five, Chu Xuanyuan was only twenty-nine,” Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke meaningfully.

“In that case, it would mean that when father was forty-five, that Chu Xuanyuan was inferior to you, no?” Chu Lingxi said.

There was a sixteen year difference between Chu Xuanyuan and her father. During the early years of martial cultivation, such a difference in age was sufficient to create an enormous disparity in cultivation. This was even more

so considering her father was not some nobody. Instead, he was known to be a genius in the Chu Heavenly Clan since his youth.

Thus, Chu Lingxi felt that when Chu Xuanyuan was twenty-nine years old, he should have been weaker than her father.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa smiled and shook his head at Chu Lingxi's response.

"Lingxi, when your father was forty-five years old, your grandfather held the status that your father currently holds. He was our Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master."

"I know that. Grandfather was a Vice Hall Master for many years before finally ascending to Hall Master," Chu Lingxi said.

"Indeed, you knew that. However, there is one thing that you do not know," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"What is it?" Chu Lingxi asked curiously.

"When your father was forty-five years old, I was still training hard for the sake of my ranking among the younger generations. As for the things regarding the clan, I simply did not concern myself with them at all. Furthermore, I did not possess the strength to concern myself with the clan's matters either."

"However, at that time, Chu Xuanyuan, who was a total of sixteen years younger than your father, was this Law Enforcement Hall's Hall Master," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Ah?"

Chu Lingxi's beautiful eyes and mouth immediately opened wide upon hearing those words. Incomparable astonishment filled her beautiful young face.

She had thought the entire time that when her grandfather ascended to the Law Enforcement Hall's Hall Master, the person that held the status before her grandfather must have been one of the few Utmost Exalted Elders of their Chu Heavenly Clan.

After all, with the strength that her grandfather had back then, only those existences were capable of surpassing her grandfather.

Thus, she never expected for the person that stood above her grandfather to be a twenty-nine-year-old member of the younger generation.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2669 - Frighteningly Powerful

“Father, you’re toying with me, right?” Chu Lingxi asked.

The reason she said that was because she was unable to believe that Chu Xuanyuan’s strength was actually that powerful.

“Does your father seem like someone who would deceive you with something like that?”

“That is something known by the great majority of the people in our Chu Heavenly Clan. It is only you all, the people of the younger generation, who do not know,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“If Chu Xuanyuan was that powerful, how could he be imprisoned in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?” Chu Lingxi asked.

Chu Lingxi knew that Chu Xuanyuan was banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan over thirty years ago and imprisoned in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

Thirty years ago, her father Chu Xuanzhengfa had been exactly nine hundred years old. Even if Chu Xuanyuan was sixteen years younger than her father, he must have been over eight hundred years old when he was banished.

If Chu Xuanyuan really possessed the power to become the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Law Enforcement Hall’s Hall Master when he was only twenty-nine, what sort of strength would he possess when he reached over eight hundred?

It was very likely that not even the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and those Utmost Exalted Elders would be a match for Chu Xuanyuan, even if they were to join hands against him.

However, it was true that Chu Xuanyuan was imprisoned in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

This precisely indicated that Chu Xuanyuan's strength was inferior to the Chu Heavenly Clan's.

In short, all of this was very unreasonable.

"Lingxi, what do you think of the strength of the Dao Imperial Palace?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"The Dao Imperial Palace? They possess very few disciples. However, they only accept elite disciples. As such, their overall strength is pretty decent." n.-
Ω(.ℳ..e/.l.-ℓ-/1.)n

"Not counting our Chu Heavenly Clan, I feel that the Dao Imperial Palace could be ranked third amongst the powers in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm."

"Unfortunately, the current Palace Master of the Dao Imperial Palace, Daoist Golden Crane, is extremely unattentive of his duties."

"I do not know why, but he actually went to a desolate place like the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to enter closed-door training. He became an arm-flinging shopkeeper, and stopped managing the affairs of the Dao Imperial Palace."

"If that wasn't the case, the Dao Imperial Palace should be able to be ranked second among the various powers," Chu Lingxi said.

"I truly couldn't tell that you actually knew about the state of affairs of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm so well," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Of course," Chu Lingxi raised her head proudly.

"In that case, do you know about the Dao Imperial Palace's previous Palace Master, Daoist Golden Crane's master?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"I only care about the current state of affairs, and not things from the past. Furthermore, I have been undertaking missions all over the place, and rarely stay in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm for long. As such, how could I know about all those things?"

“Furthermore, aren’t we talking about Chu Xuanyuan? Why would you ask about all these other people?” Chu Lingxi said with her lips curled and a proud attitude.

Evidently, she had been baffled by her father’s question, and was feeling very displeased because of that.

“The Dao Imperial Palace’s previous Palace Master, Daoist Jing Tian, was deemed to be the strongest Palace Master to have ever appeared in the Dao Imperial Palace’s history.”

“You said it yourself. If you don’t count our Chu Heavenly Clan, the Dao Imperial Palace could be ranked third in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“If it were during the the reign of Daoist Jing Tian, then the Dao Imperial Palace would be ranked first in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm when disregarding our Chu Heavenly Clan. Furthermore, they would be ranked first with absolute certainty.”

“When Daoist Jing Tian left for the Starfield Master Realm, he was... even able to stand on equal footings with our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, and receive the same sort of treatment,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Equal footing? Same sort of treatment?”

“In that case, wouldn’t it mean that the Dao Imperial Palace back then had managed to pose a threat to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s position as the overlord of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm?” Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi finally revealed an astonished expression on her face.

She knew very well that the Starfield Master Realm was the true overlord of this Starfield. Every year, the overlords from the various Upper Realms would have to proceed to the Starfield Master Realm to participate in the Starfield Governmental Assembly.

Apart from the overlords of the various Upper Realms, some experts who were famous across the entire Starfield would also receive invitations to participate in the Starfield Governmental Assembly.

However, regardless of how powerful those experts might be, they would not receive the same sort of treatment as the overlords of the various Upper Realms.

If something like that were to happen, it would mean that that person or that person's power had managed to pose a threat to their Upper Realm's overlord. Furthermore, that person or that person's power had also managed to obtain the acceptance of the Starfield Master Realm.

"Indeed, they threatened our status."

"Back then, the Dao Imperial Palace was filled with ambition. They were issuing provocations at our Chu Heavenly Clan repeatedly, and seemed to be trying to set off a war to seize the position of overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"In that case, how was the matter settled?" Curiosity filled Chu Lingxi's beautiful eyes.

The reason for that was because something like this was very serious. For the sake of maintaining their status as the overlord of their Upper Realm, the overlords would generally beat down those powers that posed a threat to their status.

Under that sort of situation, a power that posed a threat to the overlord would either rise to the occasion, rebel against the overlord and fight over the position of overlord...

Or, they would have to cower to the overlord and make some sacrifices to neutralize the crisis.

Judging from the way the Dao Imperial Palace behaved back then, it was very clear what their intention was. They had planned to settle the issue of who the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's overlord would be through war.

However, no such war had occurred between the Chu Heavenly Clan and the Dao Imperial Palace.

That was why Chu Lingxi was curious as to exactly how the matter was settled.

"It was Chu Xuanyuan."

"Chu Xuanyuan entered the Dao Imperial Palace by himself. Then, with no assistance, he defeated numerous experts from the Dao Imperial Palace."

“Even Daoist Jing Tian, who was deemed to be the strongest Palace Master in the Dao Imperial Palace’s existence, was defeated by Chu Xuanyuan.”

“Not long after that happened, Daoist Jing Tian passed away. Because of that, the Dao Imperial Palace suffered a massive loss in strength. Naturally, they no longer posed a threat to our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi’s eyes were wide open. Astonishment filled her eyes. Even her fair-skinned face had turned red.

She was shaken by Chu Xuanyuan’s accomplishment. As a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan, she involuntarily felt fired up upon hearing of Chu Xuanyuan’s accomplishment.

“Father, in that case, how old was Chu Xuanyuan back then?” Chu Lingxi asked.

Chu Lingxi felt that if the Dao Imperial Palace truly managed to pose a threat to their Chu Heavenly Clan, the Dao Imperial Palace’s Palace Master should have strength equivalent to their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. Even if he was weaker, he wouldn’t be much weaker.

The fact that Chu Xuanyuan had defeated the Dao Imperial Palace’s Palace Master back then meant Chu Xuanyuan was capable of defeating their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

Or, at the very least, he would not be inferior to their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

Thus, Chu Lingxi was very curious as to how old Chu Xuanyuan was back then.

Judging by his age, she could determine exactly how talented Chu Xuanyuan was.

“Back then, Chu Xuanyuan was precisely twenty-nine years of age,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“You’re kidding!!!”

The astonishment in Chu Lingxi’s eyes instantly increased by several times. Even her ‘you’re kidding’ was said in a screaming manner.

She was truly startled.

“Do you still think that I’m lying to you?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked with a smile.

“But, if Chu Xuanyuan truly possessed strength capable of matching our clan’s Clan Chief when he was only twenty-nine years old, he should be far stronger than everyone in our Chu Heavenly Clan when he was arrested and imprisoned.”

“Thus, how could he be willingly banished by our clan, and then imprisoned in the Ancestral Lower Martial Realm?” Chu Lingxi had a puzzled expression.

She had started to somewhat believe the stories about Chu Xuanyuan. However, it was precisely because she had started to somewhat believe it that she was unable to understand.

A person who was capable of matching their clan chief at the age of twenty-nine was no longer a genius that appeared once every ten thousand years. Instead, he was most likely a genius that would not even appear once in a million years. Someone like Chu Xuanyuan was an actual demon-level genius, a person capable of changing the equilibrium of the martial cultivation world.

Someone like him would definitely have been able to advance his cultivation by leaps and bounds. When he was over eight hundred years old, what sort of strength would he possess? This was simply something unimaginable.

At the very least, Chu Lingxi felt that Chu Xuanyuan must have been extremely frightening back then.

The disparity between the strength of the Chu Heavenly Clan and Chu Xuanyuan must have been enormous.

The strength of the entire Chu Heavenly Clan was most likely inferior to Chu Xuanyuan alone.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2670 - Looking Forward To Being Alive - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2670 - Looking Forward To Being Alive

Chapter 2670 - Looking Forward To Being Alive

“After Chu Xuanyuan defeated the Dao Imperial Palace’s Palace Master, he retired from his position as the Law Enforcement Hall’s Hall Master and left the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“Once he left, he left for over eight hundred years.”

“There was no correspondence from him for over eight hundred years straight. No one knew where he went, and no one knew what he had experienced.”

“When he returned again, he brought an infant back with him. That infant was Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, Chu Hanxian’s grandson. Back then, the entire Starfield was shaken by his appearance.”

“The reason for that was because Chu Feng had inherited the strongest bloodline of our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Experts from various regions all arrived at our Chu Heavenly Clan to see exactly what sort of talent Chu Xuanyuan’s son would have.”

“Because of that, our clan soon prepared the talent test for Chu Feng.”

“That talent test could be said to be the most magnificent and unprecedented of all the talent tests conducted by our clan. It was truly bustling with noise and excitement.”

“Everyone was filled with anticipation. Merely...”

At that moment, Chu Xuanzhengfa started to sigh. He had a helpless expression on his face.

“You also know the result. It was revealed that Chu Feng did not possess any talent for martial cultivation, and was determined to be trash, unable to partake in martial cultivation.”

“Everyone was greatly disappointed by this. Some even started to insult Chu Feng.”

“As for Chu Xuanyuan, how could he allow his own son to be insulted? He was enraged by the insults, and killed all those who insulted Chu Feng.”

“However, the great majority of those people were our Chu Heavenly Clan’s distinguished guests. There were even people from the Starfield Master Realm among those that he killed. They were people that not even our Chu Heavenly Clan could afford to offend.”

“For the sake of alleviating the various powers’ anger and presenting an explanation to the Starfield Master Realm, our clan had no choice but to banish Chu Xuanyuan and Chu Feng. Furthermore, we bestowed severe punishment upon them.”

“Actually, based on the situation back then, it was already a miracle that Chu Xuanyuan was able to survive.”

“Furthermore, Chu Xuanyuan did not resist when our clan wanted to severely punish him. Just like that, he allowed himself to be captured.”

“Many people felt that Chu Xuanyuan did not dare to resist because he knew that he was no match for our Chu Heavenly Clan and the various distinguished guests.”

“However, I do not feel that to be the case. I was also present at the time. I witnessed the expression in his eyes. There was not the slightest bit of fear in his eyes,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“In that case, it would mean that he accepted the punishment willingly. But... why would he do that? Even if he did not wish to make an enemy of our clan, he could’ve escaped. Why would he decide to accept the punishment?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Who knows? He has always been an unfathomable individual since he was a child. Even I, your father, was never able to see through him,” Chu Xuanzhengfa shook his head.

At that moment, Chu Lingxi grew silent.

“Lingxi, you couldn’t have been shocked, right?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked with a smile.

He knew that his daughter was a very conceited girl. It was indeed very possible for her to be shocked after hearing about Chu Xuanyuan’s past deeds.

After all, regardless of how strong a genius might be, they would all be unworthy of being mentioned when compared against Chu Xuanyuan.

“Suddenly, I hope that Chu Xuanyuan’s son is still alive,” Chu Lingxi said.

“Why is that?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“Due to the difference in age, I am destined to be unable to compare against Chu Xuanyuan. However, if his son is still alive, I will be able to compare myself against him,” Chu Lingxi said.

“Perhaps you will have that opportunity,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Father, could it be that you feel that Chu Feng to still be alive? That he did not die after being devoured by his Demon Armament?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“I do not know whether Chu Feng is still alive or not. However, if that Chu Feng is really Chu Xuanyuan’s son, I dare to guarantee that he will most definitely be still alive,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Why is that?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Merely because he is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, Chu Hanxian’s grandson,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi went quiet for a moment. However, soon, a beautiful smile emerged on her face.

Furthermore, anticipation filled her beautiful eyes.

.....

While Chu Lingxi and Chu Xuanzhengfa were conversing with one another, Chu Huai and Chu Yue had been standing outside the Great Law Enforcement Hall.

Chu Yue had been staring at the entrance of the Great Law Enforcement Hall the entire time. She did not even blink once.

Judging from their appearance, it seemed like they were waiting for someone. As for the person that they were waiting for, it would either be Chu Xuanzhengfa or Chu Lingxi.

After all, only Chu Xuanzhengfa and Chu Lingxi remained in the palace hall.

Finally, the entrance to the palace hall opened, and Chu Lingxi walked out from it.

Chu Lingxi obviously took notice of Chu Huai and Chu Yue. However, she did not even bother to take a glance at them. Instead, she began to walk away directly.

“Lingxi,” Seeing that, Chu Yue hurriedly shouted and then rushed toward her.

Hearing Chu Yue’s shout, Chu Lingxi stopped and turned around to look toward Chu Yue.

Her gaze was truly cold and detached. She simply did not seem to be seeing someone from her same clan, a relative. Instead, she was looking at Chu Yue as if she were seeing a stranger.

“You need something?” Chu Lingxi asked in a slightly annoyed manner.

“Lingxi, I’ve heard that you’ve been to the Daytime Upper Realm this time around and completed the hunting mission in the Daytime Upper Realm.”

“You are simply too amazing. You must know that that mission had been set in place for seven hundred years now. Yet, no one has been able to accomplish it.”

“However, you’ve accomplished it. You are simply the number one genius in our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Yue declared with a joyous expression on her face. She was truly delighted. It was as if she was the one that had accomplished the mission.

However, Chu Lingxi did not appreciate Chu Yue’s praise in the slightest. Instead, she cast a disdain-filled glance at Chu Yue. Then, without saying any more, she continued to walk away.

Chu Yue felt very awkward. However, she did not give up. Instead, she took out a small jade case from her Cosmos Sack.

That jade case was of considerable value. Furthermore, it was meticulously decorated. Likely, the item contained inside would be extraordinary.

With the jade case in her hand, Chu Yue chased after Chu Lingxi, “Lingxi, this is a present that I’ve brought back from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for you. Please don’t mind it.”

“I’m sorry but I do mind, greatly,” Chu Lingxi turned around and left those words. Then, she continued walking around without a second thought.

At that moment, Chu Huai who was still standing where he was started to frown. He revealed a displeased expression.

The reason for that was because he had noticed that Chu Lingxi did not even bother to take a glance at the present Chu Yue prepared for her. Just like that, she turned her back toward Chu Yue.

How could this be minding and disliking the present? Chu Lingxi was simply feeling that Chu Yue was beneath her.

However, even though Chu Yue was left in an awkward situation, she did not reveal any clear sort of gloominess. Just like that, she put the jade case she held in her hand away.

“Chu Yue, why must you do this to yourself? Although we are from the same clan, people like Chu Lingxi are simply from a different world from us. Why must you always act like this toward them?”

“Aren’t you just asking to be to snubbed by them?” Chu Huai stepped forward and asked Chu Yue.

He was slightly angry. However, it seemed that he was not only angry toward Chu Lingxi, but he was also angry at Chu Yue.

“How could I not know that? I know that I am going to be snubbed.”

“However, even if this is the case, I must still continue to do this, for this is an opportunity for me to change my destiny,” Chu Yue said in a very determined manner.

This time around, Chu Huai did not say anything. Merely, a sort of gaze emerged in his eyes.

It was a gaze of disappointment.

.....

An enormous change occurred to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm after experiencing that catastrophe.

The catastrophe had not only inflicted disastrous losses to all the sects and schools, but it had inflicted disastrous losses to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm did not grow peaceful because of that. Instead, it became even more chaotic.

The reason for that was because the great majority of those people that had survived the catastrophe were people with great ambitions. They began to take advantage of the situation to seize territories, and were stirring up wars nonstop.

The catastrophe completely altered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As for the allied army, it was originally composed of elites from various schools and sects. However, after the catastrophe, those people managed to see a lot of things clearly. Thus, after the allied army was disbanded, many of them decided to directly join Hero City.

They felt that only the people from Hero City were their kindred spirits.

Furthermore, Hero City had once again become the most popular power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Many of the survivors all wanted to join Hero City.

The reason for that was because Hero City was the only 'pure land' that remained in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, Hero City no longer allowed anyone to join it.

If one wanted to become a member of Hero City, one's cultivation would no longer be the most crucial matter. Instead, one's character had become the

most crucial aspect. This caused the great majority of people to stay outside Hero City, unable to enter.

During this period of time, Chu Feng did not do anything. He had been accompanying his friends in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm the entire time.

He enjoyed alcohol with them and talked endlessly. In fact, they would even go sightseeing.

Day and night, they enjoyed themselves.

The reason why Chu Feng was doing this was because he had accomplished all that he had to do.

Chu Feng was planning to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Once he left, he had no idea when he would be able to return.

Thus, he wanted to properly accompany his friends who had helped and journeyed with him in the past.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2671 - Farewell

On the day, Chu Feng finally left his group of close friends. Only Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were with him.

Chu Feng was not preparing to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Rather, before leaving the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he had a place that he had to go to first.

They arrived at the Zhou Heavenly Clan, formerly one of the strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Merely, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's palaces had already been destroyed. The mountains surrounding it had been flattened and the rivers dried out.

That place had turned into ruins. The former glory was gone from that vast land. All that remained... was an utter mess.

However, nine enormous characters were left behind in the sky.

'This is the consequence of provoking Chu Feng' [1.They're 9 characters in chinese.]

Those nine enormous characters were shining brightly in the sky. They were like suns hanging in the sky, visible from over a hundred miles away.

They were like a decree from the gods signaling the end of the Zhou Heavenly Clan, announcing the result of offending Chu Feng.

"W-Wow, this is s-simply too a-aggressive, n-no? If s-someone d-dares to p-provoke you t-two in the future, I w-will do t-this too," Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh as he looked at the words in the sky.

To the people from the Zhou Heavenly Clan, those nine characters were most definitely a nightmare.

However, to Wang Qiang, those nine characters were a pleasant surprise.

At the very least, he thought very highly of the person who had left those words.

Then, Wang Qiang looked to Chu Feng. He said, "S-Say, b-brother, do you r-really not know who helped you?"

Chu Feng shook his head. He was also pondering who wrote those nine characters while looking at them.

He wanted to know exactly who it was that had helped him from the shadows. That was his purpose for visiting the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

"Chu Feng, I feel that you should try using your Heaven's Eyes to see if you can find any clues," Her Lady Queen said.

"Eggy, you think that there are clues in the words?" Chu Feng asked.

"If there are no clues within the words, there will be no clues at all. This would only serve to prove that the person that left those words and exterminated the Zhou Heavenly Clan did not wish for you to know who they were," Her Lady Queen said.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded his head in agreement. Then, his eyes moved, and his expression changed.

His gaze became extremely sharp. It was as if he could penetrate everything, as if he could see through everything.

Before his Heaven's Eyes, everything changed. Everything became clear.

"That is?"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's gaze shifted. Then, he immediately soared into the sky and arrived between the characters 'Chu' and 'Feng.'

If one were to inspect them with one's naked eye, one would not see anything from those two characters. However, when viewing them with his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng discovered that a bracelet was hidden in both the 'Chu' character and the 'Feng' character.

Chu Feng recognized those bracelets. Those were the bracelets that Su Rou and Su Mei wore.

"Bang~~~"

"Bang~~~"

Chu Feng shot forth both his fists simultaneously. He shattered both large characters. However, those two bracelets were completely intact.

Chu Feng held the two bracelets in his palms. At that moment, his heart was trembling.

He knew that it had been many days now since those bracelets were hidden within the words. However, he was still able to sense Su Mei and Su Rou's auras from those bracelets.

In fact, he was even able to distinguish the fragrances of Su Mei and Su Rou from the two bracelets.

He was absolutely certain that those two bracelets belonged to Su Mei and Su Rou.

"Lil' Rou, Lil' Mei, it was done by you?"

"No, it was the Moon Immortal. It's her? She's also in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?"

Chu Feng became extremely emotional when he thought of that. After all, apart from eliminating the Infant Soul Sect and proving himself, he had other important tasks in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

For one, he needed to find Su Rou and Su Mei, and then retrieve them from the Moon Immortal.

For the other, he needed to find Ya Fei, Murong Wan and Yan Ruyu, who had mysteriously disappeared.

He had been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for so long now. During the entire time he was there, he had been making inquiries about them. However, he had not been able to scout out any information concerning their traces.

In the beginning, Chu Feng had thought that they had not arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However... he actually managed to discover Su Rou and Su Mei's bracelets. This meant that the two of them had been there before.

"Chu Feng, look, there's marks on those bracelets," suddenly, Her Lady Queen called something to Chu Feng's attention.

Chu Feng was so immersed in his complicated emotions upon discovering Su Rou and Su Mei's bracelets that he did not carefully inspect them.

It was only after hearing what Her Lady Queen said that Chu Feng noticed that there were indeed marks on the two bracelets.

Once those two marks were placed together, they would form a symbol. It was a symbol that only world spiritists could see.

Chu Feng hurriedly held the two bracelets together. The reason for that was because he knew very well that those two marks were not present on the bracelets before.

Thus, someone must've purposely left those two marks on the bracelets.

Those marks were the clue.

"Buzz~~~"

Sure enough, at the moment when the two bracelets were placed together, a message flew out from among them.

Chu Feng extended his hand and grabbed. With that, the message entered his head.

“Chu Feng, rest assured, Su Rou and Su Mei are very safe right now. You do not have to worry about them.”

“I will be able to form my own body not long from now. At that time... I will personally bring the two of them back to you.”

This message was left behind by the Moon Immortal.

“Damn it.”

Chu Feng felt furious in his heart.

The truth had finally been revealed.

Evidently, the person to eliminate the Zhou Heavenly Clan was the Moon Immortal. As for Su Rou and Su Mei, they were still in her grasp.

Even though Chu Feng knew that the Moon Immortal was forced into occupying Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, and that the clues that she had spent great effort to leave behind also served to prove that she did not plan to cause harm to Su Rou and Su Mei, and that she was also extremely apologetic toward him, Chu Feng remained very angry.

After all, those were his beloved women. The Moon Immortal had seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies without their consent at all.

She had forcibly seized their bodies.

Chu Feng had also experienced the feeling of having his body seized by the Evil God Sword. Thus, he knew very well the feeling of helplessness, when he no longer held control over his body.

As for Su Rou and Su Mei, the two of them had had to endure that sort of feeling for so long. As such, how could Chu Feng not feel distressed? How could he not be angry?

“Chu Feng, your anger will not be able to do anything. She should’ve been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm the entire time. However, she was able to avoid you for so long. This means that she most definitely possesses some sort of concealment ability.”

“Fortunately, she does not plan to cause any harm to Su Rou and Su Mei. I believe that they should be safe.”

“You shouldn’t worry too much about it either,” Her Lady Queen advised.

Chu Feng understood all of that. However, he was still unable to contain his anger. That said... he did not wish to worry Her Lady Queen. Thus, he could only forcibly suppress the anger deep down into his heart and not directly reveal it. He planned to endure the anger alone.

Afterwards, Chu Feng returned to Hero City. After bidding farewell to everyone, he proceeded toward an ancient teleportation formation. That teleportation formation was called the Stairway to Heaven.

Merely, this Stairway to Heaven did not lead to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Rather, it led to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

“Chu Feng, don’t forget about us.”

“Chu Feng, you must definitely come back and visit us in the future.”

A large group of people were gathered underneath the Stairway to Heaven. Many people from Hero City had showed up to see Chu Feng off.

It was not only those who had friendships with Chu Feng. Even those who did not possess any friendship with Chu Feng also gathered to see him off.

If Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong were two legendary individuals of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm from two different periods, then Chu Feng would be, in their eyes, the legend of the present era.

They all felt that even after entering the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, Chu Feng would be able to attain standing there. They were all filled with anticipation toward Chu Feng’s future.

Although they were unable to personally witness what Chu Feng would experience and how he would overcome his obstacles upon reaching the

Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they were able to witness with their very eyes how Chu Feng would leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, how he would end his story in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

With that... Chu Feng would have a new beginning.

To them, being able to personally see Chu Feng off was a sort of honor.

It was something that they could brag about for the rest of their lives.

“Everyone, please rest assured. I will definitely return.”

“These are my kind regards. Everyone, please accept them.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out stones from his Cosmos Sack, n(/σ((v/.e--l/)b--l/)n

Then, he personally handed those stones to Daoist Three Swords, Grandmaster Pocket, Tang Ying, Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu... and many others.

Originally, the crowd thought that Chu Feng was planning to gift them some sort of precious gift. Thus, they had originally thought about refusing him.

However, upon discovering that they were merely ordinary stones, they all gladly accepted them.

Chu Feng handed the last stone to the guardian clan’s clan chief.

Merely, the guardian clan’s clan chief was still wearing that long gown that concealed his appearance. No one knew who he was.

“Senior, I will entrust that matter to you,” Chu Feng said through a voice transmission.

“Young Master Chu Feng, please rest assured. I will definitely carry out your request,” the guardian clan’s clan chief guaranteed.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2672 - Chu Feng’s Gifts

The request that Chu Feng made to the guardian clan's clan chief was related to Xian Miaomiao.

When Chu Feng left the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he knew that Xian Miaomiao would one day enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm too.

Firstly, she was sufficiently talented enough to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Secondly... she needed to find her mother.

Because of that, Chu Feng had given her two items. One was a key capable of making a breach in the formation barrier surrounding the Hundred Refinements Stage. As for the other, it was a Golden Flash Bird. Using that Golden Flash Bird, Xian Miaomiao could search for him upon entering the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Merely, Chu Feng had been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for a long time already. Yet, there had been no news from Xian Miaomiao at all. Chu Feng guessed that she should not have arrived at the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm yet.

However, Chu Feng had things to take care of, and could not continue to wait for Xian Miaomiao forever. That's why Chu Feng made a request of the guardian clan's clan chief.

He asked the guardian clan's clan chief to take note of Xian Miaomiao, and asked him to take care of her should he run into her.

As for the guardian clan's clan chief, he naturally accepted Chu Feng's request. After all, to him, Chu Feng was his master.

"Who is that person?"

Suddenly, questioning words sounded from the vast crowd.

As that place was the Stairway to Heaven that led to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, very few people would generally show up there.

The reason for that was because that place was the place that was closest to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Thus, it became a sacred place for the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, at that moment, an old man wearing tattered clothes and covered in dust had appeared nearby.

If those with insufficient strength going there was already something disrespectful, then to arrive dressed as that old man was, would be absolutely disrespectful.

Inevitably, this caught the attention of the Hero City crowd.

Due to curiosity, Chu Feng also cast a glance over there. However, upon seeing the old man, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. He was shocked.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that old man. He was the master of the Unknown Burial Ground.

Although he was dressed like one, he was not a beggar. Instead, he was an unfathomably powerful expert, a truly grand individual.

Upon seeing the old man, Chu Feng subconsciously walked toward him. He wanted to greet him.

Although Chu Feng had managed to clear the Unknown Burial Ground with his own ability, it remained that he obtained benefits from the old man. Thus, Chu Feng was very respectful toward the old man.

"Don't! Don't come over! Don't come over!"

Before Chu Feng could approach, that old man suddenly turned frantic. He shouted at Chu Feng to not approach him, and began to rapidly run away.

He had a very flustered appearance, and was actually unable to even stand straight. From time to time, he would tumble. However, he would immediately get back up and continue running away.

Chu Feng stood there, confused. He discovered that the situation seemed to be amiss and that the old man seemed to be affected by some sort of shock.

However, that place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Who could possibly shock him to a state like that?

Chu Feng started to ponder. However, he was unable to think of an answer.

“Brother Chu Feng, do you know that person? Could it be that he is someone who has offended you before? Should we go and capture him for you so that you can properly teach him a lesson?” Lil’ Ball said after walking over.

Back then, Lil’ Ball had disliked Chu Feng because of how well Ying Mingchao treated him. He had even deliberately tried to make things difficult for Chu Feng in front of everyone.

However, after that calamity, not only did Lil’ Ball no longer feel any antipathy toward Chu Feng, but he was instead filled with admiration for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was looking thoughtfully at the direction where that old man had left. After a short while, he turned to Lil’ Ball and the others, “You all must not go and provoke that man.”

“Why is that?”

The crowd were all bewildered by Chu Feng’s words. They all felt that tattered old man to be no different from a beggar.

However, what Chu Feng said caused the crowd to feel that that old man possessed a remarkable origin.

Naturally, that old man possessed a remarkable origin. He was the Exalted Sacred Tiger.

He was someone who could drown all these people to death with a mere spit.

He had merely become like this after being tortured by the Old Ape.

Of course, no one there knew that old man to be Exalted Sacred Tiger. Not even Chu Feng knew about his identity.

“Remember his appearance. If you all are to encounter him again, you all must not attempt to provoke him,” Chu Feng warned again. He had a very serious expression as he said those words.

He had no idea what that old man had encountered. However, he knew that old man’s strength to be extraordinary. After all, that old man was the master of the Unknown Burial Ground.

Because of that, Chu Feng did not dare to rashly approach him even though he currently suffered from a confused mental state. As such, it would be extremely unwise for Lil' Ball and the others to approach that old man.

“Definitely.”

Although Lil' Ball and the others had no idea why Chu Feng was telling them to be careful of that old man, they all nodded at Chu Feng's warning. They did not dare to disobey Chu Feng's words.

“Everyone, farewell,” Chu Feng said to the crowd.

Then, together with Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng stepped onto the Stairway to Heaven.

That's right, it was not only Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, after reconciling with one another, also planned to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, and decided to accompany Chu Feng and the others.

After all, they would be able to keep each other company by journeying together.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please wait.”

Right at that moment, an aged voice was heard. An old man was flying over from afar. And landed before the Stairway to Heaven.

That person was Grandmaster Prophet.

Originally, Chu Feng held ill feelings toward Grandmaster Prophet. After all, if it wasn't for his prophecy, the Kong Heavenly Clan would not have tried to kill him.

However, Grandmaster Prophet's prophecies actually ended up happening. For example, Grandmaster Prophet had accurately prophesied that calamity.

Furthermore, Chu Feng really became the person to save everyone from the calamity.

“Grandmaster, could it be that you've managed to make a prophecy?” Chu Feng asked.

After Chu Feng discovered that Grandmaster Prophet's prophecies were indeed trustworthy, Chu Feng entrusted Grandmaster Prophet to help him find traces of the Moon Immortal, as well as places where Ya Fei and the others might be. He wanted to know where he had to go to find them.

However, even after so many days had passed, Grandmaster Prophet was unable to make any prophecies regarding their whereabouts.

Seeing that Grandmaster Prophet was rushing over here, Chu Feng thought that Grandmaster Prophet had managed to prophesize something.

"My apologies, this old man is incompetent, and was unable to make any prophecies," Grandmaster Prophet shook his head.

"Don't mind it," Chu Feng said with a light smile. Then, he asked, "Then, Grandmaster, what might have brought you here?"

"Little friend Chu Feng, this old man owes you. Thus, I've always wanted to make it up to you."

"Although I was unable to predict the whereabouts of your friends... I managed to predict things concerning you," Grandmaster Prophet said.

"What is it?" Chu Feng asked.

"Little friend Chu Feng, after you reach the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, it is best to leave immediately, and proceed for other Upper Realms to train," Grandmaster Prophet said.

"Why?" Chu Feng asked.

"I prophesied that you will encounter countless trials and tribulations after entering the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. It is going to be extremely dangerous, and you might even suffer a mishap and die in there."

"To you, the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm is an ominous place. You absolutely cannot stay there for long," Grandmaster Prophet said.

The crowd's expressions all changed enormously upon hearing those words. Then, they looked nervously at Chu Feng. Although they did not say anything, worry filled their eyes.

After all, they all knew very well that Grandmaster Prophet's prophecies were extremely accurate.

As for his current prophecy, it stated that Chu Feng would be met with countless trials and tribulations in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

"Y-yo-you s-shut the fuck up!"

"What t-the fuck did you come here for? A-Are you here to dampen o-our mood?"

Wang Qiang was angry. He walked out from the Stairway to Heaven and then grabbed Grandmaster Prophet. He was planning to beat him up.

Wang Qiang's reaction was also understandable. After all, they were filled with expectations for the journey to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. What Grandmaster Prophet said was simply equivalent to throwing a basin of cold water over Chu Feng. This was indeed dampening the mood.

"Wang Qiang, let him go."

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng stopped Wang Qiang and rescued Grandmaster Prophet from Wang Qiang's grasp.

Compared to the furious Wang Qiang and the nervous crowd, Chu Feng remained very calm after hearing what Grandmaster Prophet said.

Chu Feng knew very well how dangerous the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm was even without others telling him about it.

Thus, Chu Feng was not surprised at all by Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy.

"Everyone, please don't worry. I have known from the very start that my journey to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm will not simply be filled with smooth sailing."

"In fact, I, Chu Feng, have never had a smooth journey ever since I stepped onto the road of martial cultivation."

"However, this is how the path of martial cultivation is. Even though I know that there are countless trials and tribulations ahead, I cannot retreat in the slightest."

“After all, the path of martial cultivation is a path going against the heavens. If I want to obtain strength, I must fight against the heavens for it.”

“Else, I will make no progress,” Chu Feng said to the crowd.

“That’s right. What Lord Chu Feng said is correct.”

At that moment, cries of applause sounded from the crowd. They were all cheering for Chu Feng.

“However, Grandmaster Prophet, I must still thank you for reminding me. That said, Grandmaster Prophet, I am actually more curious about another thing than this. Might Grandmaster be willing to present to me an answer?” Chu Feng said to Grandmaster Prophet.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please ask away. As long as it is something that I know, I will definitely tell you,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Exactly who gave you your Prophecy Crystal Ball?” Chu Feng asked.

“...” Grandmaster Prophet grew silent upon hearing those words. A difficult expression appeared on his face.

“If it is too difficult, then you don’t have to worry about it,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng had heard from Grandmaster Prophet that his Prophecy Crystal Ball was given to him by a godly individual. It was precisely that Prophecy Crystal Ball that had changed his destiny.

However, it was likely that that godly individual had told Grandmaster Prophet to not mention him or her. Thus, Grandmaster Prophet did not wish to reveal who that person was to anyone.

Right at that moment, Grandmaster Prophet’s voice transmission entered Chu Feng’s ears. “Little friend Chu Feng, I can tell you. However, you must not tell others.”

“Although I do not know that godly individual’s name, he once mentioned to me before that others addressed him as Exalted Heavenly Fate.”

“My thanks,” Chu Feng remembered the name.

Although Chu Feng had no idea who that person might be, he felt that the fact that that person possessed such a treasure and was willing to gift it to another meant that that person must be an extremely extraordinary individual.

Furthermore, his name was Exalted Heavenly Fate. Could it be that he was an Exalted-level expert?

If that was the case, it would be even more amazing.

“Everyone, farewell. The future is long, we will definitely meet again.”

Chu Feng clasped his fist at the crowd again. Then, together with Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng stepped onto the Stairway to Heaven.

After stepping onto the Stairway to Heaven, Chu Feng began to ascend the steps reaching upward. Soon, he disappeared from the crowd’s line of sight.

“Buzz~~~”

After Chu Feng and the others disappeared, the rocks that the crowd held in their hands suddenly started to emit light.

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

Immediately afterward, those rocks all shattered like watermelons.

After those rocks shattered, the crowd discovered that there was a Cosmos Sack in each rock.

The crowd held the Cosmos Sacks and started to inspect them. It was only then that they discovered that the Cosmos Sacks contained a great amount of treasures.

At that moment, those people who had received rocks from Chu Feng started to look to one another. A pleasantly surprised expression filled their faces.

Originally, they had thought those rocks to be a simple parting gift. Never did they expect Chu Feng to give them such enormous gifts.

All the people who obtained rocks from Chu Feng were people who had previously befriended him.

Some among them had helped Chu Feng in the past, and others did not. However, Chu Feng still prepared gifts for them. The gifts that Chu Feng prepared for them were all different.

Those were meticulously prepared gifts. Not only were the things in the Cosmos Sacks capable of helping them in their present, but they would also help them in the future.

Those were gifts prepared personally for each and every one of them.

Xu Yiyi and the others who had befriended Chu Feng, regardless of their gender and age, were all tightly holding onto the Cosmos Sack given to them by Chu Feng, whilst emotions filled their hearts.

As for those who did not receive gifts from Chu Feng, they all had envious expressions on their faces.

Although they did not know what was in the Cosmos Sacks, they were able to guess from the reaction of those who had received the Cosmos Sacks that they most definitely contained precious gifts.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2673 - Strange Vortexes

Everything in their surroundings was changing rapidly. Chu Feng and the others were unable to move in the slightest. It was as if their limbs were completely bound as their bodies drifted along a surging current.

However, Chu Feng was able to see the changes in the surrounding scenery. Initially, vast golden light had filled their surroundings. Soon, that golden light had turned into darkness. Although it was dark, many faintly discernible rays of light would sweep past them nonstop. Chu Feng was able to tell that there were countless such rays of light, so many that they were simply innumerable.

Chu Feng had experienced this once before.

Thus, Chu Feng knew that they had completely broken away from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and were on their way to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Not long from now, they would arrive at the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at the moment when they thought that they would be entering the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, they slowed down.

After they slowed down, their surroundings became more distinctive.

Pitch blackness covered their surroundings. However, there were specks of starlight in the distance. At that moment, Chu Feng and the others were within a vast starry sky.

Upon raising his head, Chu Feng’s pupils immediately shrunk back. Unease emerged in his eyes.

“What is that?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing Chu Feng’s question, Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi all raised their heads toward the direction that Chu Feng was looking at.

Upon seeing the situation ahead of them, their eyes also shrunk back. Then, they too revealed astonished expressions.

The reason for that was because there were four bodies of light ahead. Those bodies of light were circulating in a vortex-like manner. In that pitch-black starry sky, they looked extremely eye-catching. They were both very beautiful and somewhat strange.

“Was it those things that decreased our speed?” Zhao Hong asked. Evidently, she did not recognize those strange bodies of light that had appeared on the Stairway to Heaven either.

“Let’s all get a bit closer to one another. Let’s try our best to distance ourselves from those light vortexes,” Ying Mingchao said.

When they were rapidly traveling, their bodies had been unable to move.

However now that their speed had greatly decreased, they discovered that they were now capable of moving.

Even though they were still moving upward by the powers of the Stairway to Heaven, they were now able to move around.

After hearing Ying Mingchao's suggestion, Chu Feng and the others did as he said, and began to close their distance with one another. Soon, the five of them were leaning against one another.

"Senior, do you know of those light vortexes?" Chu Feng asked.

"I cannot be certain. However, I met with a senior from the Upper Realm in my youth."

"That senior mentioned to me that if I am to attempt to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm in the future using the Stairway to Heaven, I must be careful if I am to encounter a kind of vortex."

"That vortex would mean that an issue has occurred in the Stairway to Heaven. If one is to be drawn into the vortex, one might be sent to a different world, a different realm, should one be lucky. And, if one was unlucky, one might be sent directly to the vast Outer World."

"It will be the vast Outer World with endless starry skies. You will not enter a certain world or a certain realm. Instead, you will truly be among the stars."

"Should one enter there, one will lose one's way, and spend eternity in darkness until they die from old age."

"As for these vortexes of light, they greatly resemble the vortex that senior mentioned," Ying Mingchao said.

"F-Fucking hell, w-why would t-th-this Stairway to H-Heaven be this dangerous?" Wang Qiang had a displeased expression on his face.

"That senior told me that even though those vortexes generally possess some attractive force, their attractive force is not very strong. As long as one is to keep away from the vortex, one will be able to escape a calamity. Thus, there is no need to worry excessively."

“How did these things appear? Why would issues occur to the Stairway to Heaven? Could it be that they’re man-made?” Chu Feng asked.

“I asked that senior about this too.”

“That senior said that the Stairway to Heaven was a sort of formation. As time passed, it would be normal for it to have issues. However, this was most definitely not man-made.”

“After all, this Stairway to Heaven is from the Ancient Era. How powerful must one be in order to destroy this Stairway to Heaven?”

“Thus, he was determined that this was most definitely not caused by humans. Instead, it is an issue that occasionally appears because the Stairway to Heaven has been worn down by years of non-repair,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Let’s be careful. We are about to approach the first light vortex,” Zhao Hong warned.

Even though their speed had decreased, it was actually still very fast. Originally, the first light vortex was very far away from them. However, it was now very close to them.

When it was far away, they did not feel much of anything from it. However, as it got near them, Chu Feng and the others discovered that the light vortex was no small matter.

That light vortex was very large. Before it, Chu Feng and the others were so insignificant and small that they looked like specks of dust.

That vortex shone upon an entire region like the bright sun.

However, the light it emitted was not fiery red. Instead, it was pure white. It was extremely clean. Looking at it, one could not feel any sense of danger. Instead, one would only feel that it was something very sacred.

However, when the light started to revolve, one would feel a sense of unease. The reason for that was because no one knew exactly where that vortex led to.

“Don’t be scared. It will suffice if we keep our distance,” Ying Mingchao said.

Even though he was saying those words, his forehead was already covered in sweat.

The Stairway to Heaven was not hot. The reason why he was sweating like that was because he was nervous.

After all, they had only heard about the light vortex, and none of them actually knew how frightening it really was.

At that moment, Chu Feng and the others all grew quiet. They continued to look at the vast light vortex nervously.

Alertness and unease filled their eyes. However, apart from moving away from the incoming light vortex, there was nothing they could do.

After all, the Stairway to Heaven traveled according to a set route and they were unable to change that route.

Those light vortexes appeared at the edges of the routes.

Fortunately, they managed to avoid the first light vortex.

At that moment, they were safe.

“Huuu~~~”

Ying Mingchao heaved a long sigh of relief. Then, with a smile on his face, he said, “It seemed that senior was correct.”

Then, Chu Feng and the others also revealed relaxed smiles. $n((0--v--\epsilon-.l)-B-1-)_n$

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, a boundless attractive force suddenly emerged from the light vortex that they had just passed.

Most strangely of all, that attractive power restricted Chu Feng and only Chu Feng.

Soon, Chu Feng was sucked toward that light vortex by the attractive power.

“Chu Feng!!!”

Wang Qiang and the others immediately started to panic. They wanted to grab onto Chu Feng. However, they were unable to.

Furthermore, they were still proceeding forward by the power of the Stairway to Heaven. They were simply unable to move back to attempt to rescue Chu Feng.

They could only look on helplessly as Chu Feng was sucked toward that light vortex. In the end, Chu Feng entered that light vortex.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Chu Feng entered the light vortex, the enormous light vortex suddenly disappeared.

It disappeared so fast that it was like it had disappeared in a split second. After the light vortex disappeared, the space beneath them turned pitch-black.

It was as if that light vortex was never there to begin with, as it did not leave behind any traces of its existence.

However, when they looked up, the three light vortexes were still present above them.

Merely, the light vortex that had sucked Chu Feng into it had disappeared.

“D-D-Damn it! God damn i-it! E-exactly what t-the hell are these t-things?!”

Wang Qiang was gnashing his teeth in anger. He was so worried that his face turned green. At that moment, he realized that those light vortexes weren't normal.

The reason for that was because the attractive power from before had only restricted Chu Feng. This was simply too unreasonable. It was as if that light vortex was deliberately there to capture Chu Feng.

“Husband!”

Right at that moment, a miserable shout sounded from above.

Wang Qiang looked up and discovered that Zhao Hong was currently being sucked into one of the vortexes above.

After Zhao Hong was sucked into the light vortex, that light vortex also disappeared all of a sudden.

“F-fucking hell! E-Exactly what t-the fuck is going... g-god damn it!”

Wang Qiang started to curse out loud. However, before he could finish, he was also sucked away by a light vortex.

Like Chu Feng and Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang was also rapidly sucked into a light vortex. Then, that light vortex also disappeared.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2674 - The Mysterious Wasteland

“Paa~~~”

Ying Mingchao extended his hand and grabbed tightly onto Zi Xunyi.

Right now, there was only a single light vortex left. He felt that one among them would definitely not be able to escape from the calamity.

He did not wish for anything to happen to Zi Xunyi. Thus, he decided that if the person to be sucked into the light vortex was Zi Xunyi, he would follow Zi Xunyi into the light vortex.

However, if he were the one to be sucked into the light vortex, he would immediately let go of Zi Xunyi so that he could face this unknown danger alone.

“Xunyi, you...” Right at that moment, Ying Mingchao’s expression changed.

He discovered that Zi Xunyi had tightly grabbed onto the corner of his clothes with her other hand.

It seemed that Zi Xunyi was thinking the same thing as him.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the last light vortex arrived. It was coming straight for them.

Merely, the attractive power from the light vortex was not only restricting one of them. Instead, it was restricting both of them.

It was not that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were tightly holding onto one another. Rather, that attractive power had enveloped both of them at the same time. Just like that, the two of them were sucked into the light vortex.

After the two of them entered the light vortex, that light vortex immediately disappeared.

This place turned pitch-black once again. Only the starlight in the distance could be seen.

Although that starlight was beautiful, their lights were very weak. As such, they were unable to illuminate the vast Outer World.

Thus, darkness became the main hue of the Outer World.

However, that darkness did not represent something being dismal and gloomy. Rather, it represented the mysteriousness of the unknown, and how vast and boundless the Outer World was.

.....

“Buzz~~~~”

After Chu Feng was sucked into the light vortex, he felt that his head was completely blank.

However, he soon discovered that he had broken free from the power restricting him.

With a ‘putt,’ Chu Feng landed on the ground.

Chu Feng discovered that he had landed somewhere.

Where he landed was a desolate plain. It was completely barren, and without a single blade of grass. There was a scorching sun above it. Furthermore, that desolate plain was vast and boundless.

Chu Feng raised his head, and discovered that there was a light vortex in midair.

That light vortex was the same as the one he saw in the Stairway to Heaven. The only difference was that this light vortex was smaller.

It was much smaller. The light vortex before was like a sun capable of engulfing everything. As for the current light vortex, it could only allow several people to enter it simultaneously.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng soared into the sky. He was flying toward that light vortex.

Chu Feng felt that he had exited from that light vortex. In that case, that light vortex should be connected to the Stairway to Heaven.

Chu Feng felt that if he were to enter it now, he might be able to return to the Stairway to Heaven and meet Wang Qiang and the others again.

“Clank~~~”

“Fuck.”

A loud noise was heard. Chu Feng grabbed his head and started to grimace in pain.

That light vortex was like a steel plate. Chu Feng was simply unable to enter it at all. However, his attempt to enter it left a large bruise on his head.

One must know that Chu Feng was currently a True Immortal. He possessed an undying and indestructible body. As long as his soul remained, he would not feel pain even if his body was torn to pieces and his bones were crushed.

This was the greatness of True Immortals. They had already surpassed the limits of humanity, and would not be limited by their bodies.

However, a large bruise actually appeared on Chu Feng’s head. Furthermore, it was very painful.

This could only mean one thing.

That is, the light vortex was simply too strange. It was actually capable of injuring Chu Feng.

It was as if the indestructible bodies of True Immortal-level experts were ineffective before the light vortex.

“I refuse to believe this.”

Chu Feng suddenly took out his Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler. He aimed it at the light vortex and thrust forth.

“Clank~~~”

A loud noise was heard, and Chu Feng was actually knocked away. The Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler he held in his hand was trembling nonstop. Even Chu Feng’s hand had turned numb.

“It seems that you won’t be able to return,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Damn it! Exactly what is this? This is simply too strange!” Chu Feng knew that he would not be able to do anything to that light vortex with the power he possessed.

“You’ve most likely entered another world, another realm. You should rejoice that you haven’t been drawn into the vast Outer World, the boundless starry sky. You were already extremely lucky,” Her Lady Queen said.

“That’s true.”

Chu Feng agreed with Her Lady Queen. If he were truly drawn into the endless starry sky, that vast and boundless place, then, with the strength that he possessed, he would likely not be able to reach a single world in his entire lifetime. Just like that, he would continue to drift through the darkness till the day he died.

With no other option, Chu Feng decided to inspect his surroundings. He discovered... that if the light vortex was ignored, then there was nothing distinctive about the place.

It merely resembled an ordinary wasteland.

“What is that?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed. He discovered a book.

That book was buried in the soil. If he didn’t pay close attention to it, he would’ve simply not found it. However, Chu Feng had discovered it.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng extend his hand and grabbed. Immediately, attractive power emerged from his palm. The soil surrounding the book started to fly, and then that book that was buried among the soil flew into Chu Feng’s hand.

Chu Feng blew away the remaining soil and dust around the book and then opened it up.

“You’re kidding.”

Immediately, Chu Feng revealed a dumbstruck expression.

There was nothing on the cover of the book.

However, after opening the book and reaching the first page, there were several large characters written on it.

Immortal Taboo Martial Skill. Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique.

Immortal Taboo Martial Skill? The book that he had discovered in the soil in such a place was actually an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill?

Although Chu Feng was astonished by it, he did not believe that it was an actual Immortal Taboo Martial Skill.

That said, it remained that Chu Feng was curious. Thus, he began to flip through the pages.

Once he started reading its contents, Chu Feng grew more and more astonished.

Based on his own judgement, Chu Feng felt that the book was real. It really was an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill.

Heavens! It was an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill, something that had never appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm before. He had actually managed to randomly discover a legendary martial skill in that place.

This was simply too unimaginable.

“Exactly what sort of place is this? Could it be that this is a treasure deposit?”

Chu Feng began to survey his surroundings again. However, he discovered that it did not resemble a treasure deposit at all. It was clearly a desolate plain, a barren wasteland.

“Chu Feng, continue to look around. Perhaps you might discover more treasures,” Her Lady Queen was so excited that her eyes started to shine. She was much more excited than Chu Feng himself.

“Mn,” this time around, Chu Feng decided to activate his Heaven’s Eyes to carefully search his surroundings.

Sure enough, Chu Feng soon discovered another item. It was an earthen jar. It too was buried in the soil.

However, Chu Feng felt that the jar was most definitely a treasure. The reason for that was because he was unable to see through the jar even with his Heaven’s Eyes.

This time around, Chu Feng did not directly use his power to suck the earthen jar into his hand. Rather, he decided to walk toward the jar and carefully open up the soil surrounding it to personally pick up the jar.

The jar was completely black in color. It looked very simple and unadorned, and was also a bit shabby in appearance.

There was a lid on the jar. That lid was very tight.

“Eggy, do you think... I should open this?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course you should. There might be treasures inside. It might even be an actual Immortal Armament,” Her Lady Queen said.

“How could such a small jar contain an Immortal Armament?” Chu Feng was skeptical. The jar he held in his hand was not very large. It was about the same size as an ordinary person’s head. Such a size would not be able to hold an Immortal Armament.

“Are you stupid? What if there’s an isolated space inside the jar?” Her Lady Queen said.

“That’s true. Then let me try opening it,” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and planned to attempt to open the jar.

However, right at that moment, Her Lady Queen shouted, “Stop!”

Nervousness filled her voice. It was as if Chu Feng had made an enormous blunder.

Please support the translation through my patreon if you are able to. You will be able to access up to 20 chapters ahead.

Chapter 2675 - Simply A Treasure Trove

“Woosh~~~”

Hearing Her Lady Queen’s shout, Chu Feng immediately pulled his hand away from the lid. He asked, “Eggy, what’s wrong? Is there something wrong?”

“Of course there is. Even if you are to attempt to open it, you can’t do it so directly like that. What if it’s dangerous? What if there are traps?” Her Lady Queen grumbled.

She was complaining about how Chu Feng did not take any precautions when attempting to open the lid.

“Haha. Yes, it’s my fault. I was so anxious to see the contents of the jar that I got careless.”

Chu Feng scratched his head awkwardly. Perhaps it was because he had obtained an Immortal Taboo earlier, but Chu Feng was too overjoyed.

Thus, he had forgotten about being cautious because he wanted to see the contents of the jar too urgently.

“It is still my Eggy that is smart. I must definitely learn more from my Eggy,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile on his face.

“Of course. Wait, since when did this Queen become yours? Pah! Damned shameless bastard, you are truly disrespectful,” Her Lady Queen pouted her mouth and spoke in a slightly angered manner.

However, her angry appearance was truly adorable.

“You’ll become mine eventually anyways,” Chu Feng said.

“Who gave you your confidence?” Her Lady Queen rolled her eyes. Even in his World Spirit Space, she still had to give him a fierce and disdainful look.

“Hehe...” Chu Feng did not argue with her. Instead, he smiled. Then, he placed the jar onto the ground.

After that, Chu Feng began to move back. He distanced himself ten thousand miles from the jar before extending his arm and making a grabbing motion.

“Buzz~~~”

Martial power surged forth. In an instant, it turned into a golden-bright and dazzling arm. The arm extended out from Chu Feng’s palm and arrived before the jar, and opened the lid.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes were wide open. Anticipation filled his eyes. After all, the book he had casually picked up had been an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill.

Then, the jar that not even Chu Feng could see through most likely contained even more precious treasures.

“Puu~~~”

However, the moment the jar was opened, a dark-black gaseous flame gushed out from it and instantly covered the jar.

At the beginning, Chu Feng’s nerves tensed up. Thinking that it was dangerous, Chu Feng subconsciously moved further away.

However, the dark black gaseous flames soon dissipated into thin air, not creating any additional disturbances.

Seeing that the dark black gaseous flames had disappeared, Chu Feng cautiously approached the jar. However, upon approaching the jar, he discovered that...

There... was... nothing... inside.

The jar was actually empty.

“You’re kidding.”

Chu Feng was feeling unreconciled. He activated his Heaven's Eyes and started to carefully inspect the jar.

After obtaining no fruit from his visual inspections, he extended his hand and began to feel the jar. However... like before, he still did not discover anything.

Although the jar possessed the ability to block Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, it did not contain an isolated space inside. Instead, it was like an ordinary jar.

This caused Chu Feng to feel disappointed.

"You couldn't be this unlucky right? That jar really is empty?" Her Lady Queen also started to pout in disappointment.

"I feel like something's amiss," Chu Feng said.

"What's amiss?" Her Lady Queen asked.

Chu Feng did not answer immediately. Instead, he stared at the jar by his foot. He had one hand on his chest and his other hand on his chin. Chu Feng had entered deep contemplation.

Standing before the jar, Chu Feng was able to smell a fragrance.

That fragrance was difficult to describe. It did not smell like the fragrance of flowers, nor did it smell like the fragrance of grass. If one had to describe it, it seemed like a body's scent.

That's right, it was the sort of fragrance similar to the fragrance that a woman would emit.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was certain that the fragrance was not present before the jar was opened. It only appeared after the jar was opened.

"Could it be those black gaseous flames?"

"Could I have possibly released something?"

Upon thinking of this, Chu Feng immediately activated his Heaven's Eyes to observe his surroundings. However, in the end, he was unable to find anything.

“There’s nothing at all. You must be overthinking it. The way I see it, that jar was empty to begin with,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Perhaps that is the case,” Although Chu Feng still felt that something was amiss, he was unable to find any clues.

Feeling helpless, he picked up the jar, replaced its lid, and then took out a bag to carefully place the jar in the bag. Only then did he place the jar into his Cosmos Sack.

“You’re planning to keep it?” Her Lady Queen was surprised.

“If I don’t keep it, wouldn’t I have gone through all this trouble in vain? Let alone, this jar is a treasure itself. At the very least, others will not be able to see through it if I am to hide something inside.”

“Even if it is completely useless, it can still serve as a keepsake,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“I truly don’t know what to do with you. Since you want to keep it so much, go ahead and keep it then,” Her Lady Queen shrugged helplessly. She felt that there was simply no reason to keep something like that jar.

However, soon, Her Lady Queen revealed an excited expression. She said, “Chu Feng, go and continue to search. With how enormous this place is, you might be able to find a lot of things.”

“Hehe, Milady Queen, great minds think alike. That is exactly what I was already planning to do,” Chu Feng smiled.

Originally, Chu Feng was very resentful that he had ended up in that place. However, upon discovering that the place was actually like a treasure trove, Chu Feng became extremely excited.

One must know that both that Immortal Taboo Martial Skill and the jar were items Chu Feng found in his surroundings. As for the wasteland, it appeared to be extremely large. Thus, Chu Feng was certain that he would definitely be able to reap a harvest should he continue searching for things.

Furthermore, his harvest was most likely going to be quite large. It might be heavily laden with fruit, and even surpass Chu Feng’s imagination.

With the situation being like that, how could Chu Feng not be excited?

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt the ground beneath him start to tremble. Furthermore, rumbles began to be heard from afar.

The trembling grew more and more intense and the rumbles also grew more and more ear-piercing.

“Something is approaching,” Chu Feng said.

“Be careful. Hide yourself,” Her Lady Queen warned.

They did not even know what sort of place that wasteland was. Although it appeared to be ordinary, it was actually extremely remarkable.

A book that Chu Feng casually picked up was an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill. A jar that Chu Feng casually picked up was something that he could not see through with his Heaven’s Eyes.

With that, what sort of existence would the life forms in there be? Just thinking about it would cause one to panic.

Chu Feng did not dare to hesitate. He immediately set up a concealment formation and concealed himself.

At the same time, he activated his Heaven’s Eyes and looked to the direction of the rumbling. He wanted to know exactly what was approaching him.

Perhaps he might be able to find out what sort of place he was in.

Soon, the thick smoke in the distance grew closer and closer. Chu Feng managed to see some things with his Heaven’s Eyes.

It was a lion running violently with a herd of bison.

The lion was a young lion. The herd of bison were chasing the lion. They were extremely ferocious, and snarling at the lion repeatedly.

If Chu Feng wasn’t mistaken, then the herd of bison was trying to hunt that young lion. If that young lion was overtaken by the bison, it would most definitely end up dying.

Regardless of whether it was that young lion or that herd of bison, they appeared no different from ordinary lions and bisons.

However, their speed was extremely fast, and their auras extremely powerful.

All of them possessed cultivation. Furthermore, their cultivations were extremely powerful. They were so powerful that even Chu Feng felt speechless upon seeing them.

The herd of bison were actually all rank one True Immortals.

As for that young lion, it was a bit weaker. However, it was still a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

“Eggy, this place is truly an extraordinary place. Even the animals in this place are this powerful,” Chu Feng was feeling extremely shocked.

It would be one thing if what appeared before him were powerful monstrous beasts. However, those were clearly ordinary animals.

Chu Feng found it truly unbelievable that ordinary animals could possess such cultivation.

“Indeed, it’s extremely strange. That little lion is clearly a rank nine Martial Ancestor. Yet, it is able to run that fast. Not even that herd of True Immortal-level bison are able to catch up to it. It is truly unreasonable,” Her Lady Queen said.

“That little lion’s speed is indeed very fast, unimaginably fast.”

“However, I can tell that it is lacking in stamina, and will not be able to sustain that speed for much longer.” Chu Feng’s observation was correct. That little lion would not be able to persist for long.

Soon, the herd of bison would catch up to it. With the great disparity in strength between them, that young lion would likely be crushed to death by that herd of bison, leaving not even a corpse.

“Chu Feng, it seems that little lion is running toward you,” Her Lady Queen said.

“You’re kidding,” Chu Feng was a bit uncertain. However, that lion grew closer and closer, closer and closer. At that moment, Chu Feng opened his mouth wide in shock.

“The hell, it really is running toward me. Could it be... that it saw me?”

Chu Feng was filled with astonishment.

Chapter 2676 - Dangerous Land

That young lion was running rapidly toward Chu Feng. It was growing closer and closer to him.

Furthermore, its eyes were filled with a pleading expression. It... was crying for help toward Chu Feng.

“I’ve really been discovered?”

“That little lion is truly remarkable.”

Chu Feng felt very surprised. After all, he was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

How could his concealment formation be so easily discovered by someone?

Moreover, that little lion was currently fleeing. In that state, it would simply not have the energy to carefully inspect its surroundings.

However, that little lion discovered Chu Feng. This verified even more that the lion was extraordinary.

Most importantly, upon seeing the begging gaze from that little lion, Chu Feng was actually moved by it.

“It is truly an intelligent animal.”

Chu Feng’s heart was shaking. He had encountered many monstrous beasts with intelligence. However, never had he ever encounter a little lion acting like this. As such, he was truly astonished.

“What do you mean by truly intelligent?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“This little lion is extremely intelligent. It would seem that I cannot ignore its death,” as Chu Feng spoke, he walked out from the concealment formation.

Although Chu Feng had no idea of the origin of the little lion, he decided he must save it based only on how intelligent it was.

At the very least, Chu Feng was unable to watch it being killed by that herd of bison.

“Retreat immediately. Otherwise... do not blame me for being rude!” Chu Feng shouted at the bison herd.

His voice resonated through his surroundings.

Although Chu Feng was also a rank one True Immortal, he was holding the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler in hand. His battle power was most definitely not something that ordinary rank one True Immortals could compare to. As such, he was extremely confident.

“Moo~~~”

“Moo~~~”

“Moo~~~”

.....

Once Chu Feng spoke, the bison herd seemed to be provoked. Immediately, they started to howl.

Their voices were extremely vigorous and impactful. If ordinary people were to hear those howls, they would definitely be scared.

However, Chu Feng was unaffected by the howls.. Instead, a smile appeared on his face.

That bison herd was planning to battle Chu Feng. How could Chu Feng possibly fear them?

“Little cows, you all are truly one to refuse a toast, only to be forced to drink a forfeit. Since you are unable to tell good from bad, I will let you all know how powerful this great sir is.”

Chu Feng grew mischievous. Although that herd of bison was very powerful, Chu Feng felt that they were merely animals the entire time.

Just thinking about the fact that he would be fighting against a group of animals caused Chu Feng to feel amused.

Then, Chu Feng clenched the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler in one hand and clenched his other hand too.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, a golden-bright and dazzling long whip appeared from Chu Feng's palm.

That whip was over a hundred meters long. It was a Taboo Martial Skill.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng waved the whip. Immediately, fire filled the air. The soil began to swirl in the air as a deep crack extended from the ground.

Formless power started to sweep forth from the whip itself. The power swept past the little lion and charged toward the bison herd.

“Mooo~~~”

Receiving the impact of the power, the bison started to roll about in midair. They landed on the ground with all their limbs in the air and began to scream in pain.

It was as Chu Feng had expected. Although they possessed the cultivation of rank one True Immortals, they were no match for him.

“Paa~~~”

“Paa~~~”

“Paa~~~”

However, Chu Feng did not stop. He continued to wave the whip in his hand multiple times.

Those bison were struck into the air by the power of his lashes time and time again.

That said, Chu Feng did not try to truly cause them harm. He was merely scaring them.

Thus, although Chu Feng's whip sent them into the air repeatedly, they did not receive substantial injuries.

"Mooo~~~"

Soon, the sounds emitted by the bison herd changed completely. From the original murderous sounds, they were now emitting sounds filled with fear.

They were all frightened by Chu Feng, and no longer dared to chase after him. Instead, they turned around and began to flee.

Right at that moment, that little lion approached Chu Feng.

"Little guy, exactly what is your origin?" Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng had crouched onto the ground and opened his arms. He was planning to hug the incoming little lion.

Chu Feng liked that intelligent little lion from the bottom of his heart.

However, the little lion did not decrease its speed, nor did it leap into Chu Feng's bosom. Instead, it ran by Chu Feng.

"The hell! This guy," Chu Feng was shocked.

He originally thought that the little lion would stop and thank him, since he had saved it. After all, he could tell that it was an extremely intelligent animal.

Never did Chu Feng expect for the little lion to not even bother stopping at all. Just like that, it rapidly ran by him. In fact, it did not even bother to look back. It did not even bother to take a glance at him.

This was simply an ungrateful attitude.

"Hey, you, is this how a lion acts?! You are simply a white-eyed wolf!"

[1. White-eyed wolf means ingrate.]

“Big brother saved you, okay?! Yet, you didn’t even bother to thank me?! At the very least, you should shake my hand or something!”

Chu Feng shouted at the little lion.

Surprisingly, after Chu Feng said those words, the little lion actually stopped.

It first turned around to look at Chu Feng. Then, it laid its upper body onto the ground, raised its buttocks and stuck up its tail.

‘Is this how lions express their thanks? By wagging their tails? Why does this resemble how dogs act?’ Chu Feng started to ponder in his heart.

However, right at that moment, the little lion shook its butt. Then, with a ‘pfff’ sound, a visible yellow gaseous substance was emitted from the lion’s butt.

How was this wagging one’s tail? It was simply farting at Chu Feng.

“You damned brat, is this how you thank someone?!” Chu Feng gnashed his teeth furiously and started to curse at the little lion.

Right at that moment, the lion turned around and looked at Chu Feng.

Merely, its expression had changed.

This time around, it no longer had that pitiful look on its face. Instead, its eyes were filled with disdain.

The corners of its mouth were raised upward. That little lion was actually smiling. Furthermore, it was an extremely vile smile.

With that sort of gaze and that smile, that little lion was simply taunting Chu Feng.

“Damned brat, you’re looking for a beating!” Chu Feng was so furious that smoke started to pour from his nose.

As he spoke, he waved the whip in his hand. He wanted to capture the lion.

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing that Chu Feng was furious, the little lion turned around and continued to flee.

Due to the fact that there was quite a distance between them, even Chu Feng was unable to capture it with his powers.

“Haha, are you stunned now? That lion simply wasn’t grateful to you to begin with.”

“Haha. I can’t. This is simply too funny.”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen was extremely amused, and laughed loudly.

She did not feel any trace of sympathy for Chu Feng being ridiculed by a lion. Instead, she was openly laughing at him.

“I am definitely going to capture it and teach it a proper lesson!”

At that moment, the Divine level Lightning Mark emerged on Chu Feng’s forehead.

At the same time, Chu Feng’s aura increased from rank one True Immortal to rank two True Immortal.

In that situation, it would be a simple task for Chu Feng to chase after that little lion.

“Aouuu~~~”

However, right at that moment, a roar sounded from behind Chu Feng.

At the moment when that roar sounded, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel that the earth underneath his feet was trembling violently.

At the same time, boundless killing intent emerged from behind Chu Feng. That killing intent was simply too frightening. Even Chu Feng felt his blood run cold, and goosebumps cover his entire body.

He turned around to look at the direction the bison had escaped in. At that place, black clouds were rolling about in the sky. Beneath the black clouds, a black mist was spreading toward him.

At a glance, everything looked pitch-black. It was like the arrival of doomsday.

The change in the weather caused Chu Feng to feel extremely uneasy.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng's power, and especially his Divine level Lightning Mark, were originally capable of changing the weather too. Lightning should be filling the sky just then.

However, when Chu Feng activated his Divine level Lightning Mark, there was no change to the weather at all.

However, the weather far away had changed. Furthermore, it was clearly not changed naturally. Rather, it was a change caused by the effect of some sort of formidable power.

The reason for that was because even with his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was unable to see through the black clouds.

This meant that the strength of his opponent was much stronger than himself.

At the very least, his opponent was capable of creating an abnormal sign that affected the weather, while he could not.

"That is?"

Finally, two crimson eyes emerged from the dark black mist.

Those eyes were like two bright suns as they shone brightly with crimson light. They were extremely dazzling to look at.

Chu Feng felt that those two crimson eyes were at least as big as two little mountains.

When the eyes were already that big, how enormous must the body itself be?

"Aouuuu~~~"

At that moment, that creature let out another roar. Even though they were clearly very far away, a boundless aura managed to batter Chu Feng.

It was wind, a wind that Chu Feng could not oppose. Chu Feng was sent rolling and crawling by that wind. He only managed to stabilize himself after a very long while.

When Chu Feng stood back up, he discovered that the black clouds and black mist had grown even closer.

The two crimson eyes were also growing closer to him.

The killing intent that he felt also grew even stronger. Chu Feng was enveloped by the killing intent, and felt that his body was being deformed whilst Creaking sounds were emitted from his bones.

Most importantly, Chu Feng was currently enveloped by his opponent. He was unable to move at all. He did not even have an opportunity to use his Evil God Sword.

He could only watch as his opponent approached him. He was powerless to do anything.

‘This is truly bad.’

Chu Feng cried ‘oh no’ in his heart. It was only at this moment that he realized how dangerous that place was.

Chapter 2677 - Frightening Creature

Chu Feng shouted ‘oh no’ in his heart. He felt that he might truly end up dying there.

“Aouuu~~~”

Suddenly, that huge monster hidden beneath the black clouds and within the black mist let out another low roar.

Then, it actually stopped moving toward Chu Feng, and started to move back.

The speed at which it retreated was extremely fast. As it retreated, the black clouds and mist also followed it and left.

Soon, that region returned to how it was before.

It was a wasteland as far as the eye could see. There was nothing peculiar about it.

However, Chu Feng was already fully aware of the fact that that place was extraordinary.

At that moment, Chu Feng still felt lingering fear. He hurriedly stood up. However, he was slightly at a loss as to what to do.

After encountering the dangerous situation from earlier, Chu Feng had decided to temporarily stop exploring that place.

He turned around and discovered that a slight change had occurred to that light vortex.

Attractive force. It was attractive force.

Although the light vortex appeared to be no different on the surface, it was emitting an attractive force.

This most likely meant that he might be able to enter the light vortex.

“Woosh~~~”

Thinking of that, Chu Feng soared into the sky and flew toward the light vortex again.

However, upon reaching the light vortex, Chu Feng stopped. After learning his lesson from last time, Chu Feng did not run directly into the light vortex himself.

Instead, he carefully extended the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler to probe the light vortex.

“Buzz~~~”

This time around, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler managed to easily pierce through the light vortex.

It was as Chu Feng had anticipated; he was now able to enter the light vortex.

Merely, although he was able to enter it, Chu Feng started to hesitate. He turned around and looked to the mysterious yet frightening wasteland.

This was most definitely not an ordinary place. This was truly a treasure trove. If Chu Feng continued to stay there, he might be able to run into even greater chance encounters.

Unfortunately, accompanying them were dangers.

That place was truly too dangerous.

Although Chu Feng had no idea why that huge monster from earlier had decided to spare him, Chu Feng could not be certain that he would survive another time should he encounter a similar situation.

Merely, even though Chu Feng knew all this, he was still hesitant. He did not wish to miss such a great opportunity.

“Chu Feng, let’s go. This place is too dangerous. With your cultivation, it is not suitable for you to train here.”

At the moment when Chu Feng was hesitating, Her Lady Queen suddenly spoke.

“Eggy, you also think that I should leave?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course. A random little lion in this place was able to see through your spirit formation.”

“Likely, your other concealment abilities will also be useless.”

“As for that frightening thing from earlier, I feel that it is much more powerful than the Ginseng King of Evil.”

“Even if you are to use your Evil God Sword, you might not necessarily be able to defeat it.”

“Furthermore, we are unable to be certain as to whether or not there are existences even more powerful than that thing from earlier.”

“This is truly not a place where you should be,” Her Lady Queen advised.

“Hehe. Sure enough, the person that cares about me the most is Milady Queen,” Chu Feng said with a smile on his face.

He knew that Eggy was urging him to leave because she was worried that he would encounter dangers.

“Nonsense. It is merely that there are risks that one can take, and risks that one must not take.”

“If an ant wanted to attempt to cross a brook atop a leaf, that ant could attempt to do so.”

“However, if that ant wanted to attempt to cross a vast sea atop a leaf, that would simply be daydreaming. That ant would be courting death. There would simply be no chance of success,” Her Lady Queen grew slightly anxious.

She was actually very scared that Chu Feng would not listen to her advice and stubbornly insist on taking risks there.

After all, Chu Feng had always been someone with his own mindset. Once he decided on something, no one would be able to advise him against it. This included even Eggy.

“Don’t, don’t, don’t. Milady Queen, don’t get angry. I never said that I won’t be leaving. I’ll leave now.”

Chu Feng smiled awkwardly. Fearing that Her Lady Queen would get angry with him, he took a large step and entered the light vortex.

After Chu Feng entered the light vortex, the light vortex did not disappear. Instead, it was still present atop the wasteland.

That light vortex appeared to be completely unbecoming of that place. It was as if it was telling everyone that it did not belong there.

Fortunately, the attractive force emitted by the light vortex disappeared after Chu Feng entered it.

At the very least, the other organisms there would not be able to enter that light vortex.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Chu Feng left, two figures appeared in the sky.

Those two people were Chu Xuanyuan and Old Ape.

“In the end, he is your son. Even though you said you wouldn’t help him, you still helped him,” Old Ape had a mischievous smile on his face as he teased Chu Xuanyuan.

“I am not helping him. I am merely opening a path for him. However, it is up to him as to how much he can acquire,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That’s true. Chu Feng is very cool-headed. Even when faced with such enticement, he is actually able to know when to retreat. This is something that many people would not be able to accomplish,” Old Ape said.

“This is the benefit of him training by himself. This is also what he has gained from risking his life and limbs all these years.”

“It has allowed him to be able to make decisions beneficial to himself at any time, and not be blinded by enticements,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, even with that being the case, you, as his father, are still worried for him, no?”

“For example, if you hadn’t used your oppressive might to scare away that giant elephant, Chu Feng might’ve already encountered a mishap,” Old Ape said.

“If things went according to Feng’er’s normal growth trajectory, he would not have arrived here. He arrived here because I forced it upon him. If he is to encounter a mishap in this sort of situation, I must naturally act to save him.”

“Thus, this is unrelated to Feng’er himself. Instead, it is my issue,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“It is only today that I discovered that you’re actually a person who will shield his son to this extent,” Old Ape felt helpless.

He discovered that even though Chu Xuanyuan seemed to not care about his son, he seemed to be unable to tolerate others speaking ill of him.

However, this was normal too. After all, all the people that spoke ill of Chu Feng at the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Testing Ceremony were killed by Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan had actually been very protective of Chu Feng the entire time.

Hearing what Old Ape said, Chu Xuanyuan smiled lightly. Then, he said, “As for the future, he really will have to walk the path by himself.”

“Are we going now?” Old Ape asked.

“Mn,” Chu Xuanyuan nodded.

“But, Chu Feng released that thing earlier.”

“Are you not planning to take care of it?”

“The dangerousness of that thing is not a joke.”

“It might even be able to destroy the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm,” Old Ape said.

“It has been sealed for so long. Its power has already degenerated completely. Right now, it is very small. It will take a certain amount of time for it to mature. There is no need to fear.”

“Furthermore, that thing might not necessarily be bad for Feng’er. Perhaps it might also become a helping hand for him,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“You actually want to make that thing take part in tempering Chu Feng?”

“Heavens! Have you gone mad?”

“Let me tell you, that thing is extremely frightening. If it is to mature, Chu Feng might not necessarily be able to handle it,” Old Ape said.

“Frightening? Of course it’s frightening. If it wasn’t frightening, it wouldn’t have been sealed for so long.”

“But, do you know why I deliberately retrieved that thing from the depths of the Sacred Mountain World and placed it somewhere that Feng’er could discover?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Why?” Old Ape asked.

“It’s because I firmly believe that my Feng’er will mature to become an even more frightening existence than it,” Chu Xuanyuan said with a faint smile. Confidence filled his face.

At that moment, Old Ape said no more. Instead, he revealed a helpless expression.

Chu Xuanyuan had made his decision. There was nothing he could do to change it. Thus, trying to urge Chu Xuanyuan against it would be a wasted effort.

That said, Old Ape was still worried for Chu Feng. After all, that was the most frightening creature in the Sacred Mountain World. It had actually entered the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm at that moment.

Only heaven knew what would happen.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan took out an item from his Cosmos Sack. It was a mirror. That mirror was emitting an ancient aura.

Suddenly, a light shone from the mirror and a circular hole appeared before Chu Xuanyuan.

Inside that hole was another world. Looking at it, darkness and star specks filled the hole. It was the vast Outer World, the boundless starry sky.

Chu Xuanyuan stepped directly into it. Seeing that, Old Ape grabbed onto Chu Xuanyuan's clothes and also followed him in.

They had entered into the vast Starry Sky, where one would lose one's way and might even die of old age.

However, Chu Xuanyuan was extremely calm and composed. Just like that, he traveled through space. Furthermore, his speed was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, he had disappeared far into the starry sky.

Soon, the entrance that led to the starry sky closed itself. n((OVelbln

The wasteland returned to how it was before -- strangely peaceful.

Chapter 2678 - Law Enforcement Secret Order Title Plate

Chu Feng passed through the light vortex.

However, he did not return to the Stairway to Heaven that led from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

At that moment, Chu Feng had arrived at a vast mountain.

That mountain did not appear to be special at all. Even the trees growing on the mountain were very common. The tallest tree among them was only over a dozen meters tall.

That mountain could be said to be extremely ordinary.

It was so ordinary that it resembled the mountain in Chu Feng's youth, the mountain behind the Chu Family household in the Nine Provinces Continent.

Although all of the flowers, plants and trees on that mountain were extremely ordinary, Chu Feng was able to sense that that place was sealed by spirit power.

The oppressive sensation from the spirit formation informed Chu Feng that there were most definitely signs of martial cultivators there.

"What is going on? Could it be that I have been transferred from one world to another world?"

Chu Feng was very surprised. As a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng's perception was very strong.

Generally, if it was a space created by a world spiritist, even if it resembled an actual world, Chu Feng would be able to tell that that was the case.

However, regardless of whether it might be the wasteland earlier or the large mountain, Chu Feng was unable to find any fault in them. He felt that those two places... should most likely both be actual worlds.

"This thing changed again."

Turning around, Chu Feng's expression changed. That light vortex was still there. Merely, the light vortex once again no longer possessed its attractive force.

Chu Feng attempted to enter the light vortex, and discovered that he was once again unable to do so. He could only remain in that world.

However, Chu Feng did not leave immediately. Instead, he carefully set up a concealment formation to conceal the light vortex.

Although the light vortex was currently shut off, Chu Feng had no idea when the light vortex would open again.

For caution, Chu Feng had decided that it would be better to conceal the light vortex.

Although Chu Feng would not be able to prevent creatures from that wasteland from entering this place should the light vortex activate again, he would at least be able to prevent the people from this world from entering that wasteland.

After Chu Feng concealed the light vortex, he planned to leave that large mountain. He planned to carefully search around to see exactly what sort of place he was in.

“Chu Feng, be careful,” Her Lady Queen’s voice sounded. Deep worry filled her voice.

While that large mountain might appear to be normal, Her Lady Queen was feeling very worried after experiencing what had happened in the wasteland earlier.

“Let me survey this place first.”

That mountain was extremely vast. Even with Chu Feng’s cultivation, he was unable see through the mountain with a glance, and thus utilized his Heaven’s Eyes.

However, even when using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was still unable to see the end of the mountain. That mountain was much larger than Chu Feng had anticipated.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng leapt forth. He planned to travel in the sky.

However, Chu Feng had not even managed to leap a hundred meters into the air before he fell to the ground again.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong?” Her Lady Queen was very confused by Chu Feng’s actions. She felt that something might be amiss.

“Eggy, this place is much more remarkable than I imagined it to be,” Chu Feng started to frown.

“Exactly what has happened? Could it be that you’ve discovered something?” Her Lady Queen grew even more worried.

“This place actually has a restrictive power. I am simply unable to fly in the sky. Even my power has been weakened.”

“However, I actually did not notice this restrictive power at all earlier. It is only after using my martial power that I discovered it,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, it would mean that this place is the same as that wasteland?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“That’s hard to say. While this place is indeed strange, it is also different from that wasteland.”

“Either way, let’s explore first.”

Chu Feng had been holding onto the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler the entire time. Now, he even took out the Evil God Sword.

After experiencing the encounter in the wasteland, Chu Feng did not dare to be careless in the slightest. He did not want to lose his life due to a moment of carelessness.

However, as the mountain was enormous, and Chu Feng had lost the ability to fly, he ended up having to experience the feeling of crossing a mountain again.

That said, the mountain range was even larger than Chu Feng had expected. Thirteen days passed in the blink of an eye, yet Chu Feng was still unable to exit the mountain range.

Meanwhile, at the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Great Law Enforcement Hall.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Law Enforcement Hall’s Vice Hall Master, Chu Xuanzhengfa, was sitting in the palace hall master’s seat.

Kneeling beneath him were ten members from the Law Enforcement Hall. Those ten people were the same ten people who had requested to proceed for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to capture Chu Bore that day.

“Has Chu Bore been imprisoned?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“Milord, as per your instructions, Chu Bore has been imprisoned.”

“However, Milord, after we captured Chu Bore, we managed to learn a piece of information. That young man by the name of Chu Feng did not die,” a person who seemed to be the leader of the ten spoke.

“That Chu Feng didn’t die?” Hearing those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa’s expression immediately changed. He hurriedly asked, “Where is he now?”

“When we found out about it, he had already left with several companions and entered the Stairway to Heaven leading to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.”

“Merely...” The leader of the ten hesitated.

“Speak,” Chu Xuanzhengfa urged.

“Merely, when we returned to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, we discovered that... Chu Feng and his companions simply never arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” that person said.

“In that case, it would mean that Chu Feng and his companions proceeded for a different Upper Realm using the Stairway to Heaven?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

While something like that was very difficult for people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to accomplish, since Chu Xuanzhengfa suspected that Chu Feng was Chu Xuanyuan’s son, he felt that something like that would not trouble Chu Feng.

“Go and investigate exactly which Upper Realm he entered,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

The Stairway to Heaven from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was controlled by the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Although that Stairway to Heaven was not frequently used, the Chu Heavenly Clan was capable of monitoring everything that happened within it. As long as they wanted to investigate, they would be able to find out where Chu Feng and the others went.

“Milord, I have already investigated. Merely, that Stairway to Heaven indicated that its trajectory was clearly from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to our Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. There was no change to its path at all,” the leader of the ten said.

“Its path wasn’t changed? In that case, where did Chu Feng go?”

“Did he arrive at the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, or is he still in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“We have already inquired of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They all personally witnessed Chu Feng and the others entering the Stairway to Heaven and disappearing into it.”

“Merely, the people from our Chu Heavenly Clan that were in charge of guarding the Stairway to Heaven did not see Chu Feng and his companions appearing in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“Even though the Stairway to Heaven was clearly activated, no one appeared,” the leader of the ten said.

At that moment, Chu Xuanzhengfa started to contemplate.

This matter was simply too freakish. It was extremely unreasonable.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanzhengfa raised his arm. He tossed a title plate to the leader of the ten.

Upon catching that title plate, the ten Law Enforcement Hall members all revealed an enormous change in expression. An ecstatic expression emerged in their eyes.

That title plate was the Law Enforcement Secret Order Title Plate. With that title plate in hand, the people from the Law Enforcement Hall could disregard all constraints placed upon them by the Chu Heavenly Clan’s laws and decrees.

Having that title plate was equivalent to obtaining the highest power in the Law Enforcement Hall.

Generally, to be able to obtain such a title plate would mean that one would have to carry out an extremely important mission.

To the people of the Law Enforcement Hall, being able to receive the Law Enforcement Secret Order Title Plate was the utmost honor.

“Regardless of what it might take, the ten of you must find that Chu Feng,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Yes, Milord,” the ten people spoke in unison.

“Remember, this matter must be kept confidential. You are not allowed to let anyone know. Furthermore, if you are to find Chu Feng, do not expose your identities. Instead, monitor him secretly, and then report back to me.”

“Furthermore, if you are to find that Chu Feng, you all must guarantee that Chu Feng’s safety,” Chu Xuanzhengfa reminded the ten.

“These subordinates understand,” the ten men spoke in unison again.

Chapter 2679 - Scram Immediately

It had been fifteen days since Chu Feng had arrived in the mountains.

Even though Chu Feng’s cultivation had been restricted, his speed was still extremely fast.

This went to show that the mountain range was extremely vast, and had completely surpassed Chu Feng’s expectations.

When a mere mountain range was already so vast, it was obvious how enormous the area of that Upper Realm would be.

Likely, even if the entire Ancestral Martial Lower Realm were to be placed in that Upper Realm, it would only amount to the tip of an iceberg in that Upper Realm.

However, upon thinking about it, something like this was normal too. After all, the martial cultivation experts in the Upper Realms possessed cultivations much superior to those of the people from the Lower Realms.

If the size of the Upper Realms were akin to that of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, then the experts in the Upper Realms would have extremely

limited space to move around. This would instead cause them to feel restricted.

.....

Chu Feng had not encountered any dangers on his journey so far. One thing worthy of mentioning was that not only were the plants, flowers and trees in this mountain ordinary-looking, but even the living things were very ordinary.

There were only ordinary animals there. There were not even monstrous beasts with cultivation.

Even the natural energies were pathetically weak. In fact, it could even be said that the natural energies there were even weaker than those of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's Nine Provinces Continent.

This was extremely unconventional. For example, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's Holy Land of Martialism possessed a much greater amount of natural energies than the Nine Provinces Continent.

However, the amount of Natural Energies in the Holy Land of Martialism was simply incomparable to those of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Natural Energies could be said to be the greatest underlying element for martial cultivators. Thus, experts from the Lower Realms would be inferior to the experts from the Ordinary Realms.

By the same accord, the Ordinary Realms' experts would generally be inferior to the Upper Realms' experts.

At the beginning, Chu Feng thought that he had arrived at an Upper Realm.

However, the natural energies in that place were pitifully lacking. Because of this, doubt emerged in Chu Feng's heart.

"Could it be that I'm not in an Upper Realm, but have instead arrived at a Lower Realm?" Chu Feng wondered.

"What sort of Lower Realm could possibly contain such a vast mountain range? It couldn't possibly be that the entire Lower Realm is a mountain range, right?" Her Lady Queen said.

“It’s indeed strange. Well, regardless, as long as I can find someone and ask them about it, everything will be made clear,” Chu Feng said.

The current situation was indeed quite abnormal. That mountain range was frighteningly vast. A size like that corresponded with the size of an Upper Realm.

Yet, the natural energies there were pathetically weak. It was akin to that of a Lower Realm.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng was truly unable to be certain as to whether he was in a certain Upper Realm or a certain Lower Realm.

At that moment, Chu Feng grew even more anxious to leave the vast mountain range. He wanted to find someone from that place so that he could ask where it was.

Although Chu Feng was carefully on guard as he inspected his surroundings, he had no idea that ever since he left the wasteland, a dark black gaseous flame had been secretly tailing him.

That dark black gaseous flame was somewhat strange. While Chu Feng was unable to notice it, it didn’t seem to have intentions of harming Chu Feng either.

No one knew exactly what it was planning.

.....

Finally, Chu Feng managed to leave the vast mountain range. Furthermore, as if by coincidence, he encountered a group of people.

The group of people were on a war chariot. There were several hundred people in total. They looked very aggressive and fierce. Evidently, this was not an ordinary group of people.

That said, although their war chariot was extremely large, it was not traveling in the sky. Rather, it was traveling on the road below the mountain.

This group of people were a bunch of martial cultivators. They were all Martial Ancestors. They were mostly rank one Martial Ancestors. As for the person with the highest level of cultivation, he was only a rank five Martial Ancestor.

This sort of cultivation was not weak. However, to Chu Feng, they were quite weak.

“This level of cultivation... could it be that this is an Ordinary Realm?”

Chu Feng was surprised by their cultivations. They could not be considered to be extremely powerful, nor could they be considered to be extremely weak. Their level of cultivation was very commonly seen in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Who cares? Wouldn’t you know after asking them about it?” Her Lady Queen said.

“Mn, let’s go and ask them,” as Chu Feng agreed with Her Lady Queen, he rapidly ran down from the mountain and arrived by the road.

“This sensation?” However, right after Chu Feng walked down from the mountain and reached the main road, he stood there stunned.

After he walked down from the mountain, the power that was restricting his cultivation disappeared.

Furthermore, he was able to sense an extremely rich amount of natural energies.

The amount of natural energies was many times more intense than what he had felt in the mountain range.

If the amount of natural energies he had felt earlier was weaker than even that of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, then the amount of natural energies he could sense right now was much stronger than even that of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Chu Feng was stunned by the enormous change. Involuntarily, he turned his gaze to the vast mountains behind him.

“Who are you?!”

Right at that moment, the group of people discovered Chu Feng. Understandably, they shouted at him.

After all, it was definitely somewhat frightening for a person to appear from the mountain with a weapon in either hand.

At that moment, everyone from the group ran out of the war chariot. One by one, they held their weapons in hand and looked at Chu Feng with hostile gazes.

Subsciously, they thought that someone was trying to block their path to rob them.

The reason for that was because it was a frequent occasion for bandits to block the path and rob others.

However, Chu Feng ignored them completely. He turned around and walked toward the mountain again.

Chu Feng wanted to verify whether or not it was because of the mountain that there was such an enormous change in natural energies.

Upon setting foot onto the mountain, Chu Feng discovered that the power restricting him had appeared once again. The natural energies also became weak again.

Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated... all of this was caused by the mountain.

Not only was the vast mountain capable of restricting Chu Feng's powers, but the amount of natural energies within the mountain was also pitifully small.

"No wonder everything in this mountain was so ordinary. So it's because of the natural energies."

Chu Feng grew certain that the mountain was no simple mountain. He felt that there was most definitely something fishy regarding it. That mountain was like that wasteland. They were simply not as simple as they appeared to be.

"That guy's got issues."

At that moment, the group of people that came out from the war chariot and stood in a formation to confront Chu Feng thought that Chu Feng was scared upon seeing how many people they had, and decided to run away, when they saw him entering the mountain range again.

Thus, one by one, they returned to the war chariot. They were preparing to continue their journey.

“Please wait.”

Upon seeing that they were planning to leave, Chu Feng hurriedly ran down the mountain again. He once again blocked their path.

“Hey! What the hell is wrong with you?”

From the crowd, a robust man with a long whip in his hand shouted at Chu Feng.

Furthermore, everyone else present all looked at Chu Feng with ill-intended gazes. Evidently, they were angered by Chu Feng’s actions.

Chu Feng did not get angry because of their reactions. It was understandable for them to misunderstand him, since he had appeared here with weapons in hand.

Thus, Chu Feng smiled and asked, “My apologies. I do not have any malice. I merely wished to ask where this place is.”

“What?” Hearing those words, the crowd was confused.

“Is this guy a fool? Or is he deliberately acting like a fool? He actually asked such a retarded question.” Upon hearing Chu Feng’s question, the crowd began to look at Chu Feng with gazes filled with disdain.

That said, at the moment when the great majority of people were looking at Chu Feng with ill-intended gazes, a man stood forth from the crowd.

Furthermore, this man was walking toward Chu Feng with a good-natured smile on his face.

“You’re not from here?” With a smile on his face, he asked while walking toward Chu Feng. His attitude was truly amiable.

“Wushang?”

Upon seeing the face of the incoming individual, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly. He was extremely alarmed.

This incoming man had an appearance very similar to someone he knew. His appearance was very similar to that of Jiang Wushang.

Similar, truly similar. When Chu Feng first saw him, he had nearly mistaken him for Jiang Wushang.

He even thought that Jiang Wushang had arrived at that place.

However, Chu Feng soon discovered that while the man's appearance truly resembled Jiang Wushang, his voice was completely unlike Jiang Wushang's voice. Furthermore, his age was even older than his own, whereas Jiang Wushang was younger than him.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that the man before him was not Jiang Wushang. Rather, he was merely someone with an appearance resembling Jiang Wushang's.

"Why are you looking at me like that?"

That man seemed to have realized Chu Feng's startled expression. He stopped moving toward Chu Feng and stood where he was.

"My apologies. Your appearance truly resembles a friend of mine," Chu Feng did not try to conceal this, and spoke the truth.

"Oh. Haha, no wonder," the man chuckled. Then, he asked, "You're not from here, right? Could you have gotten lost?"

As he spoke, he began to walk toward Chu Feng again.

"Paa~~~"

However, right at that moment, a whip landed directly onto that man's body.

The lash was sent with so much power that it sent that man directly to the ground. He began to roll about and scream in pain.

As he rolled on the ground, Chu Feng noticed a bloody wound on his back.

The person who had lashed that whip to send that man to the ground was also among the group on the chariot.

It was a robust man. He possessed the cultivation of a rank two Martial Ancestor. He was the person who had shouted angrily at Chu Feng earlier.

At that moment, that robust man was looking at the man he had whipped down before Chu Feng with a cold and detached expression.

“Fuck! He’s but a mere beggar, why the hell are you wasting time on him? Get the fuck back onto the chariot.”

Upon hearing those words, the man with an appearance resembling Jiang Wushang resisted the pain with great difficulty and stood back up. He began to walk toward the chariot.

“Hey! Damned beggar, scam immediately,” the robust man pointed at Chu Feng.

His tone was extremely arrogant. He was simply not trying to talk to Chu Feng. Rather, he was ordering Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Although he was smiling, his gaze was no longer as amiable as it was before.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2680 - Sinister Death - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2680 - Sinister Death

Chapter 2680 - Sinister Death

“Fuck! This great sir is speaking to you?! Are you pretending to not hear me?!”

“Your daddy, I, am telling you to scam immediately!”

That robust man was immediately furious upon seeing that there was no reaction from Chu Feng. He pointed at Chu Feng and started to curse loudly. His attitude was extremely aggressive.

“Have your parents not taught you that you should be polite when speaking to strangers?” Chu Feng asked.

“What? What are you trying to say?”

The robust man revealed a confused expression. Evidently, he was startled by Chu Feng’s words.

“The reason for that is because you never know whether or not a stranger you don’t know might be someone that you cannot afford to offend,” Chu Feng said.

“Motherfucker! Are you threatening me?!” The robust man asked coldly.

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he said, “Do you believe that I can rip your mouth apart without even moving?”

“Motherfucker! You dare speak to me in such a manner?! What makes you think you can do that?! With those, those two crap weapons?” The robust man spoke mockingly.

The reason why he dared to act this rude toward Chu Feng was because he had never placed Chu Feng in his eyes.

He felt that Chu Feng was nothing more than a beggar. He found it truly ridiculous that a beggar dared to speak to him in such a manner.

“Hahahaha...” At that moment, many of the people present all burst into laughter.

As Chu Feng hadn’t activated either his Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler or his Evil God Sword, no one was able to sense their power regardless of how strong they might be.

Furthermore, the outward appearance of the two weapons was indeed quite lousy.

“Puchi~~~”

Suddenly, blood splattered from that robust man’s mouth.

“Ahhhhh~~~”

The next moment, he let out a miserable scream.

At the beginning, the crowd was confused. However, when that robust man turned around, everyone was so shocked that their expressions all changed. Some even started to shiver in fear.

Blood covered that robust man’s face. His chin had been completely torn to pieces. It was a very frightening sight.

“What’s going on? Did he do that?”

At that moment, those people started to panic. It was only at that moment that they realized that the young man standing before them was not as simple as they imagined him to be.

Everyone removed their mocking smiles and looked to Chu Feng with fear in their eyes. It was as if they were seeing a demon.

Although they were all holding weapons in their hands and were still in a battle formation, not a single person dared to attack Chu Feng. On the contrary... they were all shivering and moving backwards.

Right at that moment, from the group of people, the person with the cultivation of rank five Martial Ancestor stood forth.

That person was an old man. Judging from his appearance, he should be the leader of the group. His cultivation was also the strongest among the group of people.

“I’m from the Fallen Phoenix City’s Zhao Mansion. I am called Zhao Pingyang,” that old man said to Chu Feng.

The old man spoke with a very unyielding tone. His behavior simply did not resemble the behavior of someone trying to reconcile with someone. The only thing Chu Feng felt from his tone was a deep amount of threat.

Chu Feng had always been a person amenable to reason, but not coercion. Originally, he did not plan to make things difficult for those people. Even though those people had spoken rudely toward him from the very beginning, he did not do anything to them.

However, they were actually unable to differentiate good from bad, and dared to climb all over him, publicly insulting him. Naturally, Chu Feng would not continue to tolerate their behavior.

“So what if you’re from the Fallen Phoenix City’s Zhao Mansion?” Chu Feng spoke disapprovingly.

“If you want to rob us, then you are most sorely mistaken. Our Zhao Mansion is not one that you can afford to provoke,” That Zhao Pingyang said.

“Oh? In that case, I’ve already injured your man. What do you plan to do about that?” Chu Feng asked.

“Kneel and apologize. After that, tear up your own mouth and get the hell out of here. Do not make me do it for you,” that Zhao Pingyang waved his hand.

His appearance was truly arrogant. It was as if, if he wanted to, he could make Chu Feng suffer miserably at any time.

“You truly do not know the immensity of the heaven and earth,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?!” That Zhao Pingyang asked furiously.

Chu Feng did not answer him. Instead, he smiled coldly. The next moment, a surging oppressive might swept forth from his body toward that group of people.

The next moment, apart from the person with an appearance resembling Jiang Wushang that was whipped earlier, everyone else was forced onto the ground.

Chu Feng walked over to that old man and said, “Do you understand what I said now?”

“Milord, please spare me, please spare me. I have eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai. Please, Milord, please spare my life.”

“You can go ahead and take everything from this chariot. Milord, please, I beg of you, spare this lowly one.”

At that moment, that old man no longer possessed his earlier threatening attitude. Instead, he began to beg for forgiveness nonstop.

Chu Feng actually noticed that his aged body was shivering nonstop.

He was also a coward who was scared of death.

“Even if the things in your chariot are to be scattered on the road, I would not even bother to take a glance at them,” Chu Feng mocked.

There were indeed quite a lot of treasures on the chariot. But, it was as Chu Feng said, those treasures on the chariot simply could not catch his eyes.

Then, Chu Feng arrived before the man with an appearance similar to that of Jiang Wushang.

Although Chu Feng's oppressive might did not affect him, he still shivered upon seeing Chu Feng approach him. Involuntarily, he began to back away from Chu Feng.

This was understandable too. After all, Chu Feng had revealed such overwhelming power. It would instead be strange if he wasn't afraid.

"Don't be scared. I have no malice against you," after saying those words, Chu Feng clasped his fist and said, "I am Chu Feng. May I know how to address you?"

"I-I-I am Song Xi," that man that greatly resembled Jiang Wushang was so scared that he started stuttering.

"Song Xi, I have something that I need your help with. Might you be willing to help me?"

"Oh. Of course, I wouldn't be asking for this help for free. As long as you're willing to help me, I will reward you for your help," Chu Feng said.

"I-I'm w-willing. I'm wi-willing to help," Song Xi said as he wiped away the cold sweat on his forehead.

Chu Feng was able to tell that this Song Xi was not willing to help. The reason for that was because he was very scared of him.

However, Song Xi did not dare to refuse Chu Feng. Likely, he feared that he would have his mouth torn up like that robust man should he refuse Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, no one else present caught Chu Feng's eyes. It was only this Song Xi that Chu Feng felt a good impression of.

On the one hand, his appearance truly resembled that of Jiang Wushang. This gave Chu Feng a very familiar feeling.

On the other hand, Song Xi was the only good-natured individual among the group of people.

Only someone like this would be trustworthy.

Thus, Chu Feng grabbed Song Xi's shoulder and smiled, "Then let's go."

After saying those words, Chu Feng soared into the sky and left with Song Xi.

After Chu Feng left, the oppressive might that enveloped the area also disappeared.

The crowd that were forced onto the ground hurriedly stood back up.

"Milord, are you alright?"

With eager expressions on their faces, the crowd rushed toward that old man.

"Scram, scram, scram!" Zhao Pingyang shouted furiously at the crowd.

"Milord, who is that brat? He actually dared to disregard our Zhao Mansion?"
An attendant asked the old man.

"Paaa~~~"

Right after that attendant said those words, that old man called Zhao Pingyang shot a slap at his face. The slap was so powerful that it deformed that attendant's entire face. His face became drenched with blood, and he started to wail in pain.

"I'm telling you all this, in this region, no one dares to disregard our Zhao Mansion!" Zhao Pingyang spoke loudly.

The attendants were all trembling with fear. Hurriedly, they echoed, "Yes, of course!"

"Lil' Six, have you remembered the appearance of that brat?" Zhao Pingyang asked a youngster.

"Milord, I have," that youngster by the name of Lil' Six replied.

"Immediately return to the mansion and report this matter to the Family Head. Draw a portrait of that brat and put out an order for his arrest immediately," Zhao Pingyang said.

"Yes, Milord," that Lil' Six replied. Then, he immediately turned around and began to rush toward the direction where they came from. In the blink of an eye, he had disappeared down the main road.

“Motherfucker! He dared to cause a disturbance against the ruler of this place! I will definitely make him pay the price!” Zhao Pingyang spoke as he gnashed his teeth angrily.

“Ssssss~~~~”

Right at that moment, a strange sound emerged from the mountain.

“Milord, it seems that there’s something in the mountain,” Someone said.

The crowd present all heard that voice. Involuntarily, they turned their gazes toward the direction of the voice.

“Woosh~~~~”

Right at that moment, a dark black gaseous flame shot out from the mountain and rapidly flew toward the crowd.

The speed of that dark black gaseous flame was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, it knocked down everyone present.

“Ahhh~~~~”

The next moment, miserable screams rose and fell in succession.

Soon, all the screams stopped. After the screams stopped, the dark black gaseous flame also disappeared into thin air.

As for the people from the Zhao Mansion, their clothes were all still completely intact. However, they were all lying on the ground with appearances similar to dried corpses. There was no trace of life to be found anywhere.

They had all died. Their eyes had rolled into the tops of their heads, and their mouths were wide open. It was as if all their flesh and blood was gone from their bodies. All of them were thin like skin and bones.

Their skin had turned greenish-black. Vein-like patterns had appeared on their greenish-black skin. The vein-like patterns were dark black in color.

From a glance, they looked even more frightening than ghosts. It was truly sinister.

That said, they were nothing more than corpses at that moment.

Chapter 2681 - Great Chilocosm Upper Realm

The speed at which Chu Feng was traveling when he left was very fast. Thus, he had no idea of the massacre that had happened after he left.

That said, although Chu Feng had left, he didn't really travel far. He merely wanted to distance himself from that group of people and find a quiet place.

At that moment, Chu Feng landed beside a lake.

"M-M-Milord, w-what do you w-want this lowly one to h-help you with? W-What could I p-possibly h-help you w-with, given h-how weak I am?"

Song Xi was still stuttering. Even his body was trembling nonstop. It could be seen that he was truly afraid of Chu Feng.

"Don't be scared. I will not harm you. I merely wish to ask some things of you," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"What is it?" Song Xi felt a lot more at ease upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

"Where is this?" Chu Feng asked.

"This is the Freshwater Lake," Songxi said as he looked to the lake before them.

Chu Feng smiled, "My mistake. My question was not clear. I meant to ask: what is the name of this world?"

"This world... is naturally the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm," Song Xi said.

"Great Chilocosm Upper Realm? You said that this is the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm?" Chu Feng revealed a shocked expression upon hearing those words.

"This place is naturally the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Milord, could it be... that you're not from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm?" Song Xi was also very surprised.

Chu Feng was surprised at the fact that he had actually managed to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, of all places.

As for Song Xi, he was surprised that there was actually someone that didn't know this place was the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

"I am indeed not from here. Have you heard of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? I have heard of it before. It is one of the many Ordinary Realms under the administration of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm."

"Milord... you couldn't possibly have come from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, right?" Thinking of this, Song Xi opened his mouth wide in shock.

In the eyes of the people in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, the people from the Ordinary Realms were all weaklings. They were existences akin to trash.

Even someone like Song Xi, a person standing at the bottom of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm's hierarchy, looked down on the people from the Ordinary Realms.

This was a sort of regional discrimination. It was akin to how the great majority of people looked down on beggars, and felt themselves to be superior to them because they were better off.

This was human nature.

However, if Chu Feng really was from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Chu Feng would be more than sufficient to topple the understanding Song Xi had toward the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, Chu Feng's strength was much superior to Song Xi's.

"That's right," Chu Feng nodded.

"Heavens! There are actually experts as powerful as you in the Ordinary Realms?" Song Xi gasped with admiration.

However, Song Xi's expression soon changed enormously.

He suddenly recalled that someone had once mentioned to him that the people from the Upper Realms were not allowed to enter the Ordinary

Realms, whereas the people from the Ordinary Realms would need certain qualification to enter the Upper Realms.

As for this qualification, it was that they must have a True Immortal level of cultivation.

“Milord, could it be that y-y-you’re a True Immortal-level expert?” Upon recalling that, Song Xi’s eyes started to shine.

Although there were countless True Immortal-level experts in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, it remained that people like Song Xi had never spoken with a True Immortal-level expert before.

In other words, no matter how weak a True Immortal-level expert might be, they would definitely not look people like Song Xi in the eyes.

Thus, to people like Song Xi, True Immortal-level experts were existences high above him. They were divine beings that he could not even touch.

“I have only just become a True Immortal. I am still only a rank one True Immortal,” Chu Feng said with a smile on his face.

“That’s still very amazing. Judging from your appearance, you are much younger than me,” Song Xi was extremely excited. After verifying that Chu Feng was a True Immortal, Song Xi instead became less scared of Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because he had never encountered such an amiable True Immortal like Chu Feng before. This subconsciously made him think that Chu Feng was definitely not a bad person.

“Song Xi, do you know where the Stairway to Heaven from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm is located?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do. I know that,” Song Xi nodded his head repeatedly.

“Are you able to bring me there? I can compensate you for it,” Chu Feng asked.

Since Chu Feng had arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, what he wanted to do the most would naturally be to find Wang Qiang and the others.

Thus, he must proceed there as quickly as possible. He must find Wang Qiang and the others as soon as possible.

However, Chu Feng had no idea that after he was sucked into the light vortex, Wang Qiang and the others also suffered the same fate.

Not a single one of them had successfully arrived at the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm through normal means. The whereabouts of Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were all unknown.

“Of course. However, you don’t have to compensate me at all,” Song Xi felt extremely honored when saying those words.

He felt that it was truly an honor for someone like him to be of use to a True Immortal-level expert.

Then, Chu Feng had Song Xi lead the way for him, and began to proceed directly toward the Stairway to Heaven from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

It was not a close journey at all. Fortunately, there was a teleportation formation capable of directly leading them there in the vicinity.

Furthermore, the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm’s teleportation formation was much stronger than the Hundred Refinement Ordinary Realm’s teleportation formations.

Thus, the speed at which Chu Feng was teleported was extremely fast. This greatly decreased the amount of time it required for Chu Feng and Song Xi to reach their destination.

On their way there, Chu Feng chatted with Song Xi the entire time. Through their conversation, Chu Feng gained a rough understanding of the general state of affairs in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

As expected, the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm was an extremely vast world. Its size was over a thousand times that of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Had it not been for the fact that teleportation formations were scattered all over the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, it would be very difficult for even the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm’s experts to travel about.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that half of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm was under the control of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

To the people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, the territory of the Chu Heavenly Clan could be said to be restricted areas. Practically no one dared to set foot onto them.

In other words, apart from the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, the other people from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm were only able to move about in half of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

This also served to display how oppressive the Chu Heavenly Clan was, as well as how high of a status they held.

From the things Song Xi told him, Chu Feng was able to sense that the reverence Song Xi held toward the Chu Heavenly Clan was simply akin to that of humans toward gods. It was the sort of reverence from the bottom of one's heart. He was most definitely not pretending.

"It seems that your clan has managed this land very well. Practically no one dares to disobey them. They are truly the overlord of this realm," Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile on her face.

"That is not my clan," Chu Feng corrected Eggy. Immediately afterward, he added, "However, I must admit that the Chu Heavenly Clan's means of doing things is quite superb."

"But, for them to possess this sort of means is not good for you," Her Lady Queen said.

"Even if they possess this much power and the means of control, I will, one day, still have their clan chief stand before father and I and apologize to us."

"It is not only their clan chief. I will have all those that struck us father and son when we were down back then, apologize to us in unison," Chu Feng was extremely serious when saying these words.

Even though Chu Feng was merely an infant when all of that had happened, and he did not remember anything at all, he was able to picture the situation back then from the narration his father gave. Furthermore, he was able to sense the humiliation he and his father had received back then.

He must remove that humiliation.

“Hahaha, if the people from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm are to hear what you said, they will definitely think you’re crazy.”

“However, it is precisely your confidence that this Queen is fond of,” Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile.

“Song Xi, apart from the Chu Heavenly Clan, what other major powers are there in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm?” Chu Feng turned to ask Song Xi.

“There are a lot of powers in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. However, if we disregard the Chu Heavenly Clan, then there are only four powers that could be said to be truly powerful,” Song Xi said. *nove-1b*.In

“Which four?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Starfall Holy Land.”

“Paradise Valley.”

“The Dao Imperial Palace.”

“And Ghost Sect Hall.”

Chapter 2682 - That Is a Sacred Mountain

“Ghost Sect Hall?”

Chu Feng’s heart moved upon hearing that name.

Chu Feng had heard of the Ghost Sect Hall back when he was in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Chu Bore had personally told him that he had found that mysterious individual at the Ghost Sect Hall.

It was from that mysterious individual that Chu Bore purchased the scroll containing information about how to find and unseal the Ginseng King of Evil.

Although a motion had emerged in Chu Feng’s heart, he did not reveal it.

Instead, with a very composed expression, he asked, “Song Xi, what are the characteristics of those four powers that you spoke of? How are they ranked among each other in terms of power?”

“The strongest of the four powers is most definitely the Starfall Holy Land.”

“The Starfall Holy Land has been in existence for a very long time. According to rumors, the Starfall Holy Land was constructed from a meteor that fell from the sky.”

“That enormous meteor contained extraordinary power. It possessed enormous assistance in the path of martial cultivation. That is also why the Starfall Holy Land became so powerful.”

“Of course, regardless of how powerful the Starfall Holy Land might be, they will not be able to match up to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

Song Xi added that part deliberately. It could be seen that he was truly in reverence toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“As for the Dao Imperial Palace and Paradise Valley, it is unknown which among them is stronger. I think they should be of similar strength.”

“As for the Ghost Sect Hall, they are relatively more hidden than others. All I know is that they possess vast influence and are extremely strong.”

“However, I think that when compared to the Dao Imperial Palace and Paradise Valley, they are relatively weaker. At the very least, they have fewer members compared to the Dao Imperial Palace and Paradise Valley,” Song Xi said.

“You said that the Ghost Sect Hall is rather hidden. Is there a reason for that?” Chu Feng asked.

“The other powers will all widely accept new disciples every year. Although their requirements for new disciples are extremely strict, and they will only accept those with superb talent, they, at least, will openly accept disciples.”

“However, never has anyone seen the Ghost Hall Sect accepting new disciples. They have always selected new disciples by themselves.”

“Furthermore, the Ghost Hall Sect does not possess any subsidiary powers. That said, they possess an extremely vast amount of wealth.”

“There have even been rumors saying that the Ghost Hall Sect’s wealth was, although weaker than that of the Starfall Holy Land, superior to that of Paradise Valley and the Dao Imperial Palace,” Song Xi said.

“Since they do not possess any subsidiary powers, they do not have anyone to pay tribute to them. As such, how could they obtain such a vast amount of wealth?” Chu Feng asked.

Generally speaking, major powers would all have subsidiary powers under them.

In exchange for the protection from the major powers, the subsidiary powers would pay tribute to the major powers that they belonged to with treasures every year. This could be said to be a form of transaction.

Since the Ghost Hall Sect did not have subsidiary powers, this meant they they should not receive any tribute. In that case, their wealth should be relatively weak.

“According to rumors, they’re doing some sort of business. As for exactly what sort of business they conduct, mere nobodies like myself have no clue.”

“After all, all those people capable of having dealings with the Ghost Sect Hall are grand characters.”

“That is why, when compared to the other major powers, the Ghost Sect Hall is relatively hidden and secretive,” Song Xi said.

“So that’s the case.”

Chu Feng had a rough idea of the Ghost Sect Hall now. He felt that the business that they conducted was most definitely not ordinary business.

That said, merely by the fact that the Ghost Sect Hall was able to provide the scroll containing information regarding the Ginseng King of Evil to Chu Bore, Chu Feng knew that the Ghost Sect Hall most definitely possessed extraordinary strength.

At the very least... of the four powers that Song Xi had mentioned, Chu Feng was most interested in the Ghost Sect Hall right now.

.....

Afterwards, Chu Feng arrived at the Stairway to Heaven connecting to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

This Stairway to Heaven was controlled by the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, Chu Feng had to go through twists and turns in order to obtain information.

Fortunately, Chu Feng managed to obtain the information that he wanted. Merely, what he discovered was not optimistic at all.

“How could this be? None of them managed to pass through the Stairway to Heaven to reach this place.”

“Even the Chu Heavenly Clan has no idea what happened?”

“This is most definitely not simply a malfunctioning of the Stairway to Heaven. Instead, it seems more like something man-made.”

At that moment, Chu Feng had discovered that Wang Qiang and the others had all not arrived at the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

This made Chu Feng wonder about the situation inside the Stairway to Heaven back then.

All of this was simply too strange. After entering the light vortex, Chu Feng appeared in that wasteland.

It was as if someone was deliberately sending him to that place.

Unable to understand what had happened, Chu Feng found Song Xi again.

“Song Xi, do you know of the origin of the mountain that we met at?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’re talking about the Sacred Mountain? The Sacred Mountain possesses an extraordinary origin,” Song Xi said.

Upon hearing the name 'Sacred Mountain' and seeing Song Xi's reaction, Chu Feng felt with greater certainty that his guess was correct. Everything was most definitely not a coincidence.

"Can you tell me about the origin of that Sacred Mountain?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course."

Song Xi would naturally not try to conceal the origin of the Sacred Mountain from Chu Feng. He began to narrate all that he knew about the Sacred Mountain to Chu Feng.

This Sacred Mountain truly possessed a grand origin. Furthermore, it had appeared a very long time ago.

The Chu Heavenly Clan had ruled over the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm for some time now.

However, that Sacred Mountain was already present in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm before the Chu Heavenly Clan had even arrived in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Before the Sacred Mountain appeared, there was a vast body of water at the location of the Sacred Mountain.

Suddenly, waves began to surge about and batter in all directions.

Furthermore, these were no ordinary waves. They were capable of cutting through mountains and crushing apart rocks. Everything before their path was destroyed. They possessed extremely powerful destructive capabilities.

Even martial cultivators were unable to stop these waves.

All the land that was engulfed by the waves ended up suffering a massive catastrophe. Countless martial cultivators also died to the waves.

This matter caught the attention of the various experts in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm at that time.

The experts of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm decided that they would join hands to stop the calamity.

However, these waves were simply boundless as they surged high into the sky. Not a single person was able to stop those surging waves.

This was the first time that the people from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm realized how extraordinary these waves were.

Fortunately, the waves did not continue to spread endlessly. After they spread a certain distance, they stopped moving forward.

After many months passed, the waves started to gradually vanish. However, the waves that vanished did not return to the vast sea. Instead, they flew to other locations.

The reason for that was because an enormous mountain had appeared where the vast sea was originally located.

That mountain was so vast that it practically covered the entire area where the sea used to be.

Furthermore, that mountain was enveloped by rays of light. As for that light, they were natural energies visible to the naked eye.

Not only was that vast mountain exceptionally rich in natural energies, but one would also become a lot more quick-witted when training inside. In turn, one would have a high chance of being able to increase one's cultivation.

The miraculous natural energies immediately caused this mysterious mountain that suddenly appeared to become a sacred ground for martial cultivation.

As such, that vast mountain was praised as the Sacred Mountain.

Unfortunately, the natural energies contained in the Sacred Mountain were not endless and inexhaustible.

As more and more cultivators entered the Sacred Mountain to train, the natural energies contained in the Sacred Mountain began to decrease. It was no longer as rich and intense as it originally was.

The various powers in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm at the time all discovered what was happening. In order to be able to increase the amount of

time they could train in the Sacred Mountain, they began to drive out weak martial cultivators and split up the Sacred Mountain's lands into territories.

In the end, the Sacred Mountain was split up and controlled by the several formidable powers that existed in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm at that time.

As for the others, they were all driven out of the Sacred Mountain.

That said, the amount of natural energies in the Sacred Mountain still continued to decrease as people continued to train in the Sacred Mountain.

As time passed, the amount of natural energies contained in the Sacred Mountain grew weaker and weaker.

Finally, the amount of natural energies in the Sacred Mountain became identical to that of the outside world. It was no longer as rich and intense as it was in the past.

However, as the Sacred Mountain had brought up countless experts, even though the amount of natural energies in the Sacred Mountain had reached the same level as other places in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, people still subconsciously preferred training in the Sacred Mountain.

In the end, a very strange matter occurred. The natural energies in the Sacred Mountain grew weaker and weaker. It actually grew much inferior to all the other places in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

In the end, the amount of natural energies in the Sacred Mountain grew inferior to even Ordinary Realms.

Then, the strangest matter occurred.

A layer of spirit power covered the Sacred Mountain. Not only did that spirit power restrict one's cultivation, but it also made it so that one could not fly.

With the situation being like that, those powers that had occupied the Sacred Mountain also began to withdraw from it.

The Sacred Mountain once again returned to being a place where one could come and go as one wished.

Although the Sacred Mountain was simply incomparable to before, and could even be said to be lousy, there were still people yearning to enter it.

After the Sacred Mountain was open to the public again, countless experts arrived seeking its fame. Those experts began to pour into the Sacred Mountain.

However, right at that moment, a frightening thing occurred. Martial cultivators began to die in the Sacred Mountain. Furthermore, the manner of their deaths was very scary.

Those that died appeared as if their flesh and blood had been sucked dry. There was no sign of life to them at all. Even their source energies were sucked dry.

Originally, people thought that it was caused by humans. As such, they were determined to catch the culprit.

However, gradually, they discovered that such was not the case.

Even some of the powerful and famous experts suffered that fate.

With the situation being like that, the crowd grew alarmed, and began to withdraw from the Sacred Mountain.

After that, there were those that refused to believe in the dangers of the Sacred Mountain that ended up setting foot there. Although not everyone would definitely die upon setting foot there, there would always be those that ended up encountering the misfortune of death.

Furthermore, as the Sacred Mountain was long since completely different from before, and training in the Sacred Mountain would greatly slow down one's cultivation growth instead of increasing it, the Sacred Mountain became a forbidden area as time passed.

Very few people were willing to enter the Sacred Mountain now.

As time continued to flow, the glory days of the Sacred Mountain were forgotten. Right now... no one thinks highly of the Sacred Mountain.

"Song Xi, is what you said legends, or are they actually real?" Chu Feng asked.

“Although those were things that happened very long ago, the things regarding the Sacred Mountain are not legends. Rather, they actually happened.”

“Lord Chu Feng, you must definitely trust me in this.”

“Although I, Song Xi, possess a weak level of cultivation, I am fond of places like that. Thus, I have made inquiries about the Sacred Mountain before, There is definitely no mistake. What I’ve said is most definitely reliable,” Song Xi patted his chest as he guaranteed.

Chapter 2683 - Being Tailed

“Haha, I believe you,” Chu Feng laughed. Then, he added, “Song Xi, I have already told you many times now. If you consider me your friend, then just address me as Chu Feng. There is no need to address me as lord. That would be regarding me as an outsider. I am very unused to that.”

“But, wouldn’t it be disrespectful for me to address an expert like you by name?”

Song Xi was hesitant. However, it could be seen from the expression in his eyes that he seemed to be looking forward to it.

He was looking forward to actually being able to address Chu Feng by name.

He felt that if he could address Chu Feng by name, it would be a very honorable thing to do, given how weak his cultivation was.

“The fellowship between brothers is not something measured with the strength of one’s cultivation.”

“Instead, it is measured by how close we are to one another.”

“With how courteous you’re acting, you are simply not considering me, Chu Feng, as your friend,” Chu Feng said.

“No, no. That is not my intention at all,” Song Xi hurriedly waved his hand.

“Then address me as Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Since that’s the case, I shall be rude. Chu Feng. Haha,” Song Xi laughed foolishly. It was a very brilliant laughter.

It could be seen that Song Xi was very happy. Although he was older than Chu Feng, he was much more naive than Chu Feng. His character was simply like that of a child.

“Song Xi, take this. Do not return to work for that Zhao Mansion again,” Chu Feng handed Song Xi a Cosmos Sack.

Through his conversation with Song Xi over the past few days, Chu Feng had discovered that Song Xi was merely a day laborer at the Zhao Mansion. His status in the Zhao Mansion was very low, and was generally beaten, scolded, bullied and humiliated by others.

If it wasn't for the fact that his mother was seriously ill and needed precious medicines to treat her illness, Song Xi would not have continued to stay in the Zhao Mansion.

As for the things within the Cosmos Sack, they were enough to allow Song Xi to not have to worry about basic necessities for the rest of his life. At the very least, he would not have to worry about money issues for a while.

“This... this is too precious. I... I...”

Song Xi received the Cosmos Sack from Chu Feng. Upon inspecting the contents of the Cosmos Sack, his expression changed immediately.

He was extremely excited. In fact, he even felt disbelief. He had never expected that Chu Feng would be willing to give him such a precious Cosmos Sack after knowing one another for only a short period of time.

Due to the fact that the contents of the Cosmos Sack were simply too precious, Song Xi found it difficult to accept it. He felt that he couldn't accept such a precious gift.

But, he also needed money very badly. The treasures contained in the Cosmos Sack Chu Feng handed him were simply akin to sending him charcoal in snowy weather.

If he were to tell Chu Feng he didn't want the Cosmos Sack, it would most definitely be a lie.

“I have already told you from the very beginning that I would reward you for your help. That is the reward,” Chu Feng said.

“But, this reward is simply too much, no? I have merely given you some directions. My help was simply not worth this reward,” Song Xi said.

“Just accept it. Perhaps it might not be worth it to give others this much for their help, but I feel like it is worthy to give you that much for your help,” Chu Feng patted Song Xi’s shoulder.

Song Xi was suddenly stunned upon hearing what Chu Feng said. He only managed to react again after a short period of time passed. However, at that moment, his eyes had already moistened.

“Chu Feng, I have never met someone as good as you. I... I... I truly do not know what to say to you.”

“Song Xi, don’t say anymore. If you are to continue to speak like this, I will instead feel that you’re trying to flatter me,” Chu Feng patted Song Xi’s shoulder and spoke with a smile.

“Haha... no, I’m not trying to flatter you,” Song Xi smiled upon hearing what Chu Feng said. Then, he wiped away the tears that were about to flow from his eyes.

“Chu Feng, what do you plan to do now?” Song Xi asked Chu Feng.

He felt that since a grand character like Chu Feng had arrived in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, he would most definitely try to unleash his might.

“We’re going to your home,” Chu Feng said.

“What? You want to go to my home?” Song Xi was startled. Evidently, he was caught off-guard by Chu Feng’s answer.

“Song Xi, since I’ve said that you are my friend, it means that I am truly considering you to be my friend.”

“Thus, your mother is equivalent to being my mother too. Since she has fallen ill, I cannot disregard this matter.”

“It just so happens that I am a world spiritist. I think I should be able to help you with your mother’s illness,” Chu Feng said to Song Xi.

“Chu Feng, you’re planning to go to my home because you want to help me cure my mother’s illness?” Song Xi’s eyes were wide open. Incomparable shock filled his eyes.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Chu Feng, I...” At that moment, tears rolled down Song Xi’s cheeks.

When Chu Feng had given him all that wealth earlier, his eyes had merely turned red.

However, upon finding out that Chu Feng was planning to go to his home so that he could personally help him cure his mother’s illness, Song Xi was no longer able to contain his emotions.

It was partially due to being moved by Chu Feng that Song Xi reacted like that. However, more than anything else, it was because Chu Feng said that he might be able to bring relief or even cure his mother’s illness.

The reason why Song Xi had such an enormous reaction upon hearing what Chu Feng said was because he was a filial son.

As for Chu Feng, the reason why he decided to address Song Xi as his brother even though they were only strangers that met one another not long ago was because Chu Feng thought highly of Song Xi’s character.

Actually, Chu Feng did not have a lot of friends. However, all the people that Chu Feng were willing to befriend were those that were affectionate and true.

“It’s enough. Real men shouldn’t cry so easily. What’s there to cry about?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

After that, Chu Feng and Song Xi began to travel toward the direction of Song Xi’s home; they began to travel back in the direction that they came from.

Helping Song Xi cure his mother’s illness was only one of the goals of Chu Feng’s journey to Song Xi’s home. In addition to that, Chu Feng wanted to have another look at the Sacred Mountain.

Chu Feng felt that it was highly possible for what he had encountered in the Stairway to Heaven to be man-made.

If Chu Feng wanted to investigate, the Sacred Mountain would be the only way for him to begin his investigation.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang and the others might even be present in the Sacred Mountain too.

However, Chu Feng had no idea that he was currently... being followed by two people.

Most importantly, those two people were much stronger than Chu Feng. Thus, Chu Feng was unable to detect them following him at all.

On their way back, Chu Feng and Song Xi didn't say anything...

After traveling for some time, Chu Feng and Song Xi finally arrived at Song Xi's home.

Song Xi's home was located on a large mountain. This mountain was very close to the Sacred Mountain.

However, while the Sacred Mountain had no trace of human activity, there were quite a lot of inhabitants on the mountain.

Those people could all be considered weak individuals within their region. All those with ability, influence and power had left for the city.

Only those people remained living in that place.

Although those people would all be considered poor in their region, they were not living in mud houses or straw huts.

Although their homes were not vast and large, they were all quite exquisite and refined.

This was understandable too. After all, no matter how weak Song Xi might be, he was still a Martial Ancestor-level expert.

Furthermore, Song Xi was also a world spiritist. With his skill as a world spiritist, he would not only be able to create exquisite homes, but he would even be able to create massive palaces with no issue.

However, from the simple residence that was Song Xi's home, it could also be seen that Song Xi was inherently a simple man.

Actually, Song Xi was quite a hard-working individual. He had left his home to wander the world before, and earned quite a decent amount of wealth.

If it wasn't for his mother's illness, Song Xi would not have returned home and become so disappointingly poor. He would not have fallen so low as to become a day laborer for the Zhao Mansion.

In Song Xi's home was an old lady asleep on a bed. She had a head of white hair and a face filled with wrinkles.

That old lady was Song Xi's mother. n/.OvEIBIn

Chu Feng and Song Xi were standing before the bed. Chu Feng placed his hand onto Song Xi's mother's wrist. He was currently diagnosing her illness.

The more Chu Feng diagnosed, the more his brows furrowed.

"Chu Feng, is my mother's illness capable of being cured?"

Song Xi asked Chu Feng. He was very nervous when he asked that question.

He was afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to handle his mother's illness. If that was the case, he would have no idea who could possibly cure his mother.

After all, with the status that he held, it would be extremely difficult for him to ask someone stronger than Chu Feng to help him cure his mother.

"Your mother's condition is indeed a bit complicated. Actually, she is not ill. Rather, she has been poisoned."

"Furthermore, as the poison has been left untreated for a long time, it has already invaded her soul," Chu Feng said to Song Xi.

"What? It has already invaded her soul? This..."

Song Xi's complexion immediately turned paper pale upon hearing what Chu Feng said. In fact, he was unable to even stand straight. He began to move backwards continuously. Had Chu Feng not extended his arm to support him, he would've fallen to the ground.

Song Xi was so shocked and frightened upon hearing his mother's condition that his legs had grown weak.

This was understandable. After all, to have poison invade one's soul was extremely dangerous.

Song Xi was also a world spiritist. He knew very well how dangerous that sort of condition was.

He felt that his mother would likely not be able to live. No matter how good the medicine he could obtain might be, it would not be able to save her.

As a filial son, this was something that he was unable to accept.

"Don't panic. Although this poison is a bit thorny to deal with, if you are to give me a day, I will be able to remove it," Chu Feng added.

"Truly?! Chu Feng, you're saying that you're able to cure the poison in my mother?" Disbelief filled Song Xi's paper pale face upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

Although he knew that Chu Feng was very powerful, he still felt disbelief upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

"Trust me."

As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his palm, and a strand of spirit power that was like a little snake began to spiral on top of his palm.

"This is, Immortal-level spirit power. Furthermore, it's a Snake Mark."

"Heavens! You're a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?!" Song Xi once again revealed astonishment upon seeing Chu Feng's spirit power.

Chu Feng did not answer Song Xi's question directly. Instead, he smiled and nodded.

"This is truly great, truly great! I have truly encountered a grand individual! My mother can be saved now!" At that moment, an ecstatic expression filled Song Xi's face. He was so excited and emotional that his eyes were brimming with tears.

Precisely because he was also a world spiritist, he knew very well how powerful Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were.

After finding out that Chu Feng was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he became firmly certain that his mother's illness could be treated.

"Rest assured, I will definitely be able to treat your mother. Merely... you need to think properly about this. Roughly three years ago, who could have poisoned your mother?" Chu Feng said.

"Who? Chu Feng, why would you ask that?" Song Xi was puzzled. He was shocked by Chu Feng's question.

"I am certain that the poison affecting your mother was forced into her body. It was caused by someone," Chu Feng said.

Chapter 2684 - Show Me the Way

"It was caused by someone?" Song Xi was completely stunned upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

"Yes, it was caused by someone. Someone forcibly poisoned your mother. Your mother also suffered quite a lot when the poison was forced into her body."

"Think about it. Three years ago, when your mother's illness began, did she come into contact with anyone?"

"Or perhaps, have you offended anyone in the past?" Chu Feng asked.

"Chu Feng, exactly what sort of poison is it?" Song Xi asked.

"I do not know the name of the poison either. However, this poison is not very strong. It is a paralysis-type poison. Otherwise, your mother would not have been able to continue living for so long."

"Merely, regardless of what sort of poison it might be, as long as it reaches one's soul, it will pose a fatal danger."

"Furthermore, your mother's cultivation is not high. If this is to continue, I believe that she will not be able to live for another half year."

"However, you don't have to worry either. I am able to remove this poison. I can guarantee you that your mother will be fine. Merely, it will take some time for her to wake up," Chu Feng said.

At that moment, Song Xi grew silent. He had been shocked by Chu Feng's words. After a long time passed, he raised his head again and asked, "Are you really able to remove the poison?"

"Rest assured, I am most definitely able to remove the poison from your mother's body," Chu Feng patted Song Xi's shoulder.

Seemingly afraid that Song Xi would still be feeling ill at ease, Chu Feng immediately began the detoxification process for Song Xi's mother.

As the poison had already reached Song Xi's mother's soul, it would take a certain amount of time to remove it, even for Chu Feng.

A single day was the limit Chu Feng gave himself.

However, Chu Feng actually didn't use an entire day at all. He managed to remove the poison from Song Xi's mother before reaching his own time limit.

Merely, although the poison had been removed, Song Xi's mother was still unconscious.

Chu Feng felt that it would take some time, at least a month, for Song Xi's mother to wake up.

This was also the reason why Chu Feng told Song Xi to think about who poisoned his mother, and not ask his mother who poisoned her after she woke up.

After all, even by conservative estimate, it would take a month or longer for his mother to wake up.

Thus, if they wanted to capture the culprit that poisoned his mother, it would be better to have Song Xi think about it.

After removing the poison from Song Xi's mother, Chu Feng planned to inform Song Xi of this joyous news. It was only then that Chu Feng discovered that Song Xi, who had been standing behind him, had disappeared.

Chu Feng was overly concentrated on removing the poison earlier, and had not noticed that Song Xi had left.

Chu Feng walked out of the room and inspected his surroundings with his Heaven's Eyes. Yet, he still saw no sign of Song Xi.

“Where did he go?”

Chu Feng was pondering when he discovered that the female servant in Song Xi’s family was standing nearby.

That female servant was a woman who had lived for several hundred years. Although she had lived for several hundred years, she did not possess the appearance of a white-haired old lady. Instead, she had the appearance of a middle-aged woman.

That female servant was someone that Song Xi had hired. He had hired her especially to take care of his mother. Her cultivation was very weak. She was not even a Martial Emperor.

If she was in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, her cultivation would be extremely powerful.

However, in a place like the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, where even people like Song Xi, a Martial Ancestor-level expert, were at the bottom of the cultivation hierarchy, one could imagine how difficult the circumstances would be for this woman.

For people like her, no power in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm would be willing to take her in. If she were to try to wander the world by herself, she would be bullied and humiliated by others regardless of where she went. She was truly someone with no status or power.

However, Song Xi’s character was, after all, quite decent. Thus, he treated this female servant very well.

In fact, when Song Xi returned with Chu Feng, he had deliberately introduced this female servant to Chu Feng. Her name was Aunt Jing.

It was precisely because Song Xi treated her very well that Chu Feng was able to tell that this Aunt Jing was very faithful and devoted to the Song family too.

At the very least, she was very diligent and attentive when caring for Song Xi’s mother. She was a good individual.

If it wasn’t for that Aunt Jing’s meticulous care, Song Xi’s mother might not have been able to continue living for so long.

At that moment, that Aunt Jiang was standing nearby. She took a glance at Chu Feng and immediately lowered her head. She seemed to want to say something, but was hesitant.

Chu Feng immediately realized that Aunt Jing might want to say something to him. He felt that she might know where Song Xi had gone.

Thus, he walked toward Aunt Jing and asked, "Aunt Jing, do you know where Song Xi has gone off to?"

Seeing Chu Feng questioning her, Aunt Jing immediately walked over to Chu Feng. However, when she had reached a distance of ten meters from him, she immediately fell on her knees with a loud 'putt.'

"Milord, you must definitely save our Young Master," Aunt Jing cried. Worry and nervousness filled her aged face.

"Aunt Jing, please stand up first. Tell me, exactly what happened?"

"If Song Xi has gotten into some sort of trouble, I will definitely not watch with folded arms," Chu Feng helped Aunt Jing back up.

"Milord, h-how am I supposed to e-explain this to you?" Aunt Jing was panicky. She was truly too worried.

"Don't panic. You can talk slowly," Chu Feng said.

"O-Okay. I-I'll talk slowly."

Aunt Jing adjusted her state of mind and train of thought. Then, she began to tell Chu Feng what had happened.

"Milord, this is what happened. Our Young Master possessed a fiancée by the name of Wang Lianzhi."

"That Wang Lianzhi and our Young Master have known one another since childhood. They could be said to be childhood sweethearts that had grown up together."

"While our family was not wealthy at all, we were better off than the Wang family. During their childhood, the two families arranged their marriage."

“However, our Young Master has refused the marriage the entire time. He insists that he has only considered Wang Lianzhi as a younger sister, and doesn’t hold any special feelings toward her.”

“However, that Wang Lianzhi has continued to tangle with our Young Master nonstop. This was even more so after Young Master left the house and accumulated some wealth while he was outside.”

“That Wang Lianzhi was actually decent-looking. There were a lot of men in the region that sought her hand.”

“However, Wang Lianzhi has always wanted to be married to our Young Master.”

“As for Young Master, after seeing how Wang Lianzhi waited for him for so long without marrying someone else, he determined that she was truly sincere and genuine. Thus, as time passed, he started to feel emotions for her too.”

“Back then, Young Master wanted to travel far and make his mark. Thus, he truly did not want to delay Wang Lianzhi.”

“As such, he went and told Wang Lianzhi what he felt.”

“Our Young Master informed Wang Lianzhi that he did not plan to get married and start a family before reaching the True Immortal realm.”

“If Wang Lianzhi was willing to wait for him, the two of them could get engaged to one another. He told her that once he reached the True Immortal realm, he would definitely take her as his wife majestically.”

“Wang Lianzhi gladly agreed to it. With that, the two families made a marriage engagement.”

“Afterwards, Young Master continued to travel and train bitterly. As for Wang Lianzhi, she was very considerate and sensible. She would frequently come over and accompany Young Master’s mother. Although she wasn’t married to Young Master yet, she had seemingly already become the Song family’s daughter-in-law.”

“Although the two of them had yet to marry, they had become a famous affectionate couple in this region.”

“However, ever since Young Master’s mother fell ill, Young Master exhausted all of his savings in order to save her. Furthermore, he has had no time to indulge in martial cultivation. As such, his cultivation has ceased to progress.”

“Gradually, that Wang Lianzhi started to drift apart from Young Master.”

“Young Master has not looked further into this. In fact, he had never even shown any interest toward it. If Wang Lianzhi didn’t come to find Young Master, Young Master would never go and find her either.”

“However, not long ago, that Wang Lianzhi brought a group of people with her and came to say that they wanted to break the marriage engagement.”

“It turned out that Wang Lianzhi has been fancied by the Ouyang family’s master. That Ouyang family’s old master wanted to take her as his concubine.”

“After that Wang Lianzhi found someone with power and strength, she did not plan to be together with our Young Master.”

“It was only at that moment that Young Master discovered that Wang Lianzhi was never true to him to begin with. She only continued to tangle with him nonstop because she thought highly of his future prospects.”

“However, once she felt that Young Master’s future prospects were finite, she immediately began to alienate herself from Young Master. After she discovered a man she felt to be even better than Young Master, she immediately severed her relationship with Young Master without the slightest hesitation.”

“Young Master was discouraged and downhearted. However, he did not continue to tangle himself in that matter. Instead, he directly agreed with Wang Lianzhi and terminated their engagement.”

“Ever since that day, Young Master has never gone to find Wang Lianzhi. I had thought that Young Master had truly gotten over her.”

“However today, Young Master suddenly ran out in the direction of the Ouyang family.”

“I heard that today is the day when the Ouyang family’s old master is going to wed Wang Lianzhi and take her as his concubine.”

“I think that Young Master was most definitely unable to contain his anger and left to find Wang Lianzhi.”

“However, that Ouyang family is extremely famous in this region. This is especially true for the Ouyang family’s old master. He possesses an extremely good relationship with the Zhao Mansion.”

“If Young Master dares to go and create a disturbance at the wedding of the Ouyang family’s old master, he will definitely not be able to survive.”

As Aunt Jing reached this point in her story, tears had already covered her face.

It could be seen that although she was only a servant to the Song family, she was very loyal to Song Xi.

At the very least... she considered Song Xi to be her relative. Otherwise, she would not have been so worried.

“Aunt Jing, do you know where the Ouyang family is located?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do, I do,” Aunt Jing nodded repeatedly. Then, she kneeled before Chu Feng again and began to kowtow to him, “Milord, you must definitely save our Young Master. Only you will be able to save our Young Master.”

“Aunt Jing, don’t cry anymore,” Chu Feng helped Aunt Jing back up. He said, “Show me the way.”

Chapter 2685 - Day of Great Happiness

Chu Heavenly Clan. At the Great Law Enforcement Hall.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Law Enforcement Hall’s Vice Hall Master Chu Xuanzhengfa was sitting at the master seat in the Great Law Enforcement Hall.

A man was kneeling beneath him.

That man was precisely the person that had received the Law Enforcement Secret Order Title Plate from Chu Xuanzhengfa that day.

“Xingren, you’ve done very well. Never would I have expected you all to have discovered that Chu Feng so soon.”

Chu Xuanzhengfa had an overjoyed expression on his face.

He had just heard from that man that people from the Law Enforcement Hall had discovered Chu Feng at the Stairway to Heaven that connected the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Furthermore, they had already dispatched individuals to tail him.

“Milord, do you need us to bring that Chu Feng here? Or should we continue to monitor him?” The man by the name of Chu Xingren asked.

“There’s no need,” Chu Xuanzhengfa shook his head. Then, he said, “Xingren, call back the others from our Law Enforcement Hall. You are to personally monitor that Chu Feng by yourself.”

“Remember, unless he is to encounter fatal danger, you are not to help him. Furthermore, you must definitely pay attention to the people that he gets in touch with.”

“The purpose of your monitoring of Chu Feng is very simple. You are to investigate exactly where this Chu Feng comes from.”

“If that Chu Feng is from another Heavenly Clan, you do not have to continue to monitor him anymore. Instead, you can return after finding out about that.”

“However, if that Chu Feng is from our Chu Heavenly Clan, you must continue to monitor him. Furthermore, you are to immediately report back to me.”

“Remember, you cannot inform anyone else of this matter. You must report back to me directly,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Yes, Milord,” Chu Xingren accepted the order respectfully. Then, he left the Grand Law Enforcement Hall and proceeded toward the direction where Chu Feng was located.

At that moment, Chu Xuanzhengfa entered deep contemplation.

After a short while passed, he muttered with a soft voice, “Oh Xuanyuan, is this Chu Feng your son or not?”

“Exactly what are you thinking?”

.....

The Ouyang family was located beneath the Sacred Mountain. They possessed their own city.

Actually, the Ouyang family was not very powerful at all. Their family master, the person with the highest level of cultivation, was merely a rank four Martial Ancestor.

However, in the region surrounding Fallen Phoenix City, a cultivation of rank four Martial Ancestor was already quite strong. Furthermore, the Ouyang family’s master possessed a decent relationship with the Fallen Phoenix City’s Zhao Mansion.

Thus, in the region surrounding Fallen Phoenix City, the Ouyang family was quite famous and powerful. They could be considered to be a local tyrant in the region.

As for the Ouyang family’s master, he was an old man that had lived for over seven thousand years.

He was an old pervert. When adding up all of his wives and concubines, they numbered over a thousand people. He could truly be said to be someone with a vast harem.

Today was the day that the Ouyang family’s master would marry his one thousand two hundred and thirty-fourth concubine.

The Ouyang family was decorated with lanterns and colored banners. Their entrance was wide open to welcome guests. It could be said that the Ouyang family was bustling with noise and excitement.

As for the Ouyang family’s master, he was bursting with life, and in extremely high spirits.

However, it remained that he was an old man. Thus, no matter how meticulously dressed he might have been, he was unable to conceal the wrinkles on his face. He still had the appearance of an old man. Looking at him was truly somewhat disgusting.

Although he possessed a disgusting appearance, the women that he married were each more beautiful than the last. This was especially true for the concubine that he was going to marry today, Wang Lianzhi.

This Wang Lianzhi was a famous beauty in the region surrounding the Fallen Phoenix City.

The Ouyang family's master could be said to have lusted for Wang Lianzhi for a long time already. However, Wang Lianzhi had been insistent upon Song Xi.

Because of that, Song Xi had become a target of envy for many unmarried men in the region surrounding Fallen Phoenix City.

In fact, if it wasn't for Wang Lianzhi, Song Xi would not have been humiliated and bullied like he had while working for the Zhao Mansion.

There was no such thing as an uncalled-for hatred in this world. The reason those people hated Song Xi was because of Wang Lianzhi.

That said, ever since Song Xi's mother fell ill, the relationship between Song Xi and Wang Lianzhi began to drift apart.

Recently, Wang Lianzhi had even severed their engagement, and agreed to marry the Ouyang family's master.

Because of that, the bride that the Ouyang family's master was going to marry today was none other than Wang Lianzhi. This also caused many unmarried men to feel envious of the Ouyang family's master.

At that moment, practically all of the honored guests that were invited to attend the wedding had arrived. Even the bride herself had arrived. However, the marriage ceremony still hadn't started.

The reason why the marriage still hadn't started was because the people from the Zhao Mansion were still not here.

"Aiyah, Head Chamberlain Zhao, you've finally arrived."

A group of people walked in majestically. The Ouyang family's master immediately got up to greet them with a smile on his face.

The reason for that was because that group of people were from the Fallen Phoenix City's Zhao Mansion. The old man leading the group was the chamberlain in charge of the Zhao Mansion.

That person was a rank five Martial Ancestor.

After the people from the Zhao Mansion arrived, the people present immediately quieted down. They do not dare to make a racket.

From this, it could be seen how much they revered the Zhao Mansion.

This was understandable too. After all, if the Ouyang family could be considered to be a local tyrant in the surrounding region of Fallen Phoenix City, then the Zhao Mansion would be the overlord of the entire region.

Even the Ouyang family would have to be extremely respectful when faced with someone from the Zhao Mansion. They did not dare to show the slightest bit of negligence.

"Head Chamberlain, why have Lord Mansion Master and the others not arrived?" Suddenly, the Ouyang family's master asked surprised.

The reason for that was because, after he carefully looked over the people that had arrived, he discovered that the Zhao Mansion's Mansion Master and the Vice Mansion master were both absent.

"Don't mention it. An accident has occurred in our Zhao Mansion," The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain sighed and spoke with a helpless expression on his face.

"An accident occurred? What happened?" Hearing those words, curiosity emerged in the Ouyang family's master's eyes.

He was able to tell from the expression of the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain that what had happened was most definitely not a good thing. However, in recent days, everything had been going very great for the Zhao Mansion. Thus, he truly wondered what could have caused the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain to reveal such an anxious look.

"My second elder brother, he... died," The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain said.

“The Vice Mansion Master died?!” The Ouyang family’s master had an enormous change in expression upon hearing those words.

The reason for that was because the ‘second eldest brother’ that the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain mentioned was the Zhao Mansion’s Vice Mansion Master. He was also a rank five Martial Ancestor.

“He was truly unlucky. He ended up encountering a malignant star,” The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain revealed a helpless expression.

Although the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain did not publicly mention this matter at the wedding, he revealed what had happened to the Ouyang family’s master through voice transmission.

It turned out the Zhao Mansion’s Vice Mansion Master was the old man that had spoken rudely toward Chu Feng that day, that Zhao Pingyang.

That day, after Chu Feng left, a black gaseous flame emerged from the Sacred Mountain and unleashed a massacre.

Not only was Zhao Pingyang killed, but all of the people from the Zhao Mansion that were present had been killed.

Before Zhao Pingyang died, he had ordered a person by the name of Lil Six to return to the Zhao Mansion to inform the Zhao Mansion and tell them to put out a wanted poster for Chu Feng.

When Lil Six returned with the people from the Zhao Mansion, they discovered that everyone from the Zhao Mansion had died. Furthermore, their deaths were very frightening.

Merely by looking at their corpses, one would start to tremble with fear.

The people from the Zhao Mansion had no idea what had happened. All they knew was that the group of people had clashed with Chu Feng. Thus, they subconsciously felt that it was Chu Feng that had massacred them.

However, they knew absolutely nothing about Chu Feng. In fact, they did not even know Chu Feng’s name. At that moment... they could be said to be completely lost and aimless.

“Aiyah, how could a malignant star emerge at our Fallen Phoenix City?”

“What did that person look like? Exactly what cultivation did he possess? What is his origin?” The Ouyang family’s master asked. He was actually afraid. He wanted to know the details so that he could avoid that malignant star should he encounter him. He wanted to make sure that he wouldn’t accidentally provoke that malignant star and end up being killed.

“Lil Six remembered that man’s appearance. However, after my second eldest brother and the others were killed, he has been completely terrified. Right now, he is undergoing treatment. However, he is still in a terrified state.”

“However, the world spiritist that we hired said that Lil Six will be cured soon. Once Lil Six is cured, we will be able to make a portrait of that person. At that time, our Zhao Mansion will be able to put out wanted posters for him.”

“That motherfucker, it was clearly only a verbal argument, yet he actually ended up deciding to kill. My second eldest brother has truly died a miserable death. Our Zhao Mansion will definitely make him pay!” The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain said with rage, fuming between gritted teeth.

“That’s right, we must definitely make him pay,” The Ouyang family’s master echoed.

The Ouyang family’s master did not think that the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain was boasting. Rather, he truly felt that the Zhao Mansion would be able to avenge the death of their Vice Mansion Master.

The Zhao Mansion was not able to become the overlord of Fallen Phoenix City and the surrounding region because of their own power.

Most importantly, it was because of their Zhao Mansion’s youngest Young Master, Zhao Zirong.

This Zhao Zirong was a martial genius. He was only a little over three hundred years old, but was already a rank eight Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, that Zhao Zirong was a proud disciple of the Grand Mountain Monastery’s Monastery Master.

What was the Grand Mountain Monastery?

If the Zhao Mansion was the overlord of the Fallen Phoenix City and the surrounding region, then the Grand Mountain Monastery would be the overlord of the entire Sacred Mountain and its surrounding regions.

It was a martial cultivation monastery that existed for a long time. It was very powerful.

It was only through having the Grand Mountain Monastery as their backing that the Zhao Mansion managed to obtain their current status.

That was why the Ouyang family's master felt that regardless of who it might be that killed the people from the Zhao Mansion, he would, sooner or later, end up suffering for having offended the Zhao Mansion.

"Brother Ouyang, today is your day of great happiness. You must not feel bad because of the unlucky event that happened to our Zhao Mansion."

"Although my eldest brother isn't able to come, he had me congratulate you on his behalf."

"This great time and lucky day cannot be missed. You should hurry on and start the wedding ceremony. I am looking forward to your wedding feast," The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain said.

"Yes, of course. Head Chamberlain, please sit in this seat of honor. I will begin the wedding ceremony immediately."

The Ouyang family's master invited the people from the Zhao Mansion to seats of honor. Then, he ordered for the bride to be brought out so that they could begin the wedding by honoring heaven and earth.

At that moment, the festivity in the Ouyang family's villa had reached its pinnacle.

"Wang Lingzhi, you damned slut!"

Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard. That shout resonated through the villa and destroyed the lively atmosphere.

Chapter 2686 - Who Dares Touch Him?

The sudden shout startled everyone present.

At that moment, everyone turned their gazes toward the direction where the voice sounded from. Upon doing so, they discovered that the person who had arrived was known by many of them.

That person was a rank one Martial Ancestor. However, he was very famous throughout Fallen Phoenix City and the surrounding regions.

Some people had said that he was a martial cultivation genius capable of obtaining unbounded future achievements. It was precisely because of that, that Wang Lingzhi became so hell-bent on him.

However, later on, people started to call him trash and declared that they'd misjudged him. The reason for that was because ever since his mother fell ill, his cultivation had not increased in the slightest. Furthermore, for the sake of survival, he could only become a day laborer for the Zhao Mansion.

That person was naturally Song Xi.

"Song Xi, have you grown tired of living?! You dare come create a disturbance at my wedding?!"

The Ouyang family's master was furious. He knew about the relationship between Song Xi and Wang Lianzhi. However, he had truly never expected Song Xi to be so daring; never expected for him to stir up trouble at his wedding.

"Ouyang family's master, do you know what sort of person this Wang Lianzhi is?!"

"She is a vicious, merciless and malicious woman!"

"If you are to marry her, you will only bring insult upon the reputation of your Ouyang family!" Song Xi spoke loudly.

"What? Malicious woman?" The guests present all began to whisper to one another upon hearing those words. They started to discuss the matter spiritedly.

After all, one could not casually call someone a malicious woman.

Furthermore, Song Xi was relatively famous. Thus, they knew Song Xi's character rather well too.

Song Xi was a very dutiful and honest man. Even if he was to be humiliated by others, he would rarely rebel. He was someone who had never spoken ill of anyone before.

Even when Wang Lianzhi brought people from the Ouyang family with her to sever her engagement with Song Xi, Song Xi did not refuse. After that, he did not search for Wang Lianzhi either.

There were people that felt that Song Xi was afraid of the Ouyang family, and began to ridicule him for being cowardly.

However, there were also people that felt that he was broad-minded. They felt that Song Xi did not want to make things difficult for Wang Lianzhi, since she had made her own choice.

Regardless, the great majority of people felt that the relationship between Song Xi and Wang Lianzhi should've ended at that point.

Yet at that moment, not only did Song Xi appear at the wedding ceremony between Wang Lianzhi and the Ouyang family's master, but he even publicly, before all those guests, called Wang Lianzhi a malicious woman.

This inevitably caused the crowd to wonder if there was a reason for Song Xi to act like that.

"Malicious woman?! Song Xi, what do you mean by that?! Provide me with an explanation! If you cannot do so, I will break your limbs and cripple your cultivation!" The Ouyang family's master shouted.

Actually, the Ouyang family's master had started to worry in his heart. That was why he wanted Song Xi to explain.

Otherwise, how could he have allowed Song Xi to act like that? He would've already ruthlessly taught Song Xi a lesson.

"Three years ago, my mother mysteriously fell ill. I believe that the Ouyang family's master is also aware of this."

"However, in actuality, my mother did not fall ill. Instead, she was poisoned by that Wang Lianzhi!" Song Xi said as he pointed at Wang Lianzhi. He was gnashing his teeth furiously. Even his body was shivering.

“What? Song Xi’s mother’s fell ill because she was poisoned by Wang Lianzhi?”

Hearing those words, the crowd present all turned their gazes toward Wang Lianzhi.

Even the Ouyang family’s master turned his gaze toward Wang Lianzhi.

The reason for that was because they all knew that it was Wang Lianzhi who was taking care of Song Xi’s mother when she fell ill three years ago.

Furthermore, after Song Xi’s mother fell ill, Wang Lianzhi continued to take care of her until his return.

If it was said that Wang Lianzhi had poisoned Song Xi’s mother, it would truly be possible.

After all, Song Xi’s mother had fallen ill during the time when Wang Lianzhi was taking care of her.

“Song Xi, you are making wild accusations here!” Faced with the questioning gazes from the crowd, Wang Lianzhi would naturally not admit to it.

“You yourself know best as to exactly what happened.”

However, Song Xi had a determined expression. He was certain that it was Wang Lianzhi who had poisoned his mother.

“Song Xi, I truly never expected you to be this sort of person!”

“After your mother fell ill, I continued to take great care of her! Instead of being grateful toward me, you actually wrongly accuse me for poisoning her!”

“Tell me, why would I poison your mother?! Why would I try to harm her?! Give me a reason!”

“Moreover, if I really wanted to harm her, you wouldn’t even know how she died! Why would I go through all the effort of poisoning her?!”

“Moreover, countless world spiritists have diagnosed her! They all said that your mother fell ill, and wasn’t poisoned! Even if you are to wrongly accuse me, you should find a better reason!” Wang Lianzhi was shouting even louder than Song Xi. It was as if Song Xi was truly wrongly accusing her.

“That’s right. Countless world spiritists have diagnosed Song Xi’s mother’s illness. They all said that she fell ill, and wasn’t poisoned.”

The crowd managed to react upon hearing what Wang Lianzhi said. At that moment, many people began to wonder whether Song Xi was wrongly accusing Wang Lianzhi deliberately.

Right at that moment, Wang Lianzhi fell to her knees before the Ouyang family’s master with a ‘putt.’

At that moment, Wang Lianzhi was shedding tears as she spoke in a manner that showed that she was being wrongly accused, “Master, this Song Xi is simply harboring hard feelings toward me because I am going to marry you. That is why he has come to deliberately wrongly accuse me. Master, you must uphold justice for me.”

The Ouyang family’s master felt what Wang Lianzhi said to be very reasonable. He narrowed his eyebrows and became furious. His oppressive might swept forth toward Song Xi.

“Putt~~~”

Song Xi was merely a rank one Martial Ancestor. How could he possibly withstand the Ouyang family’s master’s oppressive might? Immediately, he was forced onto the ground.

Regardless of how hard Song Xi tried to climb back up, he was simply powerless to do so. He could only continue to be crushed into the ground like a dying dog.

“Ouyang family’s master, I am not lying to you! All that I’ve said is the truth! You absolutely must not marry that Wang Lianzhi, she is a vicious, ruthless and malicious woman!”

Song Xi did not give up. Instead, he exhausted all of his strength to continue shouting loudly.

However, not only did the Ouyang family’s master ignore Song Xi, but he instead increased his oppressive might to crush Song Xi deep into the ground, making it so that he could not talk.

At that moment, everyone felt that Song Xi only had himself to blame for all this. One by one, they began to mock and ridicule him with disdain.

However, no one noticed that beneath the veil, Wang Lianzhi revealed a disgusting smile.

It was a smile of mockery. It was as if she was saying that Song Xi was overestimating himself to fight against her.

“Head Chamberlain Zhao, Song Xi is someone from your Zhao Mansion. Say... how should I punish him?”

The Ouyang family’s master did not do anything to Song Xi directly. Instead, he began to ask the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain for guidance.

The reason for that was because he had heard that Song Xi was working in the Zhao Mansion.

Although he possessed a deep relationship with the Zhao Mansion, since the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain was present, he would naturally have to give him face and not touch Song Xi without prior permission.

Since the Ouyang family’s master wanted to take care of Song Xi, he would naturally have to ask the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain.

“Is he from our Zhao Mansion? Our Zhao Mansion actually had such trash? Why do I not remember such a thing?”

The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain revealed a confused appearance.

It was at that moment that someone from the Zhao Mansion reported to their head chamberlain that Song Xi was a laborer working at their Zhao Mansion. However, he was only the lowest level of servant.

“Really now! What were you all doing?! How could you let trash inferior to pigs and dogs like him into our Zhao Mansion?! You all are simply humiliating our Zhao Mansion!”

The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain grew furious upon hearing this. It was as if Song Xi was not qualified to enter the Zhao Mansion at all.

“Ouyang family’s master, that trash inferior to pigs and dogs is simply not a member of our Zhao Mansion. You can take care of him however you wish,” The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain said to the Ouyang family’s master.

After hearing those words, the Ouyang family’s master turned his gaze toward Song Xi again.

He pointed at Song Xi and spoke fiercely, “Song Xi, today is a day of great happiness for me. As such, I do not wish to bloody my hands.”

“However, since you dared to insult my Lianzhi, I absolutely will not spare you.”

“Men! Drag this Song Xi away. I will kill him personally tomorrow.”

“Yes, Milord!”

After the Ouyang family’s master said those words, the Ouyang family’s lackies immediately charged toward Song Xi. They planned to arrest him.

“Huuu~~~”

However, right at the moment when that group of people were about to reach Song Xi, a sudden burst of strong wind swept forth from above Song Xi.

The next moment, all of the Ouyang family’s lackies were blown away.

“I shall see who dares to touch him today!”

Right at that moment, a resounding voice was heard. Following that, two figures appeared beside Song Xi.

As for those two people, they were Chu Feng and Aunt Jing.

Chapter 2687 - Extremely Frightened

After Chu Feng appeared, the oppressive might that the Ouyang family’s master was suppressing Song Xi with also disappeared.

Thus, Aunt Jing managed to help Song Xi back up effortlessly.

“Chu Feng?” Song Xi was startled upon seeing Chu Feng. Evidently, he did not expect that Chu Feng would come to save him.

“Song Xi, you are truly inconsiderate. How could you run here by yourself without even mentioning anything to me?”

“Could it be that you have simply never considered me as a brother?” Chu Feng asked Song Xi.

“Chu Feng, I...”

Song Xi felt extremely awkward. He seemed to want to explain himself, but didn't know how to start.

In the end, Song Xi lowered his head and did not dare to look Chu Feng in the face.

Actually, he had thought about whether or not to call Chu Feng before making his move. After all, Chu Feng was a rank one True Immortal.

If Chu Feng was to help him, then, not to mention a mere Ouyang family, not even the Zhao Mansion could do anything to him.

However, Song Xi took the powerful connections involved into consideration.

Indeed, the Ouyang family and the Zhao Mansion would be no match for Chu Feng. However... what about the Zhao Mansion's Zhao Zirong?

Standing behind Zhao Zirong was the Grand Mountain Monastery. The Grand Mountain Monastery was a power that not even Chu Feng could afford to offend.

Furthermore, it remained that he and Chu Feng were merely strangers that came together by chance. Song Xi felt that Chu Feng had already helped him enough that he would not be able to return the favor. He found it truly unbecoming to implicate Chu Feng because of his own domestic affairs.

After considering these various things, Song Xi decided that he should settle the debt with Wang Lianzhi by himself.

However, Song Xi merely did not wish to inconvenience Chu Feng again. It was most definitely not because he didn't take Chu Feng as his friend.

“Forget about it. I know what you're thinking. Thus, I have never truly blamed you,” Chu Feng walked over to Song Xi and patted his shoulder. Then, he said to Song Xi, “I have already removed the poison from your mother.”

“Chu Feng, I... I... I truly don't know how to thank you.”

“Please accept my respect,” Upon finding out that his mother's poison had been cured, Song Xi was endlessly excited. As he spoke, he started to kneel toward Chu Feng.

However, before Song Xi could finish kneeling before Chu Feng, Chu Feng grabbed him and pulled him back up. He said to Song Xi, “Don't thank me yet. Tell me, how did you determine that it was that Wang Lianzhi who poisoned your mother?”

Actually, Chu Feng had managed to catch up to Song Xi long ago. The reason why he didn't reveal himself was because he wanted to see what Song Xi was planning to do.

Thus, Chu Feng had pretty much arrived together with Song Xi. Naturally, he had heard what Song Xi said earlier.

“It must be her, it must definitely be her. The reason for that is because... I was the one that gave her that poison. I gave her the poison so that she could go and exchange it for some things for me. Merely... I never imagined that she would use it on my mother.”

“Although I do not know why she did that, she was most definitely the one to use that poison on my mother. The reason for that is because I asked her about whether she had managed to sell that poison, and she told me that she had lost it by accident.”

“Back then, I trusted her, and did not think too much about it. However, thinking back upon it now, she simply did not lose the poison. She instead used it on my mother.”

“This woman is simply too malicious! I have treated her extremely well, how could she treat me like this?!”

Song Xi's body was shivering as he said those words. He was shivering from anger.

“Very well, I understand everything now. Leave the rest to me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he turned around and cast his gaze at Wang Lianzhi.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a burst of wind blew toward Wang Lianzhi. The wind directly blew off the veil on her face.

At that moment, Wang Lianzhi's actual appearance was revealed.

Indeed, that Wang Lianzhi was quite pretty. However, she could only be considered to be a beauty for people like Song Xi and the others.

For Chu Feng, who had seen countless beauties, a woman of Wang Lianzhi's appearance simply could not catch his eyes at all.

"Wang Lianzhi, do you plan to confess to everything yourself, or do you want me to force it out of you?" Chu Feng said to Wang Lianzhi.

"Master, save me!" Hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Lianzhi grew so scared that her face turned deathly pale. She hurriedly hid herself behind the Ouyang family's master.

It was not because Wang Lianzhi was a coward. Rather, Chu Feng had appeared out of thin air earlier. While she had no idea what Chu Feng's cultivation was, she knew that he would definitely be able to easily take care of her.

Moreover, Chu Feng was speaking extremely arrogantly. He simply did not place the Ouyang family's master in his eyes at all.

Wang Lianzhi was truly scared that Chu Feng would really attack her.

At that moment the only person who could help her would be the Ouyang family's master.

"Scram," However, before the Ouyang family's master could say anything, Chu Feng spoke to him.

Chu Feng spoke with a very serene voice. However, it was precisely that serene voice that caused the Ouyang family's master to turn pale.

He was scared. He had been inspecting Chu Feng's cultivation ever since Chu Feng had appeared.

However, he, a rank four Martial Ancestor, was unable to see through the cultivation of the young man before him.

Yet, Chu Feng was able to easily cancel his oppressive might.

This caused the Ouyang family's master to feel that the young man before him either possessed a treasure capable of concealing his cultivation, or possessed a cultivation above his own.

Moreover, Chu Feng had appeared out of thin air earlier. This made him feel that Chu Feng's cultivation was most likely above his own.

"Yo-Young man, there are no hatreds or grievances between our Ouyang family and you, is there really a need for you to, for a trash like that Song Xi..."

The Ouyang family's master did not dare to fight. Instead, he wanted to reconcile with Chu Feng.

"Wuuuahh~~~"

However, before the Ouyang family's master could finish his words, he was sent flying. Ruthlessly, he smashed into the nearby wall.

The wall was shattered by his impact. When he fell, he was already covered in blood.

"I will only say this once. Song Xi is my friend. If anyone dares to speak ill of him again, I will cripple their cultivation."

Chu Feng's gaze was like that of a hawk. It was incomparably sharp. As he ran his gaze around, the surrounding region turned frigid cold.

At that moment, many people present were shaking from fear.

The reason for that was because practically everyone present had spoken ill of Song Xi.

Seeing that the Ouyang family's master had been beaten to such a state by Chu Feng, they naturally felt extremely afraid that Chu Feng would attack them too.

"Head Chamberlain Zhao, you must definitely uphold justice for me, you must uphold justice for me."

The Ouyang family's master resisted the pain of his injury with great difficulty, and dragged his bloodied body to the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain to beg for his help.

"Brother Ouyang, with the friendship between you and our Zhao Mansion, you can rest assured. Today, I, Zhao, will definitely not sit and watch remaining indifferent."

"Leave this matter for me to handle. I will definitely present to you a satisfactory answer," The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain vowed.

After that, the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain looked to Chu Feng. He said, "Young man, I do not care about what your origin might be. However, this is our Zhao Mansion's territory. I urge you to not behave atrociously here. Else... you will not be able to shoulder the consequences."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng looked to the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain. However, Chu Feng did not even bother to utter a response. Instead, he revealed a sneer of disdain.

"You..."

Seeing the sneer on Chu Feng's face, the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain grew incomparably furious. His hands started to shake with anger.

There had never been anyone who dared to show such disdain toward him in Fallen Phoenix City and its surroundings.

At that moment, the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain was prepared to attack Chu Feng.

"Lord Head Chamberlain!"

Right at that moment, a person from the Zhao Mansion hurriedly rushed in. He arrived directly before the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain.

"What is it?! Can you not see that I am going to teach this ignorant child a lesson?!" The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain was already burning with rage. Thus, the sudden interruption of that person was simply inviting trouble. Naturally, he would not reveal a good expression when he looked to that person.

“Milord, Lil Six has awakened. Furthermore, he has drawn a portrait of that individual.”

“This is... the portrait of the person who killed Lord Vice Mansion Master and the others of our Zhao Mansion,” The man from the Zhao Mansion handed a portrait to the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain.

The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain immediately accepted the portrait and opened it. After all, this matter was of utmost importance.

“This...”

However, once the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain saw the portrait, he immediately fell onto his butt out of fear. His complexion... turned paler than paper.

Seeing this, the Ouyang family’s master and the others from the Zhao Mansion were all puzzled. They did not understand why the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain would suddenly be scared to such a state. It was as if a serious illness had flared up.

Confused, the crowd all turned their gazes to the portrait. They all felt that the answer would be within the portrait.

“Heavens!”

Upon seeing the portrait, the Ouyang family’s master and the others from the Zhao Mansion were all shocked with fear. Some among them even pissed their pants. There were even some who fainted out of fear.

Their appearances were even more miserable than that of the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain.

When they looked to Chu Feng again, fear filled their eyes.

The gazes with which they were looking at Chu Feng right now simply did not resemble the gaze that one would reveal when looking at a person. Rather, it resembled more of a gaze one would reveal when looking at a demon.

Their reactions were understandable. After all, the person on the portrait was none other than Chu Feng.

Chapter 2688 - Malicious Woman

Upon finding out that the Chu Feng who stood before them was the culprit that had killed all those people from the Zhao Mansion, the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain, the Ouyang family's master and the others were all scared witless. How could any of them dare to act disrespectfully toward Chu Feng?

"Are you going to confess or not?" Chu Feng asked Wang Lianzhi again. His tone grew even colder. He was growing impatient.

The reason for that was because that Wang Lianzhi was not honest at all.

Currently, Chu Feng was suppressing all of them with his strength. Had they possessed strength surpassing his own, Chu Feng firmly believed that he would have met a miserable fate.

That group of people, including that Wang Lianzhi, were all people who bullied the weak and feared the strong.

They were the sort of people that Chu Feng looked down on the most.

"Master, save me, you must save me!"

Sure enough, seeing that the situation was amiss, Wang Lianzhi immediately rushed toward the Ouyang family's master while crying and screaming.

"Scram!" However, the Ouyang family's master knocked Wang Lianzhi away with a flick of his sleeve.

Although Wang Lianzhi did not end up as miserable as the Ouyang family's master, she still vomited blood upon landing and was seriously injured.

"Master, you..." Wang Lianzhi was stunned. She did not understand why the Ouyang family's master would suddenly attack her.

"Damned bitch, immediately confess what you have done!"

However, the Ouyang family's master shouted her down. There was no trace of pity in his eyes. Instead, he started to furiously demand that she confess.

At that moment, Wang Lianzhi realized that the Ouyang family's master was planning to abandon her in order to save himself.

Wang Lianzhi's guess was correct. This was precisely what the Ouyang family's master planned to do.

At that moment, the Ouyang family's master looked to Chu Feng. With an expression of being wronged, he said, "Young hero, young hero, I truly didn't know that she was such a malicious woman. If I had known, I would not have tried to marry her."

"Please, go ahead and do whatever you want with her. There is no relationship between her and me any longer. Please, young hero, please do not harm me, please spare my Ouyang family."

The Ouyang family's master was truly frightened. His voice was trembling as he said those words. Furthermore, he spoke with a very petty and low tone. The only thing he lacked was kneeling down and kowtowing to Chu Feng.

In fact, if Chu Feng were to continue to make things difficult for him, he would definitely kneel down and kowtow to him to beg for forgiveness. Even if he was forced to do something even lower than that, he would be willing to do it.

That said, Chu Feng completely ignored the Ouyang family's master. He did not even bother to take a glance at him.

Instead, he looked to Wang Lianzhi and asked, "Are you still not going to confess?"

At that moment, Wang Lianzhi was already completely covered in tears. She was not crying hard due to the pain of her injuries. Rather, it was mainly because she was extremely scared.

When even the Ouyang family's master and the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain were scared into such a state, she knew very well that she had landed in a predicament.

"I truly didn't do it. Song Xi is wrongly accusing me. Milord... please show charity and spare me."

"I truly didn't do that. If you insist on harming me, even if I am to admit to it, it will only be a confession obtained through torture. You would be wrongly accusing this lowly one."

Wang Lianzhi still didn't admit to it. Instead, she crawled back up with great difficulty and then kneeled on the ground, weeping and shouting.

At a glance, she truly appeared to have been wronged.

However, Chu Feng had been carefully observing Wang Lianzhi's appearance and reactions.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that this Wang Lianzhi was lying.

"Confession obtained through torture? Rest assured, I will definitely not attempt to obtain a confession through torture."

As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his palm, and countless things bubbled forth.

"Woosh~~~" *no ve*)L3-1n

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve. The things on Chu Feng's palm landed around Wang Lianzhi. After those things landed, they began to rapidly spread out.

They were actually countless bugs. Not only did they possess horrifying appearances, but they were also emitting strange 'jiji' noises.

At that moment, the bugs had completely surrounded Wang Lianzhi from all directions.

Seeing those bugs, Wang Lianzhi started to shiver in fear. Then, she fell on her butt in a paralyzed manner, and her face turned green.

"These bugs are called Truth Ghost Bugs. Once they enter your body, you will only be able to tell the truth. You will not be able to lie in the slightest."

"Of course, these Truth Ghost Bugs will also bring you a bit of pain as they enter your body."

"However, do not be afraid. The pain they bring is not that difficult to endure. They will merely make you wish you were dead," Chu Feng said.

"Jijijiji~~~"

Right after Chu Feng's words left his mouth, the noises emitted by those bugs grew even more ear-piercing. One by one, they made threatening gestures as they pounced toward Wang Lianzhi.

Their appearances simply seemed to be waiting to tear Wang Lianzhi to pieces.

“Stop, stop! Yes, it was me, I did it! I was the one who did it!”

Finally, Wang Lianzhi collapsed from the incoming bugs and started to shout hysterically.

“Why did you do it?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’d heard that Song Xi’s mother possessed a family treasure. I wanted to steal that treasure, but was discovered by his mother.”

“At that time, I started to panic, and was afraid that she would tell others about it. Thus, I ended up using that poison to knock her unconscious.”

“Originally, I had only planned to knock her unconscious with the poison and then use a spirit formation to erase her memory.”

“I never expected Song Xi’s mother to still not wake up even after I erased her memory of the incident.”

“I truly didn’t plan to kill her. Before Song Xi returned, I searched for people to help save his mother. However, no matter who I found, none of them were able to distinguish the cause. They all said that she had contracted a mysterious illness.”

“It’s truly not my fault. I truly didn’t mean for it to happen. I even thought about saving her,” Wang Lianzhi said with an expression of grievance.

“You’re still pretending you were wronged? To forcibly erase one’s memory is very damaging to one’s soul.”

“The fact that you’ve erased her memory is equivalent to taking away half of her life.”

“Do you know what sort of pain a forced erasure of one’s memory is? It is truly a pain that would make one wish that they were dead.”

“You have done this sort of thing completely devoid of conscience toward an elder, yet you dare to still pretend to be wronged?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

“You... you malicious woman. Didn’t I already tell you that my family’s inheritance was simply not worth much? It is merely something that possessed special significance for my mother. How could you, how could you do such a malicious thing to my mother for that mere thing?”

“Did you know that my mother’s soul has been eroded by the poison that you’ve forced into her? Had it not been for Chu Feng, my mother would not have been able to live for much longer,” Song Xi said fuming with rage between gritted teeth.

“I didn’t do it on purpose. It truly wasn’t my intention. How could I have known that your family’s inheritance would be that sort of junk?”

“Not only was it junk, but your mother actually flew into a rage upon seeing that I stole that thing. She even declared that she was going to sever the engagement.”

“I did all that I did merely because I didn’t want our engagement to be severed.”

“Song Xi, I did all of that for us,” Wang Lianzhi said.

“Didn’t want our engagement to be severed? That’s why you poisoned my mother?”

“In that case, tell me, who was it that severed our engagement? Are you planning to tell me that the person marrying the Ouyang family’s master today is not you, Wang Lianzhi?”

Song Xi grew even more furious upon hearing what Wang Lianzhi said. Chu Feng was even able to hear that the bones all over Song Xi’s body were making crackling noises. Song Xi was truly furious.

“Enough!” Chu Feng shouted. Then, he said to Song Xi, “Why are you bothering to argue with her? Since the truth has been revealed, how do you plan to handle her? Just do it. What use is there in saying so much to her?”

Chu Feng did not attack Wang Lianzhi. Instead, he wanted Song Xi to do it personally.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that this was, in the end, Song Xi’s domestic affair.

While he could help Song Xi, Song Xi should be the one to decide how to handle the matter.

Chapter 2689 - Unwilling To Be Wrongly Accused

“I’m going to kill her,” Song Xi drew his weapon and looked to Wang Lianzhi furiously.

“Don’t! Song Xi, take the affection of many years between us into consideration, please spare me this once. Please spare my life.”

“I was wrong. I truly know my mistake now. Please, please spare me.”

Seeing that Song Xi was actually planning to kill her, Wang Lianzhi cried even more miserably. She began to kowtow to Song Xi repeatedly.

Her appearance was truly pitiful to the extreme.

However, upon considering that Wang Lianzhi was someone who would poison her fiancé’s mother for the sake of her own interests, it was not only Chu Feng, but rather many of the people present also started to feel disgusted with Wang Lianzhi.

However, Song Xi was not a bystander like the rest of them. He and Wang Lianzhi were childhood sweethearts who had grown up together.

Even before they were engaged, Song Xi had considered Wang Lianzhi his younger sister.

Seeing Wang Lianzhi acting like this, even though Song Xi’s heart was raging with fury, he was unable to do anything, unable to move the weapon in his hand.

In the end, Song Xi looked to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, are you able to spare her? After all, my mother is fine now.”

“Don’t ask me. Decide on what to do yourself. I will not interfere,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, let’s spare her,” Song Xi said.

“Very well. In that case, let’s leave,” Seeing that Song Xi had decided, Chu Feng planned to leave.

However, seeing that Chu Feng was going to leave, Wang Lianzhi suddenly shouted, “Milord, please wait!”

Chu Feng turned around. He immediately realized why Wang Lianzhi had called out to him.

The reason for that was because... she was still surrounded by the bugs that were eager to get to her. It seemed that if she were to make any sudden movements, those bugs would immediately swarm her and tear her to pieces.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and those terrifying and frightening bugs all turned into golden light before dissipating into thin air.

This scene was not only not scary, but was instead very beautiful.

“There is simply no such thing as Truth Ghost Bugs. That was merely a diversionary tactic,” Chu Feng mocked.

Hearing those words, Wang Lianzhi turned ashen. Likely, she was filled with fury and hatred toward Chu Feng.

She had discovered that she had fallen for a trap, that she had been toyed with by Chu Feng.

However, she simply did not dare to lash out at Chu Feng. She did not dare to reveal her anger and hatred. The reason for that was because she knew very well that Chu Feng was not someone that she could afford to provoke.

“Let’s go,” Chu Feng turned around and prepared to leave with Song Xi.

“Wait.”

However, right at that moment, another voice sounded. It was the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain.

“What’s this? You don’t plan to let me leave?” Chu Feng looked to the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain coldly.

Seeing Chu Feng’s cold gaze, the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain and the others were all so scared that they started to shiver in fear.

Chu Feng noticed that, including the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain, everyone lowered their heads. They simply did not dare to look him in the face.

However, after a moment passed, the Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain managed to ease his state of mind, and slowly raised his head.

He gathered up his courage and asked Chu Feng, "You do not plan on killing us?"

"If I had planned to kill you all, you would already be dead," Chu Feng said.

"But, since you are willing to spare even us, why did you slaughter the others from our Zhao Mansion?" The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain asked.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed.

Then, in a very confused manner, he asked, "Slaughter the others?"

"When have I slaughtered anyone from your Zhao Mansion? What are you talking about?"

"Do you not dare to admit it? All of our Zhao Mansion's corpses are still lying in our Zhao Mansion right now. You dare to say that it was not you who did that?" The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain questioned.

"Corpses?"

"Where are the corpses? Bring me there," Chu Feng said.

Since he hadn't killed anyone, Chu Feng naturally did not wish to be wrongly accused and shoulder the blame of being a murderer for someone else.

Thus, Chu Feng must definitely make the matter clear. At the very least, he must make the people from the Zhao Mansion know that he did not kill anyone from their Zhao Mansion.

"Very well. Follow me then."

The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain grew less afraid of Chu Feng after seeing that he was willing to confront him and not act unreasonably. Then, he began to lead the way for Chu Feng. They were proceeding for the Zhao Mansion.

The Zhao Mansion was located in Fallen Phoenix City. It was densely populated.

In the entire Fallen Phoenix City, apart from the people of the Zhao Mansion, practically no one dared to linger around the entrance of the Zhao Mansion.

The Zhao Mansion was that overwhelmingly arrogant.

However, once Chu Feng entered the Zhao Mansion, everyone from the Zhao Mansion revealed nervous expressions on their faces as they looked to Chu Feng. In fact, they were even shivering.

There were even people among them who turned around and fled from Chu Feng.

Their actions were understandable. Once that Lil Six woke up, he immediately drew Chu Feng's portrait. The Zhao Mansion gathered all of the surrounding world spiritists to make copies of the portrait so that they could make wanted posters for him.

Thus, it led to everyone in the Zhao Mansion knowing the appearance of the person who had killed the Zhao Mansion's Vice Mansion Master and all the others.

And now, the murderer was actually openly walking about their Zhao Mansion. How could they not be shocked and frightened by this?

One should know that the Zhao Mansion's Vice Mansion Master was a rank five Martial Ancestor.

They felt that since that murderer was capable of killing their Vice Mansion Master, it meant that he was most definitely someone with a cultivation above rank five Martial Ancestor.

They felt that Chu Feng was most likely a rank six Martial Ancestor.

The Zhao Mansion's head chamberlain directly brought Chu Feng to where those corpses were stored.

"Heavens, how could this be?!" Seeing those corpses, Song Xi was stupefied.

As for Aunt Jing, she was so frightened that she lost consciousness directly.

Her reaction was understandable too. After all, those corpses were truly horrifying. Those people had truly died miserably.

For people like Aunt Jing who were not used to this sort of sight, they would naturally not be able to tolerate it.

“Are these the people that I encountered beneath the Sacred Mountain?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is them. Apart from Lil Six, you killed them all,” The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain said.

“I’ve already told you that it wasn’t me,” Chu Feng said.

“You can go ahead and tell our Mansion Master whether it was you who did it or not.”

“Do you dare to meet our Mansion Master face to face?” The Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain asked.

“Why wouldn’t I?” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

“In that case, wait here. I will go and call for our Mansion Master right away,” After saying those words, the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain left.

“These people are truly ignorant. Do they still not know your strength? Instead of begging for forgiveness right away, they actually dare to confront you,” Her Lady Queen was feeling very annoyed by the attitude of the Zhao Mansion.

“I have not revealed my aura. With their strength, they are still unable to detect that I’m a True Immortal.”

“Moreover, this Zhao Mansion has gotten used to being the arrogant overlord of this region. Even when they encounter people stronger than themselves, they will not necessarily be willing to accept it.”

“Moreover, that Zhao Mansion’s chamberlain grew confident upon returning to the Zhao Mansion. Most likely, it’s because their Zhao Mansion possesses a rank seven Martial Ancestor.”

“With how confident he is, he most definitely thinks that my cultivation is only that of a rank six Martial Ancestor, and that that rank seven Martial Ancestor will be able to handle me easily,” Chu Feng said.

Upon entering the Zhao Mansion, Chu Feng had surveyed the entire mansion with his spirit power. Thus, he already knew how many people were in the Zhao Mansion, as well as all of their cultivations.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 2690 - How To Prove? - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 2690 - How To Prove?

Chapter 2690 - How To Prove?

“They truly do not know the immensity of heaven and earth. Never did I expect there to be such fools in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm too,” Her Lady Queen said.

“There are stupid people everywhere. As for those like the Zhao Mansion who became arrogant and conceited after obtaining a bit of power, they are everywhere too.”

“Of course, regardless of where one goes, these sorts of people will only be nobodies on the lowest rung,” Chu Feng said.

Having journeyed the world alone for so long, Chu Feng had witnessed all kinds of people. As for people like the Zhao Mansion, they were the most frequently-seen.

Just because they possessed some strength, they began to have an exaggerated opinion of their own abilities, and started arrogantly preying on others.

People like them were the ones that offended others the easiest. Furthermore, they would generally offend those with strength surpassing their own. Thus, the only thing that awaited them would be death.

Chu Feng looked to those corpses again. He said, “These people have died in a strange manner.”

“Judging from their appearance, they had their souls sucked dry when they were still alive.”

“The person who killed them is vicious and merciless. Chu Feng... who do you think did this? Is someone deliberately framing you?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I have just arrived in this place. I still do not have enemies yet. Who would possibly do this to frame me?”

“It couldn’t possibly be that the Zhao Mansion slaughtered their own men so that they could frame me, right?” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, Chu Feng, they would be fools if they did that,” Her Lady Queen laughed. She felt that the people from the Zhao Mansion were truly fools.

“The way I see it, this doesn’t seem to be someone of human origin,” Chu Feng said.

“Now that you’ve mentioned it, that does seem to be the case,” Her Lady Queen grew serious.

“Song Xi, you mentioned before that the people that entered the Sacred Mountain would die strangely. What do you think about the condition of those people’s deaths compared to these corpses?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have only heard about those things, and never witnessed it myself. However, the condition of their deaths do resemble those of the legend.”

“Heavens! It couldn’t possibly be that the thing in the Sacred Mountain ran down?” At that moment, Song Xi started to panic.

“You are the culprit behind their murder?!” At that moment, an overwhelmingly furious voice sounded.

It was an old man. He possessed the cultivation of a rank seven Martial Ancestor. Standing beside him was the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain, and following behind them were over a thousand lackeys.

Evidently, that person was the Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master.

As for that Mansion Master, he was even more arrogant and aggressive than that head chamberlain.

There was absolutely no trace of respect in his eyes when he looked to Chu Feng. Instead, his gaze was filled with hostility.

“It is evident that I am not the culprit,” Chu Feng said calmly.

“You say you’re not the culprit, but who could possibly testify for you?” The Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master asked. His attitude was extremely rude.

“Me. Lord Mansion Master, I am able to bear witness for Chu Feng. They were indeed not killed by him. I left with Chu Feng on that day,” Song Xi said.

“Who the fuck are you?!” The Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master cast a glance at Song Xi. His gaze was filled with disdain.

This was understandable too. Although Song Xi was somewhat famous in Fallen Phoenix City and its surroundings, that did not mean that everyone knew of him.

To the Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master, Song Xi was nothing more than a nobody. Even though Song Xi was a worker in the Zhao Mansion, the Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master still didn’t know who he was.

“Lord Mansion Master,” Right at that moment, a man walked out.

That person was that Lil Six.

“Lord Mansion Master, this Song Xi is indeed someone from our Zhao Mansion. We left to transport the goods together that day.”

“As for that man, he injured all of us that day. The only person he didn’t injure is that Song Xi. I do not know exactly what sort of relationship the two of them might possess.”

“Furthermore, after injuring us, that man indeed took Song Xi with him, and they left together.”

“After they left, Lord Vice Mansion Master immediately dispatched me to return to notify you all. As such, this lowly one has no idea if they returned to kill Lord Vice Mansion Master and everyone else,” That Lil Six reported.

“Lord Mansion Master, I swear that it really wasn’t done by Chu Feng. If I am lying, the heavens can strike me down with lightning and kill me miserably,” Song Xi was afraid that the Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master would not trust him, and thus raised his hand to swear.

“You shut up! You damned traitor. You dare to testify for the person who murdered the people of our Zhao Mansion?! You shall also die!”

Suddenly, the Zhao Mansion's Mansion Master unleashed his attack.

At that moment, killing intent filled the air. That Zhao Mansion's Mansion Master had unleashed a fatal attack from the get-go.

He was planning to kill both Chu Feng and Song Xi.

Chu Feng felt that if he were truly only a rank six Martial Ancestor, then he, Song Xi and Aunt Jing would all be killed without even a corpse remaining, should they be struck by this attack.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng was not a rank six Martial Ancestor. Instead, he was a rank one True Immortal.

Chu Feng did not even bother to move. He merely revealed a faint smile on his face, and then a strong burst of wind emerged from his body.

At that moment, Chu Feng's clothes were fluttering in the wind, and his long hair was drifting. The next moment, the power that was heading toward him was dispersed when it was three meters away from reaching Chu Feng and Song Xi.

"This..."

Seeing this scene, the Zhao Mansion's Mansion Master revealed an expression of panic.

His attack earlier was extremely powerful. However, it was easily neutralized by his opponent. This caused him to subconsciously feel that his opponent's strength surpassed his own.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng raised his palm, and then a 'bang' was heard. The Zhao Mansion's Mansion Master was knocked flying.

The power of the impact was extremely powerful. The Zhao Mansion's Mansion Master crashed through many walls before finally falling to the ground. When he fell, he was already badly mutilated and covered in blood. He did not even have the strength to crawl back up.

Seeing this scene, many people from the Zhao Mansion were so scared that they immediately started fleeing.

Originally, they had thought that the culprit might be a rank six Martial Ancestor. They had thought that their Mansion Master would be able to take care of him.

It was only now that they realized that the culprit was much stronger than they had originally anticipated. Even their Mansion Master was powerless before him.

As for them, mere lackeys, they would simply be throwing away their lives should they fight him.

If they did not escape now, when could they possibly escape?

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a tornado appeared before him. That tornado directly reached into the sky.

Once the tornado appeared, a boundless suction power spread forth from it. All the people from the Zhao Mansion that were trying to escape, including the seriously-injured Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master, were sucked into the tornado.

“Milord, please spare us, please spare us.”

The crowd were spinning about in the tornado nonstop. They were wailing and begging for forgiveness repeatedly.

This continued for a short period of time. Then, Chu Feng dispersed the tornado, and those people all fell ruthlessly to the ground like dying dogs.

Upon landing, many people started to kneel on the ground and vomit nonstop. They were vomiting blood.

“I will say it one more time, I am not the one who killed them,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng ran his ice-cold gaze across the crowd. Everyone from the Zhao Mansion started to shiver in fear. Practically no one dared to raise their heads to look at Chu Feng.

Even that Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master did not dare to utter half a fart at this moment.

“B-B-But, how can y-you prove that it was not you who killed them?”

At that moment, the Zhao Mansion’s head chamberlain spoke again. However, his stuttering voice revealed the fear that he felt toward Chu Feng.

“How can I prove it?”

Chu Feng chuckled coldly. Then, with a mere thought, boundless Immortal-level martial power burst forth from his body like a volcanic eruption.

His Immortal-level martial power soared into the skies. Then, it scattered about in all directions. Soon, it covered all of Fallen Phoenix City.

“Merely by the fact that you all are still alive when I possess the capability to kill every single one of you,” Chu Feng said.

At that moment, the Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master and everyone else from the Zhao Mansion were stunned. They were not shocked. Rather, they were horrified.

It was only at that moment that they finally realized how frighteningly powerful the young man before them was.

He was actually a True Immortal-level expert. Although he was only a rank one True Immortal, it remained that he was a True Immortal. He was an existence that could drown them alive with merely a spit.

“Milord, although we have eyes, we are blind. Milord, please do not take offense to the ignorance of us lowly ones, and spare us this one time.”

“Milord, please spare this lowly one. I am merely a worker here. I still have elderly and young in my home. I truly do not wish to die.”

.....

At that moment, the people from the Zhao Mansion were all weeping bitter tears as they kneeled and begged for forgiveness. Their appearances were truly petty and low.

Chapter 2691 - Something Peculiar Is At The Sacred Mountain

“Remember this. Song Xi is my brother. If anyone dares disrespect him in the future, it will be equivalent to disrespecting me.”

“If anyone dares to take revenge upon Song Xi after I leave, I will have your Zhao Mansion completely disappear from this world.”

Chu Feng spoke those words one word at a time. After saying those words, without waiting for any reaction from the people of the Zhao Mansion, he directly left with Song Xi and Aunt Jing.

As they left, Song Xi stared at Chu Feng the entire time. Adoration filled his eyes.

He was reacting like a girl seeing her idol. This sort of reaction from Song Xi caused Chu Feng to feel very uncomfortable.

“Why are you looking at me like that?” Chu Feng asked with a frown.

“Chu Feng, you are simply the most impressive person I’ve ever encountered,” Song Xi said.

“This is impressive?” Chu Feng felt otherwise.

“This is simply too impressive. You have no idea how rude and unreasonable the Zhao Mansion generally is. As for that Mansion Master, he is so unreasonable that he simply disregards all laws and orders. He is simply a petty tyrant.”

“Yet, today, they were scared to such a state before you. This is truly satisfying.”

“Your aura was simply too imposing. Even I grew scared.”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that I was standing beside you and knew that you wouldn’t harm me, I would likely have been kneeling and begging for forgiveness just like the rest of them,” Song Xi said.

“If you continue on like this, I will start to think that you’re trying to flatter me,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng felt that while Song Xi’s cultivation was not very strong, he was someone who had traveled about and gained a lot of experience. Likely, he should have witnessed a lot of scenes similar to this.

As such, his reaction was truly somewhat exaggerated.

Actually, Song Xi had indeed witnessed quite a lot of similar occasions. However, he was merely a bystander those times.

This was the first time that he had witnessed something like this at such a close range while standing beside Chu Feng.

The difference between them was like that between a blind bystander and experiencing something for oneself.

Thus, Song Xi would naturally be very excited.

"I am truly not trying to flatter you. I am truly filled with admiration for you," Song Xi said with a chuckle. These were indeed his true feelings.

"Stop. We are to put this topic aside right now," Chu Feng felt very helpless.

It would be one thing if a woman were to react to him in such a manner. However, for a man to look at him with such a gaze made him feel really uncomfortable.

"Oh, that's right. There is one thing that I need to remind you of still."

"Song Xi, you are too indecisive. How could you spare that Wang Lianzhi after what she did to your mother?"

"You should know that if I didn't appear, your mother would not have been able to continue living for much longer."

"As for the cause of it all, it is that Wang Lianzhi," Chu Feng said.

"But, it remains that she and I have grown up together. I truly do not have the heart to kill her," Song Xi said.

"While you're not willing to kill her, she was more than willing to kill you."

"Your heart is simply too soft. With how soft-hearted you are, it will be very difficult for you to survive in the martial cultivation world."

"What sort of people are most common in this world? It is none other than people like the Ouyang family and the Zhao Mansion, people who bully the weak and fear the strong."

“While it is fine for us to not provoke others and bully others, you must still remember that if someone dares to provoke you, you absolutely cannot afford to be courteous toward them.”

“Today, had I not been considering the fact that you would continue to live here, and was afraid that the Zhao Mansion would retaliate against you, that Zhao Mansion’s Mansion Master would’ve already been dead.”

“Do you know why?” Chu Feng asked.

“Why?” Song Xi asked.

“Because he was trying to kill me when he attacked. I have no reason to spare those who want to kill me,” Chu Feng said.

“I understand. I will definitely stop being indecisive. However, Chu Feng, are you able to spare Wang Lianzhi?” Song Xi asked.

“I’ve already told you that you are to decide yourself about what to do with her.”

“Since you’ve already spared her, I will not make things difficult for her,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was feeling rather helpless.

Chu Feng was able to tell that while Song Xi had accepted his suggestions right away, Song Xi was, in the end, a soft-hearted person.

If he wanted to change, he would have to temper himself through experience. At the very least... he was still not changed yet.

After returning with Song Xi and Aunt Jing back, to his house, Chu Feng headed toward the Sacred Mountain again.

Chu Feng was planning to scout out the Sacred Mountain once more. After all, the present him had no information regarding Wang Qiang and the others, and was feeling very worried.

The Sacred Mountain was currently the only place that Chu Feng could think of to search for Wang Qiang and the others.

This time around, Chu Feng did not directly enter the Sacred Mountain. Instead, he first observed it from afar.

After all, Chu Feng had already gained knowledge about the Sacred Mountain, and knew that it was no ordinary mountain.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that the Sacred Mountain was most likely related to that mysterious wasteland.

Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes possessed the ability to search for geomancy and burial grounds, as well as the power of Natural Oddities.

If there was truly some sort of secret or treasure hidden in the Sacred Mountain, then as long as it was not hidden extremely deeply, Chu Feng would be able to discover a clue or two.

Chu Feng stood in the sky and looked to the boundless Sacred Mountain from afar.

Truth be told, that Sacred Mountain was simply too enormous. Even with his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was only able to see the tip of the iceberg.

Under those sort of circumstance, Chu Feng could only move about nonstop, so that he could continue to survey the various regions of the Sacred Mountain.

In the blink of an eye, half a day passed and the sky had gradually darkened.

After the sky turned dark, the Sacred Mountain became strangely quiet.

Chu Feng started to worry. That Sacred Mountain was simply too large. Even if he were to circle around the entire Sacred Mountain, he would only be able to see the outer portion of the mountain range, and not the insides.

Furthermore, although Chu Feng had surveyed the mountain for so long, he had likely not even managed to survey two-tenths of the Sacred Mountain's outer portion, much less the entire Sacred Mountain.

The size of the Sacred Mountain simply surpassed Chu Feng's imagination.

"There's a change!"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's worried frown turned into a cheerful expression. He discovered a change at a certain region of the Sacred Mountain.

According to the terrain of the Sacred Mountain, as well as the changes in natural energies, Chu Feng discovered that a vortex had appeared somewhere in the Sacred Mountain. That vortex seemed to be engulfing the natural energies.

"Sure enough, this Sacred Mountain is extraordinary," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, isn't that location where that light vortex was located? Her Lady Queen said.

"Now that you mention it, that's true," Chu Feng managed to react upon hearing what Her Lady Queen said.

Indeed, it was in the direction where Chu Feng had left the mountain. Merely, the light vortex was even further into the Sacred Mountain, whereas the strangeness that Chu Feng had discovered was not located deep within the mountain.

"Regardless, Chu Feng, go in and have a look."

"See what exactly is there. However, you must remember to be careful."

"After all, those people from the Zhao Mansion all died strangely. It is very possible that their deaths are related to this Sacred Mountain," Her Lady Queen warned Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded. Then, he entered the Sacred Mountain.

Due to the fact that the Sacred Mountain possessed a special sort of power, one would simply be unable to fly in there. Upon entering the Sacred Mountain, one must proceed on foot.

Furthermore, one's power would be restricted. Thus, one's speed would become very slow.

It took Chu Feng five whole days and nights to reach his destination.

However, upon reaching it, Chu Feng was unable to discover any abnormality. In fact... even when he used his Heaven's Eyes to inspect the location, he was unable to discover anything strange.

At that moment, the location he'd arrived at resembled an ordinary mountaintop. There was nothing peculiar about it.

However, Chu Feng firmly believed that it was most definitely not an ordinary place. Thus... Chu Feng began to set up a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was called the Secret Ground Revealment Formation.

That Secret Ground Revealment Formation was something that Chu Feng had obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance. The Secret Ground Revealment Formation possessed a similar effect to Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes.

Not only would it allow Chu Feng to see through things, but it would also be able to detect special clues. It was a spirit formation used to find treasures.

Merely, although the Secret Ground Revealment Formation was very powerful, Chu Feng was only able to cover a range of a hundred meters with his current strength. The range of execution was extremely small.

However, Chu Feng discovered that the power of his Heaven's Eyes would also grow stronger when used in the range of the Secret Ground Revealment Formation.

Thus, for a place such as the one he was in, it would be very effective to utilize both the Secret Ground Revealment Formation and his Heaven's Eyes simultaneously.

Chapter 2692 - Descent Of A Celestial Fairy

As expected, after the Secret Ground Revealment Formation was completed, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes grew even sharper.

In fact, Chu Feng felt as if his eyes weren't eyes anymore. Rather, they were two formless sharp blades, capable of piercing through anything.

"There."

Soon, Chu Feng discovered an entrance.

That entrance was located at the corner of the mountainous region.

After discovering the entrance, Chu Feng did not destroy the rocks with brute force. Instead, he began to utilize his world spirit techniques to undo the entrance.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that the mountain stones and rocks should be a fusion between mountain stones and a spirit formation.

In other words, a portion of the mountain stones were actually mountain stones, whereas the others were fake, created by a spirit formation.

Merely, as the spirit power used to create them was very powerful, not even Chu Feng was able to see any flaws in them.

That said, it remained that spirit power was, in the end, only spirit power. By utilizing spirit formations, Chu Feng was certain that he would, sooner or later, be able to undo them.

Sure enough, after he covered his body with his spirit formation, Chu Feng was able to enter the mountain without destroying the stones.

Upon entering the mountain, his surroundings changed completely. Chu Feng arrived at a passageway. It was a very deep passageway. Chu Feng walked for a very long time before finally reaching the other end.

There was a vast hall at the other end of the passageway. Although the hall was extremely vast, it was also very empty.

There was a grand formation in the central region of the vast hall. It was a very bright formation. That grand formation was actually absorbing natural energies.

“What a powerful formation. Who set up this formation?” Her Lady Queen also revealed an astonished expression upon seeing that formation.

The reason for that was because it was an exceptionally amazing formation. It was most definitely not the work of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Instead, it was most definitely set up by an existence surpassing Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.

“This spirit formation seems quite ancient. Likely, it has been here for a long time,” Chu Feng said.

Although Chu Feng was unable to determine what level world spiritist set up that spirit formation, he was able to tell that the spirit formation did not originate from the Sacred Mountain. Rather, it should be something that someone set up some time after the Sacred Mountain appeared.

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen said, “Chu Feng, look at that sphere. Fetch it.”

Chu Feng also noticed the sphere that she was talking about.

That sphere was not very large. It was only the size of a fist. The sphere was black, and seemed to be composed of a cobweb-like substance. Its surface was not smooth. In fact, there were small cracks that reached the interior of the sphere.

Natural energies were being emitted from the cracks in the sphere.

From Chu Feng’s observation, he felt that the sphere was a treasure.

If that grand formation was absorbing the natural energies, then the natural energies that it absorbed should all have gone into the sphere.

Chu Feng retrieved the sphere, and was immediately filled with astonishment. That sphere was simply filled with an excessive amount of natural energies. The amount of natural energies it contained was so unimaginably rich.

Chu Feng felt that the natural energies contained in the fist-size sphere might even be sufficient for him to reach the Heavenly Immortal realm.

He recalled a time when he was in the Holy Land of Martialism. Back then, he had wracked his brain on how to obtain natural energies, and narrowly escaped losing his life multiple times.

Yet at that moment, such a great quantity of natural energies was right in his hand. Chu Feng was truly moved with admiration.

“The Great Chilocosm Upper Realm is truly extraordinary. I actually managed to obtain so much natural energy this easily,” Chu Feng gulped down his saliva emotionally.

To Chu Feng and other martial cultivators, natural energies were simply the greatest delicacy in the world. This was even more so as the natural energies in the sphere could be directly refined.

“Unfortunately, since you’ve trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, making a breakthrough in cultivation is already no longer as simple as before.”

“Back then, you were able to directly reach a breakthrough in cultivation as long as you gathered enough natural energy in your dantian.”

“However, now, regardless of how much natural energy you might be able to gather in your body, if you’re unable to obtain martial comprehension that will allow you to reach the breakthrough junction, you will still not be able to reach a breakthrough.”

“That being said, it is a rare opportunity to gather this much natural energy. Chu Feng, you should refine it immediately,” Her Lady Queen said.

“It is evident that someone deliberately set this place up to accumulate natural energies. It wouldn’t be very good for me to refine it just like this, no?” Chu Feng said.

“What’s not good about it? That person was in the wrong to seize the natural energies to begin with. Moreover, it seems that it has been a very long time since someone has been here. Perhaps the person who set this place up has already died,” Her Lady Queen said.

“That’s true. In that case, thanks for the meal.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng opened his mouth, and a boundless suction power covered that sphere.

The next moment, the natural energies in the sphere began to gush out like a massive flood that had broken through a dam. They were all rushing into Chu Feng’s mouth.

The amount of natural energies contained in the sphere was simply too much. Even with the method with which Chu Feng was refining them, it still took him several hours before he finally refined all of the natural energies.

“Amazing. My dantian has never been this full before.”

Chu Feng was feeling extremely happy and extremely content. He was like a gluttonous child that had finally managed to eat his fill.

“It would seem that this spirit formation is the reason why the natural energies in the Sacred Mountain continued to decrease,” Her Lady Queen said.

“No,” However, Chu Feng shook his head at Her Lady Queen’s theory. He said, “Eggy, have a careful look at that spirit formation. Then have a look over here, over here and over there.”

Chu Feng pointed to several locations.

“So that’s the case. This spirit formation is merely exploiting a certain kind of power in the Sacred Mountain to accumulate natural energies. However, the natural energies it accumulates are from the outside, and not related to the Sacred Mountain,” Her Lady Queen came to a realization.

“That is indeed the case. Merely... to be able to utilize the Sacred Mountain’s power to accumulate the natural energies outside, that too is a great ability.”

“At the very least, this means that this individual observed the Sacred Mountain for a very long time. Furthermore, that person’s strength must be extremely powerful. Otherwise, it’d be impossible for that person to discover that the Sacred Mountain possessed this sort of power, and utilize that power to set up such a formation,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, that would be the case,” Her Lady Queen nodded in agreement. n**o**VE-**lb**)1n

“Who are you?!”

Right at that moment, a stern shout sounded from behind Chu Feng.

Chu Feng hurriedly turned around, and discovered that a female was standing by the vast hall’s entrance.

Chu Feng was shocked by her sudden arrival. However... once Chu Feng took a clear view of that woman, he was stunned.

She was a young woman wearing a snow-white veil skirt and a head of long black hair.

She was beautiful, extremely beautiful.

She possessed a pure and innocent-looking face with exquisite facial features. One simply could not find fault with her facial appearance.

Although she was wearing a long skirt, Chu Feng felt that it was not only that woman's face that was outstanding; her figure was most definitely alluring too.

That woman's beauty was simply extraordinary. She was a fairy.

This was especially true with how that woman's long hair scattered down around her. It made her resemble a celestial fairy descending to the world of mortals. Her aura was simply superb.

Since Li Yu'er, this is the first time Chu Feng had seen such a delightful-looking beauty.

Women like Wang Lianzhi would simply be akin to an ugly duckling next to a swan should she be placed beside this woman. They were simply on a completely different level.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at that moment, the woman raised her long, shapely eyebrows. Then, she spread open her lily-white hands and shot a palm strike at Chu Feng.

Once that woman unleashed her attack, Chu Feng's expression changed enormously.

That woman was most definitely younger than him.

Yet, her cultivation was that of a rank one True Immortal.

Furthermore, her attack contained outstanding battle power.

Even among rank one True Immortals, this woman was most definitely not one to be taken lightly.

The reason for that was because... Chu Feng felt fatal danger from her attack.

Chapter 2693 - Demon Level

Seeing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng hurriedly dodged to the side.

At the moment when Chu Feng was dodging, his aura was captured by his opponent.

“Rank one True Immortal?”

Sensing Chu Feng’s aura, that celestial fairy-like woman was evidently startled.

However, she soon streaked her hands across her Cosmos Sack. Then, two long swords appeared in her hands.

Those two swords were completely identical.

Their hilts were silver. The swords did not have any special decorations. However, they were shining brightly, and emitting very powerful auras.

These two swords were both Incomplete Immortal Armaments. Furthermore, they were both very high quality, and surpassed Chu Feng’s Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

With the two Incomplete Immortal Armaments in hand, the woman’s attacks grew even sharper. Although she did not move her feet, she thrust with the two swords in her hands repeatedly, and sent forth many sword rays that ripped the air apart. Those sword rays were shooting toward Chu Feng extremely quickly.

Seeing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng hurriedly revealed his Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

However, his opponent’s attacks were simply too sharp and powerful.

Even though Chu Feng had increased his battle power by using the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler, he was still unable to dodge the attacks.

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng had no choice but to use the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler to block the incoming sword rays.

“Clank~~~” n/.Op*EL*In

“Clank~~~”

“Clank~~~”

.....

Every time a sword ray collided with Chu Feng’s Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler, it would let out a loud metallic echo and dazzling sparks.

Most importantly, every time Chu Feng blocked a sword ray with his Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler, his arm would tremble violently.

After blocking repeatedly, Chu Feng felt his arm going numb.

“This girl, she’s very powerful.”

Chu Feng was endlessly astonished. Although he had determined this woman to be very strong when he first felt her aura, it was only when they actually fought that Chu Feng realized that she was stronger than he had imagined her to be.

It was most definitely not only because her Incomplete Immortal Armaments were better than his own that she was able to suppress him.

She herself also possessed extraordinary battle power. At the very least, if judging solely by her battle power, her battle power was most definitely not inferior to Chu Feng’s.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard.

At that moment, a surging sword aura started to rush toward Chu Feng like an enormous ocean wave. The aura was extremely imposing, and cut off Chu Feng’s escape.

This was an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

This woman was extremely ruthless. She was planning to directly kill Chu Feng.

“Bang~~~”

Right at the moment when the surging sword aura was about to engulf Chu Feng, a golden-bright and dazzling light appeared from Chu Feng’s body. The

golden light soon spread all around, engulfing their surroundings like bright sunshine.

The golden light actually managed to forcibly disperse the incoming sword aura.

At that moment, that woman finally stopped her attacks. A trace of shock emerged on her beautiful yet sharp eyes.

At that moment, an enormous golden sword with a length of several hundred meters was floating horizontally before Chu Feng. It was extremely imposing and domineering, like it was the ruler of that place.

Most importantly, once the sword appeared, Chu Feng's battle power completely surpassed her own.

She was able to sense that Chu Feng's battle power was now comparable to that of a rank two True Immortal.

All of this was because of that enormous golden sword.

"Who are you?" The woman asked.

She was very calm. Even though Chu Feng had unleashed his Ancient Era's War Sword, there was no trace of fear in the young woman's eyes.

"You tell me who you are first, and then I'll tell you who I am," Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, that woman suddenly smiled.

Her smile was truly charming. It was as if a lotus flower had bloomed on a vast region of ice that extended for ten thousand miles. It was an extremely beautiful sight, capable of charming anyone.

"You will not be able to know who I am."

"However, I will definitely know who you are," The woman said to Chu Feng with a smile.

Her smile was truly beautiful. That woman was most definitely someone who could cause the devastation of an entire state or country with her smile.

However, Chu Feng felt a deep sense of danger from her smile.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng was unafraid. Not only that, but he too smiled.

“I dare to guarantee that if you do not tell me who you are, you will definitely not be able to find out who I am,” Chu Feng said.

“Hard-mouthed,” said the woman. The sharpness in her eyes grew much more intense. Then, cyan-colored flames began to spread outward from her body.

Like a suit of armor, the cyan-colored flames covered her body.

Although they were clearly flames, they did not emit heat upon their appearance.

Instead, they were emitting a bone-piercing coldness. Soon, that chilly sensation filled the entire vast hall.

At that moment, even Chu Feng felt the cold to be slightly unbearable.

The reason for that was because that woman’s aura had increased to that of a rank two True Immortal.

“Young sis, to be honest, you’re quite remarkable,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Although Chu Feng appeared to be completely calm, his heart was already in complete turmoil.

It was common knowledge that once one reached the True Immortal realm, regardless of whether it might be Divine Bodies or Inherited Bloodlines, all abilities that could increase one’s battle power would be restricted.

Only those with exceptional talent were capable of undoing the restrictions.

Thus, all those that were capable of undoing those restrictions were people superior to ordinary individuals. They were giants among men.

As for this woman, not only had she managed to undo the restriction of her Divine Power, but her Divine Power was also capable of allowing her to increase her cultivation by an entire level.

This sufficiently demonstrated just how powerful her Divine Power was.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng was still unafraid. After all, he was not an ordinary rank one True Immortal either.

“You dare continue to act this cheeky?”

The woman did not grow angry at Chu Feng’s teasing. Instead, a charming smile blossomed on her near-perfect face.

That said, at the same time that woman smiled, she unleashed her attack at Chu Feng.

This was merely an ordinary sword ray. However, it was many times stronger than the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill from earlier.

However, faced with the incoming sword ray, Chu Feng did not even move. At that moment, nine-colored lightning started to flicker in his eyes.

“Zzzzz~”

The next moment, Chu Feng’s oppressive might swept forth. It forcibly dispersed the incoming sword ray.

“You...”

At that moment, the woman finally lost her calm. Not only were her eyes filled with astonishment, but even her previously completely composed and calm face had turned to one of deep shock.

She stopped her attack and started to size Chu Feng up. Her beautiful eyes were running over Chu Feng’s body nonstop. As for the main subject of her inspection, it was the character ‘Divine’ formed by the gathering of lightnings on Chu Feng’s forehead.

After sizing Chu Feng up, the woman smiled sweetly again.

She smiled very beautifully. It was as if all that had happened earlier was merely a misunderstanding.

She said, “So you’re actually someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Never would I expect that the Chu Heavenly Clan would actually hide a person like you. That Lightning Mark on your forehead is extremely extraordinary.”

“Could it be that you’ve trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?”

Chu Feng smiled lightly at the woman’s question. Then, he said, “Young sis, you’ve guessed wrong. I am not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Not from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

The woman’s eyebrows were slightly raised. She smiled meaningfully. Evidently, she did not believe Chu Feng.

That said, regardless of whether or not she believed him, Chu Feng was already charmed by that woman’s smiles.

Chu Feng discovered that that woman was truly peculiar.

When she didn’t smile, she was as cold as ice and frost. She resembled an ice-cold beauty where no one could reach her eyes.

However, when she did smile, she appeared extremely lovely and charming. It was as if she could lure one’s soul in with her smile.

If she was a celestial fairy untainted by anything when she didn’t smile, then she would be a demonic woman capable of seducing all living things when she did smile.

Chapter 2694 - The Master Of This Place

“What is your name?” The woman asked.

“Tell me your name first,” Chu Feng said.

“You really do not know me?” The woman asked.

“I really don’t,” Chu Feng said.

At that moment, the woman raised her lips in a slightly proud manner. She was skeptical of Chu Feng’s answer.

“It’s alright. Sooner or later, you’ll know it. However... that thing does not belong to you. Return it to me. If you are to do that, I will not make things difficult for you,” The woman pointed to the sphere Chu Feng held in his hand.

“Why must I give it to you? I found it,” Chu Feng said as he fiddled with the sphere in his hand.

“You truly have a way of arguing. Are you to say that what you find in another’s home is yours?” The woman asked.

“This place is evidently not set up by you,” Chu Feng pointed to the grand formation.

“However, this place does indeed belong to me,” The woman said.

“How can you prove that?” Chu Feng asked.

“If I am to prove it, you are to tell me your name. What say you?” The woman said.

Chu Feng pondered for a moment. Then, he said, “That’ll do.”

“Then it’s decided,” The woman said.

“It’s a deal,” Chu Feng said.

“An absolute promise,” The woman added.

After saying that, the woman walked toward Chu Feng, and then past him.

When she approached him, Chu Feng was able to clearly smell her fragrance.

That fragrance didn’t seem to be emitted by some sort of substance. Rather, it seemed to be emitted by the woman’s body.

This was... the fragrance of her body. [1. Body odor yo!]

Chu Feng had to admit that that woman was a rare beauty. At the very least... she was very delightful to the eyes.

At that moment, the woman was standing before the grand formation. She took out a special title plate and tossed it into the spirit formation.

Then, she began to form hand seals single-handedly. After that, she lightly shouted, “Halt!”

The next moment, that grand formation actually stopped.

Then, the woman changed her hand seals and shouted, "Turn!"

The next moment, that grand formation resumed its operation.

"This place really is her territory," Her Lady Queen was surprised. Evidently, not even she had anticipated for this place to be the woman's territory.

As for Chu Feng, he noticed more than just that. When that woman was controlling her title plate, Chu Feng noticed that she was actually also a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Evidently, that woman was not inferior to him in both her talent for martial cultivation and world spirit techniques. After all, she was even younger than Chu Feng.

From an initial estimation, Chu Feng felt that the woman was most likely a demon-level genius on the same level as Li Yue'er.

"Go ahead and tell me your name," The woman turned around and asked Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng," Chu Feng said.

"And here you said you're not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan," The woman revealed a proud expression. She felt that her guess earlier was correct.

"I am indeed not from the Chu Heavenly Clan," Chu Feng said.

"Stubborn. However, it's alright. I will investigate you properly," The woman said.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's expression suddenly changed. His heartbeat actually started to accelerate.

"I did not know that this place actually possessed an owner. I was wrong to have intruded without permission. As such, I will apologize to you here," Chu Feng clasped his fist at the woman and bowed.

"Those who do not know are not at fault. It will do for you to return it to me," The woman pointed to the sphere Chu Feng held in his hand.

"Woosh~~~"

Chu Feng tossed the sphere to the woman. He said, "I will make up for what I owe you in the future."

After he said those words, Chu Feng turned around and prepared to leave.

"Chu Feng."

However, that woman suddenly called out to him.

"Young sis, what's wrong? Are you not planning to let me go?" Chu Feng asked with a smile on his face.

"Chu Feng, you must promise me that you will definitely keep this place confidential. You cannot tell anyone about this place," The woman said.

"Definitely," Chu Feng said.

"In that case, I hope that we will meet again some day," The woman said with a smile.

Her smile was extremely enchanting. It was also very gentle. Seeing that smile, one would feel intoxicated.

However, Chu Feng was not charmed by that smile.

Instead, he smiled lightly and said, "Likewise, farewell."

After saying those words, Chu Feng directly left.

Chu Feng was walking very fast. After exiting, he immediately started to rapidly walk toward the outside of the Sacred Mountain.

"Why are you walking so hurriedly? Why not chat with that girl some more? This Queen felt that she had quite a decent impression of you."

"For her to possess such talent and such cultivation, she most definitely possesses a deep background."

"If you are to befriend her, it will help you gain a foothold in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm," Her Lady Queen said.

"For some unknown reason, I suddenly have a very uneasy feeling. This sort of feeling makes me feel that I must leave this place quickly," Chu Feng said.

That sort of feeling was something that Chu Feng only felt after that woman activated the grand formation.

“Moreover, that woman herself is also very dangerous. She was trying to kill me earlier.”

“However, she suddenly had a change in attitude,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s because you revealed your Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique and increased your battle power. On top of that, you also revealed the overwhelming might of your Ancient Era’s War Sword. She was no match for you,” Her Lady Queen said.

“No, it’s not because of that,” Chu Feng said.

“What would it be if it wasn’t that?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“It’s because she felt that I was from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, she is not afraid of me. Rather, she was giving face to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Moreover, she never feared me the entire time. She most definitely possesses something she can rely on. At the very least, she felt that I would definitely not be a match for her,” Chu Feng said.

“What sort of thing do you think she has still?” Her Lady Queen said.

“She either possesses an ability that can surpass me or... she has a helper,” Chu Feng said.

“That would be bad then. Quickly, leave this place. Furthermore... do not proceed to the vortex leading to the wasteland for now. You don’t want them to find that,” Her Lady Queen said.

“That’s what I was thinking too.”

“Eggy, say, do you think this is what they mean by a meeting of minds?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Look at the situation! You still have the heart to joke around at a time like this? Quickly, start running!” Her Lady Queen urged.

“Yes, Milady,” Chu Feng said with a smile. After he finished saying that, he revealed all of his abilities and started to run rapidly toward the outside of the mountain.

.....

Meanwhile, inside the vast hall. An old man had appeared beside that woman.

Chu Feng had guessed correctly. Sure enough, that woman wasn't alone.

That man was wearing a gray-colored sackcloth gown. His gown was very shabby-looking. In fact, there were patches everywhere. Yet, it was completely spotless.

Furthermore, that old man had a head of white hair. Furthermore, he had a long, snow-white, beard.

Most importantly, that old man's aura was extremely profound. One could not see through it.

“Master, why have I never heard of a Chu Feng from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The woman asked the old man.

“Didn't he say that he wasn't from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The old man said with a faint laugh.

“Not from the Chu Heavenly Clan? I don't believe that,” The woman shook her head.

“Haha,” The old man laughed louder. There was a trace of ridicule in his laughter.

The woman was able to sense the ridicule in her master's laughter. Thus, she asked, “Master, he really isn't from the Chu Heavenly Clan? Could it be... he's from another Upper Realm?”

“That's unknown,” The old man said.

“You should've said that sooner. If he wasn't from the Chu Heavenly Clan, I wouldn't have let him go,” The woman said.

“There's no harm in letting him go,” The old man said.

“What if he is to reveal this location to others?” The woman said.

“He won’t,” The old man said.

“Master, why do you trust him so much? Could it be that you know him?” The woman asked.

“I naturally do not know him. Merely, my intuition tells me that child possesses a decent character. He should be one to keep his promise,” The old man said.

“Master, since you say it like that, I am relieved. After all, Master has never been mistaken about someone before,” The woman said.

“That said, that man was quite strange. He actually said that he owed me and would compensate me in the future. What did he mean by that?”

The woman seemed to realize that Chu Feng’s words had some sort of implied meaning. However, she was unable to understand what he meant by that. n0Ve(LB-In

“He naturally owes you,” The old man said.

“He owes me?” The woman asked.

“Foolish girl. You should inspect the natural energies contained in that Primal Chaos Metamorphosis Sphere carefully,” The old man said.

Hearing those words, the woman started to sense the Primal Chaos Metamorphosis Sphere. Upon doing so, her expression immediately changed.

“It’s actually empty?! It has accumulated natural energies for ten whole years, it should be full by now. Why would it be empty?”

The woman looked to the old man. Her beautiful eyes were flickering nonstop. She seemed to want to find an answer.

As for the old man, he merely smiled and didn’t say anything.

“It’s him, it’s that Chu Feng.”

“But, how did he manage to accomplish that? I can tell that the spirit formation outside should’ve just been set up not long ago. He should have only been in here for a short period of time.”

“How did he manage to completely plunder all of the natural energies contained in the Primal Chaos Metamorphosis Sphere in such a short period of time?” The woman was extremely puzzled.

She knew very well that one needed to use a treasure of equal level to extract the natural energies in the Primal Chaos Metamorphosis Sphere.

Apart from that, there was only one other method. That was to directly refine the natural energies.

However, the natural energies contained inside the sphere were gathered by the spirit formation and then forcibly compressed into the sphere. As such, the nature of the natural energies had changed. They had become exceptionally berserk. It was simply impossible for people to refine it.

“I don’t know either. It is already extraordinary that that child was able to find this place,” The old man said.

“Damn it! No wonder he said those words and escaped so quickly. So he was actually a thief.”

“No, I must go find him and have a word with him,” After the woman finished saying those words, she immediately rushed outside.

Chapter 2695 - Strange Gate

“It’s too late, he has already left,” The old man said.

“Damn it,” Hearing those words, the woman started to stomp her feet angrily. There was even killing intent in her eyes.

“Master, why didn’t you stop him when you knew he had stolen the natural energies?”

“Should I have waited ten years in vain?” The woman grumbled to the old man.

“Haha, I’ve already said that I’m leaving this place to you. Thus, you are to manage this place.”

“Since you failed to manage this place properly, you cannot blame others,” The old man said with a smile on his face.

“Humph.”

The woman curled her lips. Although it was an adorable look, the expression in her eyes grew more and more complicated. One could not fathom what she was thinking.

.....

Not long after Chu Feng left that place, the feeling of unease gradually disappeared.

Merely, Chu Feng still did not dare to proceed for the light vortex. He was afraid that the woman possessed the backing of an expert, and that that expert was secretly tailing him.

That light vortex was connected to the mystical wasteland. Chu Feng did not wish for others to find out about it.

That said, Chu Feng was feeling unreconciled. Thus, after he walked down the mountain, he did not leave immediately. Instead, he continued his observation of the Sacred Mountain from outside.

Chu Feng felt that with how vast and mystical the Sacred Mountain was, it might be possible that the spirit formation he had discovered was not the only thing people had utilized the Sacred Mountain for. Perhaps there were others that had left things behind in the Sacred Mountain.

To Chu Feng’s joy, not long afterward, he discovered another unusual region.

That place was not as obvious as the place with the grand formation that was controlled by that woman. However, Chu Feng was certain that this place was definitely strange.

Thus, Chu Feng entered the Sacred Mountain again and proceeded directly toward that location.

That place was the same as the grand formation capable of absorbing natural energies that he had discovered earlier. Upon reaching it, however, Chu Feng was unable to discover anything special about this place.

This meant that whoever concealed it had concealed it extremely well.

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng could only set up the Secret Ground Revealment Formation to use with his Heaven's Eyes.

Fortunately, Chu Feng succeeded again.

There was a remnant hidden deep beneath the ground.

Merely, Chu Feng was unable to enter that remnant. The reason for that was because there was only a single entrance. The entrance was a large, dark purple gate.

That gate was a hundred meters tall and fifty meters wide. It stood before Chu Feng like a small mountain. Compared to it, Chu Feng appeared to be extremely small.

The gate seemed to be made of stone. However, it was extremely tough. With the strength that Chu Feng possessed, he was simply unable to force the gate open.

Furthermore, carvings filled the entire gate. Those carvings were all skulls. It was a very malevolent and frightening sight.

Those were not only human skulls. There were also many monstrous beast skulls. Those skulls looked very vivid and lifelike. It was truly extremely strange.

Upon seeing the gate, Her Lady Queen said, "Chu Feng, this remnant is likely very remarkable."

"Eggy, by remarkable, do you mean that this remnant is very dangerous, or that it contains treasures?" Chu Feng asked.

"Merely this gate is already emitting an overwhelming demonic aura. Likely, this remnant is extremely dangerous."

"I think that it is best that you do not open that gate," Her Lady Queen said.

Her Lady Queen was rarely afraid of anything. However, that gate caused her to feel extremely uneasy.

"Even if I wanted to open that gate, I would not be able to. A special key is required," Chu Feng said as he pointed to the center of the giant gate.

There was a recess at that location. That recess was very small. It was roughly the size of two palms.

The shape of that recess was very peculiar. From its shape, one could tell that the key to the gate was also extraordinary.

“Since we can’t open it, let’s leave,” Her Lady Queen urged.

She was feeling increasingly more uneasy, and wanted Chu Feng to leave this place quickly.

Her Lady Queen felt that this remnant was an ominous place.

“Yes, Milady Queen. This servant will leave immediately,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. Then, he left that place and began to walk toward the outside of the Sacred Mountain.

“Milady Queen, why did you urge me to leave? Could it be that... you also felt that sort of uneasy sensation?” Chu Feng asked.

“So you also felt it?” Her Lady Queen was very shocked.

“I have. However... you’re still in my world spirit space. You shouldn’t have been able to sense that sort of uneasiness.”

“It would appear that this should be visual shock. Merely by seeing it, one would feel uneasy all over one’s body,” Chu Feng said.

“What do you mean by that?” Her Lady Queen said.

“There are only two possibilities. Either unpredictable danger is really contained behind that gate, or the uneasy feeling was an illusion deliberately put in place by the creator of this place.”

“It could be that this giant gate is not as dangerous as it appears to be. Merely, the illusion that brings about unease will scare away all those that arrive there,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, which possibility do you think is true?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“It’s hard to tell. Either one could be true,” Chu Feng said.

“After hearing what you said, I feel that the second possibility is true,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Why is that?” Chu Feng asked.

“What sort of thing could possibly make this Queen feel fear? It is most definitely an illusion, most definitely fake,” Her Lady Queen raised her exceptionally beautiful face and spoke in a very proud manner.

“Mn, that must be the case. I agree with you,” Chu Feng echoed agreement with a pretend serious expression.

After that, Chu Feng walked down the Sacred Mountain again and began to continue to survey the Sacred Mountain using his Heaven’s Eyes.

This time around, Chu Feng made an entire trip around the Sacred Mountain. However, he was unable to discover anything else unusual.

This caused Chu Feng to feel slightly disappointed. That Sacred Mountain was simply too vast. Chu Feng had surveyed the Sacred Mountain for an entire week. Yet, he was unable to find anything.

Naturally, he would feel somewhat disappointed.

After finding nothing while surveying the Sacred Mountain from the outside, he did not blindly enter. Instead, he returned to Song Xi’s home.

Chu Feng had returned to bid farewell to Song Xi. Chu Feng was planning to leave.

At that time, Song Xi’s mother was still unconscious. However, both her aura and appearance no longer resembled that of a sick individual.

This made Song Xi feel with greater certainty that Chu Feng had truly completely removed the poison from his mother’s body. Seeing Chu Feng’s return, Song Xi was extremely grateful, and started to thank him repeatedly. He even knelt to Chu Feng.

“That’s enough. Why are you always this courteous? How many times must I tell you to stop acting like this?” Chu Feng cast a side eye at Song Xi.

“Chu Feng, it is truly not that I am being overly courteous. Rather, you are the person who saved my mother’s life. The grace that you’ve bestowed upon me

is simply so enormous that I am simply unable to return the favor.”
n((OvElb1n

“If I do not thank you some more, I, Song Xi, will truly have been ungrateful,”
Song Xi said.

“Who said that you’re unable to return the favor? I will give you the chance to
do so right now,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, please go ahead and order me to do anything. Even if you want
me to climb a mountain of blades or pass through a sea of flames, I, Song Xi,
will not hesitate in the slightest,” Song Xi said.

“It’s not that serious. Merely, do you know where I can find materials to create
weapons with?” Chu Feng asked Song Xi.

Although Song Xi’s cultivation was not very strong, he was someone who had
traveled extensively. Although he couldn’t be said to be someone with a vast
amount of knowledge, he was someone who knew about the general situation
of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Although Chu Feng was impatient to find Wang Qiang and the others, he
could not forget about his mission in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Since he was unable to find Wang Qiang and the others, Chu Feng could only
continue on with his mission.

Chu Feng’s mission was no ordinary mission. His mission was to obtain the
acknowledgement of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

If Chu Feng wanted to obtain the Chu Heavenly Clan’s acknowledgement, he
had to increase his cultivation quickly.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng had refined a vast amount of natural energies in
that grand formation located in the Sacred Mountain, he now had enough
natural energies to make multiple breakthroughs in his cultivation.

Right now, what Chu Feng needed the most, was to reach the junction to
make a breakthrough in cultivation. Through the All Equilibrium Weaponry
Refinement Chart, Chu Feng would be able to obtain martial comprehension.
This would allow him the opportunity to reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

The only problem was that he needed materials to refine weapons with. Currently, Chu Feng did not possess very good materials. That was why he had to search for weaponry refinement materials.

Chapter 2696 - Immortal Armament Villa

“Materials for weaponry refinement, is it? What sort of quality materials do you need?” Song Xi asked.

“I need materials capable of strengthening Incomplete Immortal Armaments,” Chu Feng said.

After the battle with that woman, Chu Feng realized that although his Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler was an Incomplete Immortal Armament, it was not a top quality item.

Thus, Chu Feng needed to strengthen the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler. After strengthening it, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler would also be able to increase his battle power even more.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that the strengthening process would also provide him with martial comprehension.

This would be the best of both worlds.

“Materials capable of strengthening Incomplete Immortal Armaments? That would be hard to obtain. Let me think about it,” Song Xi placed his hand under his chin and started to think.

“Got it! I thought of a place that I think you can try out,” Song Xi suddenly said.

“What sort of place?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is a place that I have only heard of before, and never been to,” Song Xi said.

“Go ahead and tell me exactly what sort of place that is,” Chu Feng said.

“The Immortal Armament Villa. They have been in existence for a very long time. They are one of the most amazing powers specialized in refining Immortal Armaments in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“Every year, the Immortal Armament Villa will conduct a hunt. This hunt is open to all of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm’s younger generations.”

“However, there are two conditions. Firstly, one’s age cannot surpass a hundred years old. Those older than that will not be able to participate in the hunt.”

“Secondly, one must be a world spiritist. The reason for that is because one’s martial power will be sealed off in the hunt. The only thing that one can use is spirit power.”

“Those who participate in the hunt will be ranked according to their results. The higher one’s rank, the greater reward one will obtain. I have heard that the rewards are various precious materials. Furthermore, if one is able to obtain first place in the hunt, one will be able to obtain an Incomplete Immortal Armament forged by the Immortal Armament Villa.”

“Judging from the time, this Immortal Armament Villa’s hunt will happen soon. Judging from the distance, if you are to proceed for the Immortal Armament Villa right now, you should be able to get there in time,” Song Xi said.

“I guess this is what they mean by ‘it is better to arrive at the right moment than to arrive early’. This hunt has simply been prepared for me.”

Chu Feng was extremely happy upon finding out about this. To him, this was a great opportunity.

“Chu Feng, so you’re planning to go there?” Song Xi asked.

“Of course. I’ll be leaving right now,” Chu Feng said.

“I have a request. Might it be possible...” At that moment, Song Xi wanted to say something but then hesitated.

Chu Feng was able to see through Song Xi’s intention. Thus, he asked, “You want to accompany me?”

“Hehe. Actually, I have always wanted to experience the world. This time around, it will be a great opportunity. Are you able to bring me with you?” Song Xi asked.

“Of course,” Chu Feng answered straightforwardly.

“In that case, let’s leave right away,” Song Xi was even more impatient than Chu Feng.

After all, Song Xi was fond of traveling the world. He had only returned because of his mother’s illness.

And now, his mother’s poison had been removed. Furthermore, Aunt Jing was taking care of her. Thus, Song Xi was finally able to leave at ease.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, “Song Xi, there’s actually one thing that I’ve wanted to tell you the entire time. I think that you should bring your mother and leave this place.”

“Why’s that?” Song Xi revealed a confused expression.

“The people of the Zhao Mansion are rather dim-witted. To put it simply, they’re very stupid.”

“I fear that my threat might not be effective.”

“If they were to grow daring and take revenge upon you and your mother, what could you possibly do?” Chu Feng said.

There was nothing in this world that was absolutely impossible. Although the Zhao Mansion was utterly weak and unable to withstand a single blow in Chu Feng’s eyes, he was unable to be certain that they would not seek revenge upon Song Xi and his mother once he left.

After all, Chu Feng had experienced the disaster of having his entire family exterminated by his enemies. Thus, he was extremely careful in this aspect.

However, Chu Feng was unable to eliminate everyone from the Zhao Mansion because of Song Xi. This would not be reasonable.

Furthermore... Chu Feng had found out from Song Xi that the Zhao Mansion’s young master was a disciple of the Great Mountain Monastery.

Thus, even if Chu Feng were to really eliminate the Zhao Mansion, their young master would definitely not spare Song Xi.

Thus, the best way of doing things would be to have Song Xi and his mother leave.

“Chu Feng, truth be told, if I were able to leave, I would’ve done so already.”

“Merely, my mother is completely insistent on not leaving this place. She is determined to spend her last years here. I cannot refuse to respect her wishes,” Song Xi said.

“In that case, you must still prepare against the unexpected.”

“If you do not mind, I can set up a protection formation around your residence,” Chu Feng said.

“That would most definitely be for the best. Merely... I’ll have to trouble you again,” Song Xi said.

“It’s not troubling at all,” Chu Feng smiled.

Although Chu Feng declared that it was not troubling, it took him quite a lot of effort to set up that protection formation.

In order to prevent against the unexpected, Chu Feng set up a very powerful defensive formation. This defensive formation was invisible and formless when not activated. Others would simply not know that it was there.

With this spirit formation, one could only leave Song Xi’s home, and not enter

If one wanted to enter Song Xi’s home, one would need a key.

Without the key, only True Immortal-level experts would be able to destroy the protection formation. If one were to attempt to breach the defensive formation without the cultivation of a True Immortal, one would instead be injured by the grand formation.

“Chu Feng, I truly do not know how to thank you for all this.”

At that moment, Song Xi was tightly holding onto the world spirit key that Chu Feng gave him. The rims of his eyes had turned red again.

“Enough with that. C’mon, let’s go,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Then, Chu Feng and Song Xi proceeded toward the Immortal Armament Villa.

The Great Chilocosm Upper Realm possessed a lot of martial cultivation experts. Naturally, there were also quite a few powerful world spiritists.

Not to mention Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, there were even many Exalted-cloak World Spiritists here.

Thus, there were many powers established by world spiritists in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Some of those powers specialized in setting up formations. Some specialized in healing injuries and some specialized in concocting medicines.

As for the Immortal Armament Villa, they could be said to be the strongest in terms of weaponry refinement in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Because of that, the Immortal Armament Villa was invited by the Starfall Holy Land to become their honored guest. n.-∅(.∇..e/.l.-ℓ-/1.)n

That's right, the Immortal Armament Villa was an honored guest, and not a subsidiary power.

In other words, the Immortal Armament Villa received the protection of the Starfall Holy Land without having to offer tribute.

Such treatment from the Starfall Holy Land also served to illustrate how amazing the Immortal Armament Villa was.

After traveling for some time, Chu Feng and Song Xi finally walked out of an Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation.

Their current location was still some distance from the Immortal Armament Villa. However... it was already filled with people, and bustling with noise and excitement.

Chu Feng was able to sense that there were a lot of True Immortal-level experts among the crowd. There were simply too many people stronger than him.

However, those people were all martial cultivators who had lived for countless years.

As for martial cultivators within a hundred years of age, they were mostly Martial Ancestors. Very few among them were capable of matching Chu Feng's cultivation and age.

“This is the territory controlled by the Starfall Holy Land?” Sure enough, it’s extraordinary,” Song Xi had a very excited expression on his face.

His excited appearance was like that of a country bumpkin seeing a city for the first time. Everything he saw was novel and new, capable of stirring up his excitement.

“You’ve never been here before?” Chu Feng asked.

Logically, as Song Xi was someone that had traveled extensively, he should have been there before.

“Hehe, truth be told, I have truly not been to the Starfall Holy Land before. This is my first time here.”

“The reason for that is because the Starfall Holy Land’s territory could be said to be the most sacred and respected beside that of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s territory.”

“Thus, I had planned to save the Starfall Holy Land as the last place to visit. Merely... before I could come here, my mother fell ill,” Song Xi said.

“In that case, you’re also unfamiliar with this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“Indeed. However, I’ve made preparations,” Song Xi handed Chu Feng a scroll.

Chu Feng received the scroll and opened it. Upon opening it, he discovered that it was a map. That map contained all the territories controlled by the Starfall Holy Land.

Chapter 2697 - Starfall Holy Daughter

Through the map, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Starfall Holy Land controlled an extremely large territory.

Currently, Chu Feng and Song Xi were both within a territory controlled by the Starfall Holy Land. They were not actually at the Starfall Holy Land itself.

The location that they were at was actually still very far away from the actual Starfall Holy Land. However... it was very close to the Immortal Armament Villa.

“Do you wish to go and have a look at the Starfall Holy Land?” Chu Feng asked.

“Since we’ve already come here, I would naturally want to tour the Starfall Holy Land. Reportedly, the Starfall Holy Land is akin to a paradise on earth,” Song Xi said with an expression of anticipation.

“You’re saying that the Starfall Holy Land is even more beautiful than this?” Chu Feng said as he swept his gaze around.

The scenery was extremely beautiful. The plants and trees were lush, the sky was blue and the clouds were white. Rarely-seen flowers and plants covered the ground, emitting fascinating aromas.

This was especially true for a mountain range in the near distance. It was extremely fascinating.

The peak of that mountain range reached the sky itself, and pierced through the clouds.

Many silvery-white waterfalls were flowing down from the mountain. They were like white dragons entering the sea, and appeared extremely imposing.

Moreover, there were purple mists that filled the vast mountain range like a sea of clouds. This made that mountain range appear dreamlike.

“Although this place is very beautiful already, scenery comparable to this is actually very commonly seen in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“However, the beautiful sceneries of the Starfall Holy Land are completely unique and unmatched in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm,” Song Xi said in a very certain manner.

“In that case, we will truly have to go and experience it. However, before that, I must go to the Immortal Armament Villa first,” Chu Feng said.

Although the two of them were already in the Starfall Holy Land’s territory, the Starfall Holy Land was located in the Southeastern region.

As for the Immortal Armament Villa, it was located in the West.

It just so happened that they were in two completely different locations.

Chu Feng was worried that he would not make it to the Immortal Armament Villa's hunt should he proceed for the Starfall Holy Land first and then return.

"Mn, let's go to the Immortal Armament Villa first. After all, proper business comes first. Hehe," Song Xi chuckled.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, a rainbow suddenly flew down from the direction of the mountain range. It was a martial cultivator.

"Everyone, follow me. I have heard news that the Starfall Holy Land's Lady Holy Daughter is currently training at the Purplecloud Immortal Peak. Everyone, let's go and feast our eyes."

Before that martial cultivator even arrived, he shouted in Chu Feng's direction.

His voice was very loud and clear. It was like thunder, shaking everything around him.

After saying those words, he turned around and began to fly toward the mountain range covered with purple mist in the distance.

In the moments following his shout, the people present all burst into an uproar. Everyone soared into the sky and began to fly toward that mountain range.

"Chu Feng, quickly, quickly, we must go and have a look!" Song Xi shouted to Chu Feng with excitement.

He was even pushing Chu Feng to urge Chu Feng to quickly bring him there.

When Song Xi's hand came in contact with Chu Feng, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense that Song Xi was trembling. Song Xi was actually this excited?.

As such, Chu Feng decided to follow the crowd. He also soared into the sky with Song Xi and began to fly toward the mountain range.

That said, Chu Feng was very curious as to what was happening.

Thus, with a smile on his face, Chu Feng teased Song Xi, “Song Xi, who is that that so-called Holy Daughter? She’s actually managed to make you this excited?”

“Chu Feng, you don’t know about it. The Starfall Holy Land will select a man and a woman with the strongest talent in the Starfall Holy Land.”

“That man is known as the Holy Son, whereas the woman is known as the Holy Daughter.”

“As for the Holy Son and Holy Daughter, one among them will definitely become the future Headmaster of the Starfall Holy Land.”

“As for the other, they will also obtain a very important position within the Starfall Holy Land. Furthermore, their status will be second to only the Starfall Holy Land’s Headmaster.”

“Originally, the Starfall Holy Land had a pair of Holy Son and Holy Daughter. If they were still alive now, they would be roughly a thousand years old.”

“However, the two of them suddenly disappeared sixty-three years ago. There was no news from them, and whether they are dead or alive is unknown.”

“Because of that, the Starfall Holy Land decided to once again select a Holy Son and Holy Daughter.”

“Sixty-three years ago, Song Yunfei was chosen as the new Holy Son. However, there was no suitable candidate for the title of Holy Daughter.”

“Finally, ten years ago, a new Holy Daughter was chosen. However, the new Holy Daughter has never revealed herself ever since she was chosen. As such, no one has managed to see what she looks like.”

“It was only a year ago that the Starfall Holy Land’s new Holy Daughter revealed herself.”

“When the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter revealed herself, it was an enormous uproar. All the various younger generations from all around the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm gathered to see her. Even those demon-level characters with outstanding talent showed up.”

“This was especially true for the men. They were all raising their heads to get a better look at her.”

“The reason for that was because the successive generations of the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Sons and Holy Daughters were not only extraordinarily talented, but they also possessed outstanding appearances.”

“If all young men have a woman that they yearn for in their hearts, then the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter would be the woman that the majority of young men yearn for.”

“Furthermore, it’s said that the Starfall Holy Land’s newest Holy Daughter was so very beautiful that her beauty was simply akin to that of a celestial fairy. She was even said to be the most beautiful Holy Daughter in all of history.”

“Even the many demon-level geniuses that were present at the time were deeply charmed by her looks.”

“From that point on, the Starfall Holy Land’s newest Holy Daughter was deemed to be one of the Three Great Beauties in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“And now, the Holy Daughter is right before our eyes. How could we possibly miss this opportunity to see her?”

The more Song Xi explained, the more excited he became. When he finished explaining, he was on the verge of drooling.

“Haha, look at yourself, is this how one should act?” Chu Feng openly mocked Song Xi.

While the two of them were chatting, they entered the mountain range with the crowd and arrived at the foot of a mountain peak.

That mountain peak continued deep into the clouds. It was the highest peak in the mountain range.

Through using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see that there was a palace at the top of the mountain peak.

Through the conversations from the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng came to find out that the so-called Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter was inside that palace.

Merely, a spirit formation had been placed on that palace. Thus, Chu Feng was unable to see through that palace even with his Heaven's Eyes.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed that there was a spirit formation outside the palace. That spirit formation was invisible. Yet, it was able to prevent others from approaching the palace.

With that spirit formation there, not to mention entering the palace, the people here would not even be able to approach the top of the mountain peak.

Apart from the spirit formation, there were eight old men standing around the palace.

Chu Feng was rather shocked upon seeing those eight old men. The reason for that was because the eight of them actually looked exactly the same.

The eight of them were all wearing snow-white gowns and had ice-cold expressions. The eight of them did not even blink. It was as if they were completely devoid of emotions.

If it wasn't for the breeze lifting their long gowns and white beards, one would really end up thinking they were sculptures.

Although Chu Feng was unable to sense the eight old men's auras, he was able to guess that the eight of them must be extremely frightening existences.

Perhaps the people that had shown up had also noticed the eight old men, and that was why none of them dared to ascend the mountain peak.

The reason for that was because they were also afraid. They were not merely afraid of the eight old men. More than them, they were afraid of the Starfall Holy Land.

"Sure enough, the rumors are true. The Starfall Eight Immortals are actually here. It would appear that the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter is truly as beautiful as she is rumored to be," Upon seeing the eight old men, Song Xi grew even more excited.

“What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“According to the rumors, the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter is protected by the Starfall Eight Immortals,” Song Xi said.

“Who are these Starfall Eight Immortals? Why do they resemble each other so much?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course they resemble one another. The eight of them are biological brothers. They are octuplets,” Song Xi said.

“Octuplets?” Chu Feng was shocked. He thought to himself, ‘Their mother was truly capable in giving birth.’

“The Starfall Eight Immortals are extremely famous in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. The reason for that is because not only are they octuplets, but they are also Martial Immortal-level experts,” Song Xi added.

“Martial Immortal?”

Chu Feng felt deep veneration for the Starfall Eight Immortals upon hearing those words. He finally realized why the people present were so scared of the eight old men on the mountain peak, and were even whispering when they spoke.

Above True Immortals were Heavenly Immortals. Above Heavenly Immortals were Martial Immortals. Martial Immortal was an extremely powerful realm of cultivation.

At the very least, it was a realm of cultivation that Chu Feng and the others present would not be able to contend against in the slightest.

.....

Even though the people present could only stand at the bottom of the mountain peak and were simply unable to see the Holy Daughter, more and more people continued to arrive. The women that arrived soon left upon finding out the situation. However, practically not a single man was willing to leave.

It was as if being able to be in contact with that Holy Daughter at a close distance for even a short moment was an enormous honor to them.

“If I am able to see the Holy Daughter, it would be all worth it even if I am to die afterward.” They all thought.

Many people began to sigh in regret. There were even some shameless individuals that actually started to extend their noses to sniff. It was as if they could sniff the scent of the Holy Daughter.

“All of you, move aside!”

Right at that moment, a resounding voice sounded from behind Chu Feng and the others.

Turning toward the sound, Chu Feng could see over a dozen men and women flying toward them from afar.

Chapter 2698 - Brought Together By Fate

These people were all members of the younger generation. They all possessed decent appearances, and were wearing gorgeous outfits.

Their level of cultivation were also very decent. This was especially true for the man leading the group. He was actually... a rank four True Immortal.

As for the others, they were mostly True Immortals too. The majority of them were rank one True Immortals. However, there were also a couple of them who were not True Immortals, but rather peak Martial Ancestors.

Although the overall cultivation of those people were all very strong, and they were all members of the younger generation, their ages were much older than Chu Feng.

Through his observation, Chu Feng discovered that while those people were all members of the younger generation who were less than a hundred years old, they were approaching a hundred years old.

Of course, martial cultivators possessed lifespans capable of reaching several thousand years, if not over ten thousand years. Thus, an age in the nineties could be said to be fairly young for martial cultivators.

Although they were older than Chu Feng, they would be considered to be extremely young people in the world of martial cultivation.

By comparison, their ages could simply be said to be akin to children who had barely trained in martial cultivation.

When the crowd managed to see those young men and women clearly, they immediately moved aside and created a road for the incoming group of people. *no ve*)L3-1n

That was not all. Chu Feng also noticed that practically everyone present revealed expressions of shock and fear.

In fact, there were many people that did not dare to look at that group of people again. When that group arrived, they all lowered their heads.

The reason for that was because the group of men and women were all wearing an identical title plate on their waist.

Chu Heavenly Clan!!!

Those young men and women were all from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Yoh, those brats from the Chu Heavenly Clan are truly showing a grand disposition of forces here.”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen curled her lips. An expression of disgust emerged in her eyes.

The reason for that was because she knew very well that if it wasn't for the fact that those people belonged to the Chu Heavenly Clan, they would simply not be able to make the people present fear them like they did, merely the cultivation they possessed.

The man leading the group passed through the crowd. He raised his head and clasped his fist as he spoke facing upward.

“I, Chu Xianshou of the Chu Heavenly Clan, have heard that the Holy Daughter is training here. Might it be possible for me to obtain the honor of chatting with the Holy Daughter?”

“So it's actually the Chu Heavenly Clan's young masters and young ladies. Our Holy Daughter has already given word to invite young masters and young ladies up for a chat,” said one of the Starfall Eight Immortals at the peak of the mountain.

His voice was very powerful and penetrating.

However, that was reasonable too. According to Chu Feng's observation, he discovered that the invisible spirit formation was not only capable of preventing others from approaching, but it was also capable of isolating sound.

In other words, the old man from the Starfall Holy Land must be using special methods to allow others to hear his voice.

Upon hearing what the old man said, that Chu Xianshuo revealed a proud smile. Then, he led the other Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation and flew up to the summit of the mountain peak.

Due to the fact that they were given permission, they were not blocked by the invisible spirit formation and successfully entered the mountain peak.

At that moment, the people below were all extremely envious. This was especially true for the men. They were openly revealing their envy.

"In the end, they're people from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Even the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter will have to give them face."

Chu Feng was able to hear what they were saying. Everyone was feeling great envy toward the Chu Heavenly Clan's young masters and young ladies.

"Based on what's being said, is it very difficult for one to see the Holy Daughter?" Chu Feng asked.

"Difficult, extremely difficult. Reportedly, many demon-level geniuses wanted to see the Holy Daughter. However, they were all refused," Song Xi said.

"Oh? In that case, this Holy Daughter is quite a proud character," Chu Feng said with a smile.

Then, Chu Feng looked toward the summit of the mountain peak. He then said to Song Xi, "It seems that those people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were also refused."

The reason for that was because Chu Feng saw that while the young masters and young ladies from the Chu Heavenly Clan managed to reach the summit of the mountain peak, they were unable to enter the palace.

Even though that invisible spirit formation had isolated all sound, Chu Feng was able to determine what they were saying by reading their lips.

The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were only able to converse with the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter from outside the palace. Even they were refused entry into the palace.

This sort of situation was something that the young masters and young ladies from the Chu Heavenly Clan did not expect. Thus, their current expressions were quite ugly.

This was especially true for that man called Chu Xianshuo.

However, perhaps it was due to the strength of the Starfall Eight Immortals, but the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan did not speak rudely. They could only silently accept the restriction.

"They've actually really been refused," After hearing what Chu Feng said, Song Xi also noticed what was happening and felt extremely shocked.

"Haha. This Holy Daughter is truly interesting. She said she's going to chat with them, and she's really just chatting with them without showing her face to them."

"With this, those people from the Chu Heavenly Clan must be dumbstruck."

"It would appear that the identity of being part of the Chu Heavenly Clan is not effective on everyone either. Hahaha."

Her Lady Queen was rejoicing at the misfortune of those young masters and young ladies of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

"That said, Chu Feng, this is bad. Never would I have expected that Chu Xianshuo to come here again," Song Xi said worriedly to Chu Feng through a voice transmission.

"Could it be that they've also come to participate in the Immortal Armament Villa's hunt?" Chu Feng asked.

"Most definitely. They would not appear here otherwise. Furthermore, that Chu Xianshuo is no ordinary person."

“Not only is he a well-known martial cultivation genius among the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, but he is also an amazing world spiritist.”

“Whenever he participates in the Immortal Armament Villa’s hunt, he will always obtain first place. He has already obtained first place for nine successive years now.”

“Apart from him, the other young masters and young ladies from the Chu Heavenly Clan are also not ordinary people. They are all genius world spiritists.”

“There’s actually this many people from the Chu Heavenly Clan coming to participate in the hunt this year. I’m afraid that they want to obtain all of the top ranks in the hunt,” Song Xi said worriedly.

“Don’t worry about me. The hunt has yet to begin, and the outcome is yet to be decided,” Chu Feng confronted Song Xi with a smile.

It was not only Song Xi that was discussing Chu Xianshuo; many other people present were also discussing him.

From the discussion of the crowd, Chu Feng came to find out that this Chu Xianshuo was already ninety-nine years old.

In another year, he would be a hundred years old. In other words, he would no longer be a member of the younger generation in a year’s time.

As a result, Chu Xianshuo would naturally be unable to participate in the hunt the next year.

It would be the final time he could participate in the hunt. Thus, he must have been prepared. After all, if he was to succeed this time around, he would’ve obtained first place in the hunt for ten years in succession.

Although nine and ten only possessed a single number of difference, there was an intrinsic difference between them.

Thus, Chu Xianshuo placed great importance on the hunt.

That said, although Chu Feng had already discovered that Chu Xianshuo was very powerful, he was not afraid at all.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had learned from the conversations of the surrounding people that while Chu Xianshuo was extremely talented in world spirit techniques, he was only a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

While Chu Feng's current cultivation was indeed inferior to Chu Xianshuo's, it remained that they were both Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Thus, Chu Feng did not feel that he would lose to Chu Xianshuo.

Thus, since Chu Xianshuo, a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, was able to obtain first place, Chu Feng felt that he would also have the chance to obtain first place.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a blinding light suddenly shone down from the summit of the mountain peak and landed on Chu Feng.

The sudden light shocked the crowd. Chu Feng was also shocked.

The reason for that was because that blinding light was emitted from the palm of one of the Starfall Eight Immortals.

At that moment, that light had enveloped only Chu Feng. Chu Feng did not feel any special sensation from the light. However... he had already become the focus of everyone present.

It was not only the people down below that were looking at Chu Feng with shocked expressions; even the young masters and young ladies from the Chu Heavenly Clan up above were looking at Chu Feng with complicated expressions.

At that moment, the old man who had enveloped Chu Feng with the light emitted from his palm said, “Young master, our Holy Daughter wishes to invite you.”

“What?”

Chu Feng was dumbstruck by what was suddenly said to him.

“It would appear that this old man has not spoken clearly. Since that's the case, allow me to clarify.”

“Our Holy Daughter saw you and felt that fate had brought you here. Thus, she wants to see you,” The old man said with a smile.

Chapter 2699 - Murderous Gaze

“Our Holy Daughter saw you and felt that fate had brought you here. Thus, she wants to see you,” the old man said with a smile.

“Boom~~~”

The words spoken by the old man were like a sudden clap of thunder that exploded in the hearts of everyone present.

“Fate?”

“The Holy Daughter actually felt that fate brought him here?”

At that moment, countless envious gazes began to run up and down Chu Feng’s body.

In fact, Chu Feng even received many voice transmissions.

Those voice transmissions were all from the people present. They were all asking Chu Feng how he got to know the Holy Daughter. There were also some asking for his name and a few that started to flatter him directly.

Of course, there were also reckless individuals that started to threaten Chu Feng, telling him that he must not act impudently toward the Holy Daughter unless he wanted to be taught a lesson.

It was as if the Holy Daughter belonged to them. Chu Feng felt very speechless from those threats.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt his body starting to float. Then, his body started to automatically float toward the summit of the mountain peak.

Soon, Chu Feng arrived at the summit. Upon landing on the summit, he was able to see those Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations at close range.

They were revealing very ugly gazes. In fact, Chu Feng was able to sense deep hatred and anger from their eyes.

Evidently, they who had considered themselves to be extraordinary were already feeling very displeased after being refused entrance by the Holy Daughter.

And now, someone actually managed to receive the Holy Daughter's invitation. This caused them to feel extra displeased.

"Young master, please enter."

Right at that moment, one of the Starfall Eight Immortals opened the entrance to the palace.

"Thank you."

Chu Feng courteously clasped his fist at that old man, then, showered with gazes of envy and hatred, he entered the palace.

After Chu Feng entered the palace, the entrance closed by itself.

Inside the palace, Chu Feng was able to see that the palace was much larger than he had imagined it to be.

It possessed many floors. At this moment, Chu Feng was on the first floor. It was a vast palace hall.

There were thirteen doors outside the palace hall. However, all of them were closed.

The decorations and arrangements inside the palace hall were very impressive. The palace hall itself was also emitting a dignified air all around.

That said, a faint aroma was coming from somewhere.

That aroma was very pleasant-smelling. However, it was evidently not the natural fragrance of the Holy Daughter. Instead, it should be some sort of aroma-emitting substance.

In short, being in that palace hall made one feel very comfortable.

Chu Feng did not randomly walk around the palace hall. Instead, he courteously clasped his fist and said, "I am Chu Feng. I have come here after receiving the invitation from the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter."

However, Chu Feng did not receive any response after saying those words. It was as if the palace hall was completely empty.

Feeling helpless, Chu Feng spoke again. However, he still didn't receive a response.

"The heck is this? She called you in here, but is not planning to meet you?"

"Is she trying to deliberately toy with you or deliberately putting on airs? Chu Feng, go and find her."

Her Lady Queen was growing impatient. She felt that Chu Feng was being toyed with.

The reason for that was because those people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were clearly conversing with the Holy Daughter outside the palace. This meant that she was most definitely there.

Yet, she was not showing herself to Chu Feng. There would only be a single explanation for this. That is, she did not plan to see Chu Feng.

"Let it be. I never planned to see her anyways. It's fine if she doesn't plan to see me," compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng remained very indifferent.

Then, Chu Feng clasped his fist again and said, "It would appear that the Holy Daughter is not planning to see me. Since that's the case, this one shall take his leave."

After saying those words, Chu Feng began to walk toward the exit. However, upon reaching it, Chu Feng discovered that he was unable to open the gate. Furthermore, regardless of how he knocked on the door or shouted, there was no reaction from the people outside.

He was able to clearly see the people outside and hear their conversations. Yet, it appeared that the people outside were simply unable to see or hear him.

Just like that, Chu Feng continued to stay in the palace hall for roughly an hour. Finally, the gate opened.

Merely, it was opened by the old man standing outside the gate.

When the gate opened, Chu Feng was able to sense tens of ill-intended gazes shooting toward him in a uniform manner.

Like invisible blades, they were fixed onto him. Those gazes wanted to pierce into his body, rip his flesh apart and scatter his blood all over.

Chu Feng was not surprised by the ice-cold gazes.

Perhaps this was due to the fact that Chu Feng had stayed in the palace for an entire hour.

During this period of time, the people outside had attempted to continue to chat with the Holy Daughter. This was especially true for that Chu Xianshuo. He even called out for the Holy Daughter many times in a very gentle manner.

Unfortunately, there was no response from the Holy Daughter at all.

This led those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations to feel even greater hatred for Chu Feng. In fact, he was able to sense killing intent aimed at him.

Likely, they must be thinking that the Holy Daughter had decided to ignore them because she was wholly concentrated on chatting with Chu Feng.

"Young master, have you enjoyed a delightful chat with our Holy Daughter?" That old man asked Chu Feng with a smile on his face.

He most definitely also felt those ill-intended gazes from the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. However, he was reacting as if he didn't see them at all.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled lightly. He said, "Your Holy Daughter possesses quite a personality."

"Haha. That's an interesting evaluation. It is the first time that I have heard someone giving such an evaluation of our Holy Daughter," that old man said with a faint smile.

"If there's nothing else, this one will take his leave," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was growing impatient. He felt that he had been toyed with by the Starfall Holy Land. Or, at least, he had been toyed with by the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter and the Starfall Eight Immortals.

"What is your name?"

Right at that moment, an ice-cold voice sounded. It was that Chu Heavenly Clan's Chu Xianshuo.

Chu Feng turned around and replied, "Chu Feng."

"Got it. You can go."

Chu Xianshuo waved his hand at Chu Feng impatiently. It was as if Chu Feng were his slave that he could order to leave and go at will.

However, Chu Feng did not bother to argue with him. Instead, he planned to jump down from the summit and leave.

Right at that moment, a man from the Chu Heavenly Clan's group of younger generations asked curiously, "Big brother Xianshuo, why did you ask for his name?"

"I merely wanted to know exactly who it was that stepped on such dog shit luck," Chu Xianshuo said mockingly.

"Hahaha..."

"So that's the case. I was right, how could big brother Xianshuo possibly care about a nameless nobody like that?"

After hearing what Chu Xianshuo said, those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations burst into mocking laughter.

Not only were they laughing mockingly, but they even started to belittle Chu Feng. In fact, they were even looking at Chu Feng with mocking gazes. It was as if they were looking at a weakling, mere trash.

They firmly believed that Chu Feng did not possess the courage to even turn around. Faced with their mockery, Chu Feng could only quickly escape like a feral dog.

After all, they were young masters and young ladies from the Chu Heavenly Clan. They possessed status capable of making countless people respect and revere them in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

“Taa~~~”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly stopped walking.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were startled by Chu Feng’s sudden stop. This was not what they had expected him to do.

As for what Chu Feng did next, it shocked them even more.

Chu Feng turned around and looked to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations with a smile on his face. He was not angry. Instead, he was very calm.

“Dog shit luck?”

“Could it be that you all are referring to the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter as ‘dog shit?’”

“Elders, they are disrespecting your Holy Daughter here.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng looked to the Starfall Eight Immortals.

Chapter 2700 - Being Made A Fool

At that moment, one of the Starfall Eight Immortals coughed and said to Chu Xianshuo, “Young master Chu Xianshuo, while it is fine to joke around, please pay attention to your words.”

“Senior, I most definitely did not possess any intention of offending the Holy Daughter. I...” Chu Xianshuo turned green in the face and immediately tried to explain himself.

“You don’t have the intention to offend the Holy Daughter? In that case, it would mean that your words were aimed at me?” Chu Feng interrupted Chu Xianshuo before he could finish his words.

“However, there is no grievance or hatred between us. In fact, it’s the first time that we’ve met. Why would you mock and ridicule me?”

“It couldn’t possibly be because you all wanted to see the Holy Daughter but were unable to meet her whereas I, on the other hand, managed to see her that caused you all to become jealous of me, right?”

“Did you all verbally attack me because you grew to hate me due to jealousy?”

“If I guessed correctly, you all also plan to attack me and teach me a lesson, no?” Chu Feng said.

“Bullshit! Who the hell do you think you are?! What makes you think that we would be jealous of you?!”

At that moment, all of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s young masters and young ladies were furious.

“Haha...”

However, Chu Feng actually chuckled at the furious Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations. He said, “You all know best in your hearts whether or not you’re jealous.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng took a leap and jumped down from the summit.

At that moment, those Chu Heavenly Clan’s young masters and young ladies were all gnashing their teeth angrily. Anger and murderous desire filled their eyes.

After Chu Feng descended from the summit, the crowd down below all gathered around him and began to question him.

They were all questioning Chu Feng about exactly what the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter looked like.

There were also people that asked Chu Feng whether or not he had taken advantage of the Holy Daughter.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored them. He grabbed Song Xi and planned to leave. He started flying toward the direction of the Immortal Armament Villa.

Chu Feng had already realized that those Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were planning to take care of him. Thus, he had to leave immediately.

“Chu Feng, did you manage to see the Holy Daughter? Exactly what does the Holy Daughter look like?”

Evidently, Song Xi did not notice the looming crisis. At that moment, he had a very excited expression on his face as he questioned Chu Feng.

"I didn't get to see her," Chu Feng said.

"You didn't see her? But we all clearly saw you enter the palace," Song Xi was very surprised.

"You don't believe me?" Chu Feng asked.

"No, that's not it. How could I not believe you?" Song Xi shook his head.

It was not that Song Xi did not believe Chu Feng. He was merely extremely surprised.

It was clearly the Holy Daughter who had invited Chu Feng up there. Thus, why would she not meet him?

Song Xi was truly unable to understand.

"Do you know the name of the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter?" Chu Feng asked.

"I do. Her name's Xia Yun'er. That name is truly a pleasant-sounding one," Song Xi said with a joyful smile on his face. It would appear that merely the Holy Daughter's name was enough to make him completely fascinated.

"That Xia Yun'er is not a good individual. It's best that you keep your distance from her in the future," Chu Feng whispered to Song Xi.

He was not really trying to warn Song Xi. Rather, it was more like Chu Feng was joking with him.

After all, Chu Feng was able to tell that Song Xi was completely infatuated with the Holy Daughter.

"Ah? What do you mean by that?"

Sure enough, Song Xi revealed a completely astonished expression upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

"I was made a fool of by her," Chu Feng said.

"Made a fool of?" Song Xi grew even more confused.

"She deliberately called me up there, but never even bothered to see me."

"She merely wanted those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations to feel resentful toward me."

"Even I only noticed that after leaving the palace," Chu Feng said.

“You’re kidding! Is there some sort of grievance between you and the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter?” Song Xi asked.

“I don’t think I know her,” Chu Feng said.

“Then that shouldn’t be the case, no? The Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter has always been a gentle and kind-hearted individual. Why would she try to bring harm upon you for no reason?”

“Could it be that you’re overthinking things?” Song Xi said.

“I hope that I am overthinking things,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

However, Chu Feng had realized that things were bad the moment he felt the gazes containing killing intent when he exited the palace.

From that point on, Chu Feng knew that those Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations planned to take care of him.

Those Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were most definitely not planning to let things be after mocking and sneering at him.

The reason for that was because their killing intent was very true. They were truly planning to kill Chu Feng.

That was also the reason why Chu Feng did not submit to their humiliation at the summit of the mountain peak, and instead returned their ridicule.

Since they were clearly planning to kill him, there was no need for him to submit to their humiliation.

Merely, that Chu Xianshuo’s strength surpassed his own. That was why Chu Feng immediately brought Song Xi with him and escaped.

Chu Feng’s destination was the Immortal Armament Villa. He felt that since the Immortal Armament Villa was the one holding the hunt, they should protect them once they arrived at the Immortal Armament Villa.

At the very least, they most likely wouldn’t allow the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations to act impudently.

Of course, this was merely what Chu Feng guessed would happen.

There was another possibility. That is, the Immortal Armament Villa would fear the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, they would not do anything even if the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations tried to openly kill someone in their territory.

However, there was no other choice for Chu Feng at the moment. Since he had already arrived, he couldn't let his trip be in vain. Regardless, he would have to proceed for the Immortal Armament Villa.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was rapidly traveling, a boundless oppressive might suddenly appeared before Chu Feng.

That oppressive might was extremely aggressive. It rushed straight for Chu Feng. At that very instant, a vast wind emerged, and the clouds were blown away.

Everything happened too suddenly. Chu Feng was simply unable to dodge the incoming oppressive might. He also did not have the time to react to it.

When that oppressive might enveloped Chu Feng, he lost the ability to fly, and was unable to even move a finger.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Song Xi were like two leaves. They rolled around repeatedly in the sky.

Then, they started falling straight down. “Boom!” “Boom!” Like two meteorites, Chu Feng and Song Xi crashed ruthlessly into the ground.

The two of them had pierced deep into the ground.

Chu Feng did not feel any pain after being smashed into the ground. However, he was very worried for Song Xi. After all, Song Xi's cultivation was very weak.

Thus, Chu Feng hurriedly spread his spirit power out to see how Song Xi was doing.

Fortunately, Song Xi seemed to be fine too.

It would appear that the person who had smashed them onto the ground did not plan to harm them.

At the very least... they were not planning to harm them yet.

“Hahaha. Sure enough, you're nothing more than trash.”

Right at that moment, mocking laughter sounded from the sky above.

Although Chu Feng was unable to raise his head, he was able to see the situation using his spirit power.

It was those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. All of those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations that were present on the summit earlier were in the sky above them.

The person that was restricting Chu Feng with his oppressive might was that Chu Xianshuo with a cultivation of rank four True Immortal.

"How could they appear without any sign? Could it be that they possess some sort of treasure on them that concealed their auras and allowed them to stealthily approach us?"

"That must be the case. Damn it, I was careless!"

Chu Feng started to regret not rushing away with his fastest speed.

Actually, Chu Feng was prepared for the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. He had extended his spirit power outward the entire time.

Under normal circumstances, Chu Feng would definitely have been able to detect them should Chu Xianshuo and the others chase after him.

However, it was clear that he had made a miscalculation. There could only be one possibility as to why he had miscalculated.

That is, the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation had relied on some sort of treasure that could conceal their auras to quietly chase after and overtake Chu Feng.

This was something that Chu Feng had not expected. After all, Chu Feng felt that with how proud and arrogant they were, they would definitely chase after him openly and aggressively should they want to chase after him.

He had never expected for them to be so sneaky.

However, regardless of how it happened, he had miscalculated. Because of his miscalculation, he had to pay the price.

That is, Chu Feng had lost the decisive opportunity. As his opponents had attacked first, he was already completely suppressed.

At that moment, Chu Feng could only allow himself to be ordered around by them. Even if they wanted to kill him, there was nothing he could do. He had no way of fighting back.

"Brat! Who are you? You dare speak to us in such a rude manner?"

Suddenly, that Chu Xianshuo's voice sounded. At that moment, Song Xi was still lying in the ground. However, Chu Feng had already floated out from the deep crater.

It was not that Chu Feng had managed to escape the restriction of the oppressive might. Rather, it was that the oppressive might that had controlled his body, brought him out from the crater and made him stand on the ground.

At that moment, those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations led by Chu Xianshuo also descended from the sky and uniformly landed before Chu Feng.

They were all looking at Chu Feng with gazes of disdain.

Their gazes were filled with the intention of looking down on Chu Feng. Those were simply not gazes that one would look at a person with. Instead, it was as if they were looking at an animal, a dog.